

ROK GAME FANTASY STORY

# Taming Master

테이밍마스터

## TAMING MASTER

BOOK 02

*Park Taesuk*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Taming Master

(테이밍 마스터)

by

Park Taesuk

(박태석)

# Synopsis

---

The world's largest scale virtual reality game, 'Kailran'.

A well-known gamer in the virtual reality game community, Ian.

He deleted his lv 93 character to obtain a hidden class... but the class he chose was the most useless class in Kailran, the summoner? On top of that, a call from his professor leads to a mental breakdown! To avoid academic probation, he must level up the same level as his deleted character in two months!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Haku @ [MY:TL](#)

Translation Edit by Myoni, Obelisk, Stealth, emptycube, adkji, Hungry Panda @ [MY:TL](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 101: The Ruler Of The Battlefield (1)

---

Whoong-.

The Valiant Battleground that boasted a majestic grandeur reminiscent of a giant colosseum.

And on the end of either side, the fighting power of the Polaris Guild and the Lotus Guild began to be summoned in order.

Ian was summoned right in the middle of the camp on the Lotus Guild's side.

It was an obvious as he was the only participating user of the Lotus Guild.

‘It’s been a long time, Valiant Battleground.’

Before resetting, when they had done guild wars during the height of their efforts to raise the guild rank, he had entered this place two to three times a week and had become familiar with it.

However, as that was something that already happened months ago, it was a new experience for Ian.

30 seconds from now, the war will begin.



The system message that popped up.

Ian began to observe each and every one of the users that were being summoned in the enemy camp on the other side.

As he couldn't even move a finger before the battle began anyways, the only thing he could do was figure out the fighting power on the opponent's side.

‘Those idiots entered without even putting their levels on private...’

Ian, who saw a couple users with their levels set up to be revealed, cluck his tongue inwardly.

It was a part that showed how much the guild on the opponent's side thought the battle in the Valiant Battleground would be easy.

‘First of all, amongst the twelve whose levels are visible, there isn't even one that is over lv 100. Is the highest level around lv 95?’

The problem was the remaining fifteen or so users whose levels weren't visible.

Amongst them, a strong person could be mixed in.

‘Since they've seen that I'm the only user, they probably let

down their guard, right?’

And Ian’s assumption was right.

The Polaris Guild, who studied the Lotus Guild’s camp from afar, were already certain of their victory.

“Millun, I was right, no?”

At Rukin’s words, Millun grinned as he nodded his head.

“You really were. I never expected for the Lotus Guild to trash the Valiant Battleground this blatantly.”

“Huhu, I’m itching because I want to run in right now.”

“The last hit is mine. Look for someone else.”

“Very funny. Try if you can.”

Rukin and Millun had asked their Guild Master to let them participate in the 1st match and entered as volunteers.

The reason was obviously because they thought that the Lotus Guild would use the Valiant Battleground as a card they were throwing away.

On top of that, seeing that there was only one user in the camp of their opponent's side right now, the two people's bodies were itching.

This was because, if they won in the Valiant Battleground, depending on the level of contribution, they received a Fame reward, and if there was only one opponent user, they would be able to gain 100% of the level of contribution as soon as the judgement was made that they killed that one person.

If one consumed 100% of the level of contribution for victory in a Diamond-class guild war, in all probability, they would probably be able to obtain an outrageous amount of Fame.

Staring at Ian, who was far away, Rukin mumbled.

Of course, he hadn't recognized Ian.

"Speaking of which, that dude is really pitiful."

Millun also agreed.

"No kidding, he's the definition of a meat shield."

Because they were far away, they couldn't check Ian's face, and to have only one user participating from the opponent guild meant he was a card they were throwing away, so they thought that they wouldn't have had a strong user participating.



In the two people's eyes, Ian was just an excellent prey.

“We would have seriously regretted it if we had invested even one hired soldier in the first match.”

At Rukin's words, Millun nodded his head as he agreed.

“That's right. If we did that, it would have truly been a waste. Since we wouldn't have been able to take the level of contributions.”

Separate from the two people, who were happy thinking of the enormous Fame they would gain, Ian was thinking over how he should fight in order to minimize the damage he would receive and win.

While he was doing so, the NPCs and the spectators began to be summoned in the arena on either camp.

Whiing-Whing-.

Herz and Fiolan, who had entered the arena, hurriedly checked the fighting power of the Polaris Guild.

“Most of them are around lv 90, Herz.”

At Fiolan's words, Herz nodded his head as he wore a worried

expression.

“Yeah. From the looks of the equipment they’re carrying, it doesn’t look like there’s a high-level user amongst the ones with their levels on private either... But as there are a lot more than I was expecting, I’m not sure if Ian will be able to cover everything on his own.”

“We’ll find out if we keep watching, I guess. Ian fights really well in a one-vs-all battle like a demon, so I think he has a chance of winning.”

At Fiolan’s words, Herz, who remembered Ian’s active part in the Forlan dungeon, was able to shake off some of his uneasiness.

Herz’s gaze turned towards Ian.

‘I believe in you, Jinsung.’

And shortly after, a system message began to pop up in front of all of the users that entered the arena.

The battle will begin 5 seconds from now.

5, 4, 3.

Ian focused all of his mind and calmed his heart.

‘Let’s think of it like I’m group hunting.’

Ever since Pin had grown, Ian was able to easily gather and kill even the monsters in the northern continent that were over lv 110.

Of course, users would be stronger than Common-rank monsters, but if they weren’t even at lv 100, then there was no need to worry too much.

2, 1, Start!

As the battle began, Ian quickly summoned his Familiars first.

“Ly, Lake, Pin, Halli, Summon!”

Ian, who had summoned all of his Familiars besides Ddukdae, turned his head towards the NPCs that were lined up behind him.

And amongst his retainers, he called over the two whom were Warrior-classes and spoke to them.

“They probably just have their eyes on me and will lunge at me crazily. Loreuten, Mallaim. You two lead the soldiers and line up

on either side, and once I start the battle, raid them from both sides.”

He wasn't expecting much from the lv 60-range soldier NPCs anyways.

It was enough if they could just rush into the battleground and increase the opponents' confusion.

The two retainers bowed deeply at the same time as they replied.

“Yes, Lord!”

“Your command will be honoured!”

And to Tenpus, who was a Priest-class, Ian commanded him to concentrate only on recovering his Vitality.

Because the moment they got Ian, it would be their defeat in the battle, so they needed to be as careful as possible.

To Cerius, the Magician, and Celia, the Summoner, he gave the same command to the two.

“You two, after Ddukdae uses Abyss Hole, pour out all of your attacks then, understood? Especially Cerius, you need to use your AoE magic first.”

“By Ddukdae, you mean that Abyss Golem, right?”

At Celia’s question, Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right.”

While Ian gave out commands, the users of the Polaris camp began to recklessly rush towards Ian.

Because they were all just targeting Ian, naturally, the formation became clustered.

And that was also what Ian was aiming for.

‘If Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole just hits properly, we’ll be able to wipe all of them without much bleeding.’

That was the reason why Ian was waiting without summoning Ddukdae.

He was planning on summoning Ddukdae at the point where the best angle for Abyss Hole would be and tie down as many individuals as he could with Abyss Hole.

Ian held his breath and waited for his opponents to come right up to his nose.

‘I need to at least tie down all of the close-ranged combat-type classes.’

Even though his opponents entered the range where he could shoot his Magic Spheres, Ian stood still and waited.

This was because of his calculation that he could be alerting his opponents with the destructive power of his spheres if they were directly hit.

‘Just a little more...’

Ian’s concentration had reached its height.

This was because depending on how the start of the battle was opened up, it was something that could influence the war situation.

‘Now...!’

Ian, who caught the timing, summoned Ddukdae.

“Ddukdae, Summon!”

As he did so, Ddukdae, who was gigantic in size, appeared while letting out a heavy sound in front of the users of the Polaris Guild who were at the head.

Thud-!

At the unexpected situation, the Polaris users flinched.

“What the hell? This. That dude was a Summoner?”

“This is a Familiar I’m seeing for the first time!”

Because Ddukdae was an Abyss Golem that was born through evolution by Ian, it was obvious that it was their first time seeing one.

However, as one of them yelled loudly, all of them began to charge towards Ian again.

“Ignore the golem and just beat that dude to a pulp!”

Their decision that looked reasonable at a glimpse.

However, to them, who didn’t know that Ddukdae had an Inherent Ability called ‘Abyss Hole’, that was their worst mistake.

“Ddukdae, Abyss Hole! Pin, Roar of the King!”

Along with Ian’s shout, a giant vortex began to spew from both of Ddukdae’s arms, and Pin, who had fully grown to an adult now, cried towards the air.



Kyaaoh-!

And as the slowing effect that the Roar of the King had and the effect of the Abyss Hole overlapped, the fifteen or so users that ran towards him at the head were tied down.

“What the hell is this!”

“This crazy, what kind of slowing effect is like this?”

As the users who were sucked into the range of the Abyss Hole began to be flustered, Ian lifted his hand straight up in the air.

“Everyone, attack!”

The minute that Ian’s words finished, Lake’s Breath attacked them first, and Pin flew up into the air.

Hwaaak-!

The firepower of Breath that came out of lv 117 Lake’s mouth was enormous.

“This crazy! My Vitality has been cut down to half from just one hit!”

“Fuck! It’s a trap!”

The users of the Polaris Guild, who finally realized that something was weird, began to run about in confusion, and the flaps of Pin’s wings, who was flying through the air, was poured down on them.

Kwaaah-!

The wind that spewed out of the large, golden wings of Pin, who was now over lv 100, created a violent whirlwind, and that began to mercilessly rage towards the users of the Polaris Guild.

Familiar ‘Pin’s Inherent Ability, ‘Crush’, has been invoked.

It was a catastrophe.

Bang – Ba-Bang-!

As the situation turned like this, the long-range class users that were a bit far off and didn’t enter the range of the Abyss Hole began to focus their firepower towards Ddukdae.

It looked as if they thought that it was most urgent to cut off Abyss Hole first.

It was perhaps an obvious decision as Abyss Hole needed to be cut off first in order for Ddukdae to move and avoid the AoE attacks.

And as a concentrated fire was poured out, the Vitality of Ddukdae, who boasted an incredible resilience, dropped to almost half in an instant.

Ian, who saw that, let out a command to Celia.

“Celia, heal Ddukdae!”

“Alright!”

Celia's Inherent Ability, 'Familiar Healing', was invoked.

Retainer 'Celia' used 'Familiar Healing' and has recovered 60% of Familiar 'Ddukdae's Vitality.

The users, who were taken aback as a matter of fact since Ddukdae was holding out for quite a long time, fell into a panicked state as the Vitality that they struggled to cut down was completely recovered.

“Ah, I'm going to go insane!”

The cries of the Polaris Guild users, which sounded like a cry with their feelings intact, could be heard.

Unable to do this or that, the close-range class users, who were helplessly mangled by the AoE attacks, began to die off one by one.

Amongst them, there was also Rukin, a Warrior-class.

“Damn it! What the hell is up with this damage!”

And Ian’s form caught the flustered Rukin’s eye.

“Ian! It was you!”

And at his shout, Ian’s attention turned.

Ian was dumbfounded.

“What the hell, why is that idiot here again?”

And a Magic Sphere was shot out from Ian’s staff.

Pung-!

As Ian’s ability to accurately hit with projectiles was close to superhuman skill, hitting Rukin, who was right in front of him, was basically equivalent to eating cooled down porridge.

You have hit the target with the Magic Sphere and have dealt 7720 damage to 'Rukin'.

As you have successfully hit the opponent, 5 Spirit Magic has been recovered.

The Summoning Magic of Ian, who had reached lv 114, had become so strong that it was difficult to even compare with before, and the Magic Spheres of Ian, who were like that, had enough destructive power to get rid of Rukin, who didn't have much Vitality left.

You have killed user 'Rukin'. You have obtained 3.7% of the contributions towards the battle.

“Ack-!”

While looking at Rukin, who disappeared into a grey light with a resentful expression, Ian shook his head.

“Why am I constantly getting involved with this imbecile? Putting me in a bad mood.”

However, just then.

A purple energy flowed out of Rukin's dying corpse and was absorbed into Ian.

‘Hmm...? What is this?’

Ian, who was nervous that it was an attack of a type that he was seeing for the first time, began to focus back to the battle as nothing else happened.

And Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole, which the charging time for was fully completed in that duration, let out a boom as it exploded out.

# Chapter 102: The Ruler Of The Battlefield (2)

---

Pung-!

As Pin's AoE attack, Crush, swept through the battleground once, four or five users died at once.

However, just like when Rukin died, didn't energies of purple light leave the corpses and absorb into Ian?

Ian's eyes slightly rounded.

'What is this? This is my first time seeing a phenomenon like this.'

Ian, who was taken aback, momentarily hesitated.

However, it wasn't like it was influencing the war situation.

This was because, separate from his surprise, the users of the Polaris Guild were scattered here and there and were beginning to panic.

That was thanks to the soldiers of the Lotus Guild, who had rushed in towards them just like how Ian had commanded beforehand.

And the scattered users were good prey for Ly and Halli.



Ian, who set aside his curiosity, gave a command to Ly.

“Ly, Thirst for Blood!”

Familiar ‘Ly’s Inherent Ability, ‘Thirst for Blood’, has been invoked.

For 3 minutes, ‘Ly’s Offensive Power and Agility will increase by 30%, while his movement speed will increase by 40%.

A situation where the Vitality of most of the opponents that were scattered along the battleground was less than 30%.

Ly literally began to leap around crazily.

Ly’s sharp teeth dug into the back of the necks of the panicking users in the battlefield.

Chomp-!

Familiar ‘Ly’ has dealt critical damage to ‘Kei’!

User ‘Kei’s Vitality has decreased by 9150.

As the ‘Thirst for Blood’ effect was invoked, the damage was applied once more.

User ‘Kei’s Vitality has decreased by 9150.

You have killed user 'Kei'. You have obtained 3.6% of the contributions towards the battle.

Ly was lv 115.

Because Ly's Vitality was remarkably lower compared to his level stat ratio, his Vitality was cut down in chunks even from the attacks of lv 90-range users.

However, thanks to the additional effects of 'Health Absorption' and 'Thirst for Blood', his Vitality, which dropped below half, was filled up to its maximum again after attacking once or twice.

Ly, who became vigorous and flew around again just when they felt they almost had him, couldn't help but make the Polaris Guild members fed up with him.

They literally began to suffer helplessly.

Ian, who glanced at the war situation, pulled the soldiers towards the back.

'Since we've definitely won now, the damage needs to be reduced as much as possible.'

Rather than personally fighting, he focused more on directing the battlefield.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that they already won this battle.

If that was the case, he needed to concentrate on saving at least one more soldier now.

That would be even a little bit of help in the next battle.

However, just then, one user charged towards Ian.

“Die, you vile enemy!”

He narrowly approached right in front of Ian, but there was no way Ian's retainers would have just stood by and watched him.

“How dare you come at the Lord!”

At the combined attack of Mallaim and Loreuten, as well as Celia, who had approached them in no time, he collapsed helplessly.

They were NPCs that had weaker stats in comparison to users, but because there was almost a 20-level difference and it was a combined attack of the three, he actually died without being able to do anything.

It was at this point that the Polaris users could only lose all their fighting spirit.

With almost thirty of them, their fighting power had been reduced to less than ten of them remaining.

‘It ended more boringly than I expected.’

Ian looked around the battleground with a satisfied expression.

However, just then, a familiar user diligently shooting out Induced Arrows from far away caught his eye.

It was Millun, the Archer that was in Ian’s memory.

“Ha... That idiot was here as well?”

In the end, Millun and Rukin had never directly dealt any damage to Ian.

It also wasn’t like Ian felt greatly angered or anything by them.

However, that was separate from disgust.

Ian called over Pin, who was on a rampage through the battleground and playing an active part expected of a Legendary-rank Familiar.

“Pin!”

Kku-ru-ruk-!

“Over there, you see that guy, right? Go and beat him up to a pulp!”

Kku-ruk-!

Pin, who had received Ian’s command, flew with lightning speed towards Millun, who was struggling while facing the soldiers of the Lotus Guild.

Swaaeek-!

And Millun, who only then discovered Pin, turned deadly pale.

“What the hell is this now?”

Millun, who would have never seen a Griffin before, used the strongest skill he had after discovering the monster-like, golden eagle that flew towards him at a outrageous speed.

“Storm Arrow!”

Storm Arrow, a high-class skill that was quite hard to find!

However, to have used that on ‘Pin’ of all possibilities, it

returned to him after resulting in a situation where he had driven a nail into his own coffin.

Familiar 'Pin' has received a Wind-type attack.

Inherent Ability 'Guardian of the Wind' has been invoked.

Pin's Offensive Power will increase by 30% for 3 minutes.

Amongst Ian's Familiars, Pin's level was the lowest, but the insane 'Legendary-rank' covered more than ten levels easily.

In the Valiant Battleground right now, the one with the highest Agility was Pin.

Pa-Pa-Pak-!

Before Millun could even try anything, Pin's sharp claws raked through the back of his neck strongly.

You have killed user 'Millun'. You have obtained 3.8% of the contributions towards the battle.

The fighting power of the Polaris Guild became completely devastated due to just Ian alone!

Although they were only lv 90-100, but even though it was an advanced unit that was made up of comparably lower level users, Ian's active part was truly surprising.

Herz and Fiolan, who were sitting in the spectators' area, were watching the battle, dazed, without even realizing that their mouths were gaping open.

Herz felt that he was going to end up drooling soon.

However, the new guild members, who had never hunted with Ian before, were even more surprised.

Excited voices flowed from here and there in the spectators' area of the Lotus Guild's camp.

"Wow, they did say that Ian was the number 1 ranking Summoner, but this is truly tremendous."

"I was wondering how he monopolized the Forlan rankings, but there was a reason for that."

"Isn't Summoner a balance breaker then?"

"No-no, what are you saying. I have one lv 80 Summoner friend, but he can't even properly control the three Familiars that he has. And it didn't even look like his Familiars were as strong as Ian's Familiars."



“It looks like it’s just Ian that’s a balance breaker.”

On the other hand, the spectators’ area of the Polaris Guild’s side was just flowing with silence.

The Guild Master of the Polaris Guild, Lockram, murmured to himself.

“How can a Summoner be like that?”

At his words, a guild member that stood next to him, carefully responded.

“That... It looks like it’s the user named Ian, who became famous lately because of the Grave of the Forlan Hero’s Hall of Fame.”

“Ian?”

“Yes, Guild Master. I’m talking about the user who wiped that Forlan Dungeon’s top rank. That user seems to be that person.”

Lockram, who was momentarily trapped in his thoughts after hearing his words, asked Hansen, the Sub-Guild Master as well as his best friend.

“Hansen, how is our disposition of men for our second match right now?”

Hansen responded.

“There’s probably not much difference from the first match.”

Lockram’s face slightly creased.

“Damn it, will that monster-like guy come out in the second match as well?”

Hansen nodded with a grim expression.

“He probably will, no? With a fighting power like that, he’s even probably a user that’s part of Lotus Guild’s strongest... I think that side read our strategy and inversely strategized to beat us.”

Lockram felt his head spinning.

Once this match finished now, he needed to plan the disposition of men for the next, next match, which was the third match.

Originally, he didn’t really feel burdened, but because if they were going to helplessly hand over the second match just like the first one, in the case that they lost the third match, they would lose the territory war just like that, so he was unable to send out a half-assed fighting power.

“Hansen, I think we’ll need to invest about two mercenaries for

the third match.”

At Lockram’s words, Hansen sighed deeply as he spoke.

“If I was the Lotus Guild, I feel like I would use the third match as a card I was throwing out...”

“I also think the same way. However, there’s nothing we can do, right? There’s no other place that we can withdraw to.”

While the two people racked their throbbing brains and discussed about the disposition of men for the third match, Ian cleaned up all of the rest of the fighting power of the Polaris Guild.

Bang-!

You have killed user ‘Fire56’. You have obtained 3.6% of the contributions towards the battle.

You have killed user ‘Cleans’. You have obtained 3.9% of the contributions towards the battle.

And like that, the first battle of the two guilds’ territory war, ended.

Of course, the result was the Lotus Guild’s victory.

All of the participating individuals of the 'Polaris' Guild have died.

You have contributed 100% towards the victory of the battle.

Based on the fighting level of contribution, you have obtained 63,500 Fame.

It was an enormous amount of Fame that could only be obtained by succeeding a decent-A-rank quest.

A pleased smile hung from Ian's mouth.

The Valiant Battleground, in the first battle, the Lotus Guild has won against the Polaris Guild as their opponent.

The whole battleground began to be wrapped in a white light, and at the same time, all of the users that were spectating in the Valiant Battleground were warped to their original position.

And Ian, who remained in the battleground alone, disappeared from his spot along with a white ray of light as well.

\*

"Kyah, Ian hyung, you're seriously amazing!"

"Wow, I seriously wasn't sure about this... But this is like you

were just playing with them.”

The users that had gathered in the guild conference room again after the battle ended had all gathered in front of Ian.

As it was the first territory war, and their first victory, they all had elated expressions.

Ian tousled Carwin’s hair and laughed.

“Dude, what did this hyung tell you. I told you to believe in me.”

Carwin pouted as he replied.

“No, of course I believed in you. But hyung, did you know?”

“What?”

“We only lost five soldiers as well.”

Because the moment Ian was sure of victory, he had pulled all of the soldiers back, he had made the damage almost nonexistent.

Five soldiers couldn’t even be considered damage.

Kroban, who was standing next to them, also wore a broad smile as he opened his mouth.

“Keu, Ian carried our first territory war. By bringing back 1 victory like this, our hearts are much lighter now.”

Fiolan nodded her head in agreement.

“That’s right. And just like Ian thought, won’t he be able to bring back the second battle easily most likely as well?”

“No kidding. Since they needed to finish the disposition of men for the second match as well before the first match started, those guys won’t be able to reinforce their military now.”

At the two people’s words, all of the guild members nodded their heads.

The guild members were surprised at Ian’s fighting abilities, but more than that, they were even more in awe at his perfect strategy that had almost put them at a loss for words.

Ian opened his mouth.

“I probably won’t be able to win the second match as easily as I did this one.”

At his words, everybody’s attention was gathered towards Ian’s mouth.

Ian's words continued.

“This time, they were completely caught off-guard, so I was able to win easily. Since they probably ran in after seeing that our side only had one person participating and thought our side was withdrawing.”

Herz nodded his head as he agreed.

“That's right. In the beginning, it looked like they were just running in blindly without getting their lines or camp in order at all.”

“Yeah. Thanks to that, I was able to get in all my AoE attacks at their maximum effectiveness, so I was able to grab the victory as soon as it started. However, since they suffered once already, they'll probably try to fight a little more carefully.”

Harin, who was just listening to their conversation in the corner without much to say, asked Ian carefully.

“Then, is it possible that you might lose the second battle, Jinsung?”

Ian's attention turned towards Harin.

He smirked as he responded shortly to her.

“No, there’s no way.”



# Chapter 103: The Ruler Of The Battlefield (3)

---

The second match of the 'Valiant Battleground' that was continued at the same time the next day was given to the Lotus Guild without much difficulty as well.

Of course, the Polaris Guild users that had checked Ian's active part in the first match fought as best as they could.

However, as a weaker fighting power than the first match was dispatched for the second match instead, they were able to bring back victory without much difficulty just like Ian's first plan.

Over thirty soldiers and his retainer 'Mallaim' had died during battle, but to have brought back despite that, it was an incredible advantage.

'Since retainers revive again after a week anyways.'

And more than anything, Ian obtained an incredible advantage from the two battles.

That wasn't the over 100 thousand Fame, nor the 2 victories he easily obtained.

'I didn't know that the hatching rate of the Karceus' Egg, which I seriously struggled to raise, would go up by 5%.'

The hatching rate of the God Dragon that seriously only went up as much as a chicken's tear despite all of the dungeon rotations and hunting he did crazily in the meantime had increased by 5% from just two battles.

Thanks to that, the hatching rate of the God Dragon Karceus' Egg was more than 11% right now.

Ian assumed that the currents of purple light that was sucked in every time he killed an opponent was energy that raised the hatching rate of this Karceus' Egg.

The Dragon of War modifier wasn't just attached for no reason.

'However, the burden of risk is a little high to initiate territory wars at random... Isn't there another way?'

This was now the end of Ian's role in this territory war.

If they moved according to the strategy planned, it wouldn't be hard to defend.

Because he participated in all 2 matches, he couldn't participate anymore anyways.

Originally, once they successfully finished defending, Ian was planning on putting aside territory wars for a while and shut himself just in the Forlan dungeon until he reached lv 120.

The Forlan dungeon was a dungeon that had a lv 100 requirement, but it was a dungeon that was very effective for Summoners.

Even right now, when he was close to lv 115, he couldn't find a hunting ground that's effectiveness was better than the Forlan dungeon.

However, because of the God Dragon's Egg, Ian's plan was completely modified.

‘Once we finish defending in this territory war, I should suggest we go and hit a couple of nearby bases with a Village-rank.’

It was something that was originally not in his plans, but it was a choice that couldn't be helped in order to awaken the God Dragon Karceus.

Ian, who made several different plans and finished organizing his thoughts, logged out and left his capsule in order to go to his afternoon class.

\*

“I noticed you weren't sleeping and instead listening diligently to class today. What's up?”

At Yoohyun's words, Jinsung let out a deep sigh as he responded.

“No, Professor Jinook threatened me, saying he'd put me back in all of the classes he let me go in if I kept falling asleep. There's nothing I can do, I guess I just have to listen...”

At his weak voice, Yoohyun smirked as he spoke.

“No wonder... There was a reason.”

“That's right, dude.”

The conversation of the two people, who shared a couple silly words and laughed, eventually began to continue with Kailran as their topic.

Since the two people's biggest interest was Kailran, it was a sequence that couldn't be helped.

“Yo, then starting from our territory war tomorrow, are we seriously going to just give them three matches now?”

At Yoohyun's words, Jinsung nodded his head.

“Yeah. Just give it to them without regret. That's gaining an advantage.”

“Once we give them all three matches, even if it is a siege warfare, it will become a single-round for both our side and their side. I’m just saying, since I feel like it would be good to just keep pushing through since we’ve already brought back 2 wins.”

Jinsung thought that there was some truth in Yoohyun’s words as well.

“Then since we’ve already finished registration for the third and fourth match already anyways, you can try concluding with everything we have in the fifth battle. That could also be a surprise attack strategy.”

Yoohyun nodded his head.

“We should think carefully about this. Even if I was that side, if we were to just give them two matches, then they could lower their guards a little for the fifth match. I think it’s definitely a good strategy.”

Thanks to the late afternoon class, Yoohyun and Jinsung were able to walk in the middle of the empty sidewalk to their home from school and continue sharing their conversation without any disruptions.

Jinsung, who was just talking about Kailran up until now, seemed to have suddenly remembered something, as he changed the subject.

“Yo, Yoohyun.”

“Hmm?”

“There was something I wanted to ask you.”

“...?”

The reason was unknown, but Jinsung hesitated to speak.

At Jinsung’s expression, which Yoohyun had never seen before, Yoohyun gulped and waited for Jinsung’s next words to continue.

“Have you ever dated before?”

And at the unexpected and truly out of the blue words of Jinsung, Yoohyun was flustered.

“Ah, no. I did have a girlfriend for a little bit in high school... but to call it dating is a little...”

Yoohyun, who was just barely a 20-year-old freshman and played games all day long, was an individual that was distanced from dating as well.

However, at the words that he had a girlfriend even for just a moment, Jinsung glowed.

“Yo, then in any case, you’re still not forever alone!”

“You, you think so? That... For now, let’s say that’s true.”

Thanks to that, Jinsung, who felt a bit of hope, got to the point.

“That... The thing that I want to ask.”

“Yeah, tell me.”

“A couple days ago, I had eaten with Harin in the school cafeteria.”

“So?”

Yoohyun, who was listening to Jinsung’s story, wore an expression that showed more and more interest.

“I went to go grab a meal ticket, but she said she packed a lunch and started pulling it out. Of course, she did say that she made it because of her midterm assignment.”

“Oh, and?”

“And that day was the day Harin and you had your cultural studies class together, so I thought she would definitely be coming

with you, but I heard that you needed to do an assignment so you left first?”

Yoohyun, who thought about it for a moment, shook his head as he replied.

“I’ve never said anything like that before.”

At that, Jinsung slightly frowned and answered.

“Harin said so. You’re probably just forgetting. Why would she just lie like that?”

Yoohyun wore a confused expression.

“I don’t know... Why would she have lied like that. Anyways, just keep talking.”

Jinsung’s words continued.

“Anyways, so, the two of us began to eat the lunch she packed, but Harin suddenly...”

As Jinsung paused to take a breath, Yoohyun pressed him on.

“Suddenly what?”



“She suddenly just scooped a spoonful of risotto and fed me it.”

“...!”

After hearing the somewhat shocking words, Yoohyun’s expression stiffened on the spot.

“What, what the hell? So, Harin fed you?”

Jinsung nodded his head as he responded.

“That’s what I’m telling you!”

“Isn’t that, like, something that couples... are supposed to do?”

Jinsung’s voice slightly grew.

“Right? I don’t even remember eating food that my mom fed me!”

“So, what happened after that?”

At the interesting story, Yoohyun pressed him on to hear the next part quickly, but unfortunately, there was nothing much after that.

“What do you mean what happened after. I almost had an upset

stomach while eating.”

“ ... ”

While looking at Yoohyun, who wore a dull expression, Jinsung’s words continued again.

“So, my ultimate question is.”

“Yeah.”

Jinsung, who took a breath for a moment, opened his mouth.

“Could it be that Harin is interested in me by any chance?”

Yoohyun was trapped in his thoughts.

Even if it wasn’t for this story that he heard from Jinsung right now, he remembered seeing Harin, who stuck to Jinsung’s side even inside of Kailran.

Shortly after, Yoohyun responded.

“I... Think that it’s a possibility.”

\*

The warm sun.

A leisurely afternoon!

While Ian went to the Domain manor in order to take care of internal affairs, Ian's Familiars were spending an incredibly leisurely time at Lee Jinook's Breeding Ground.

Bbook-Bboo-Bbook-!

The time that hunting addict Ian had to spend handling internal affairs was time that was as sweet as honey to his Familiars.

Bbookbbook was having a delicious snack with his best friend, Pin.

Bbookbbook was happier than ever right now. This was because, while his Satan-like owner went inside the Domain manor in order to take care of internal affairs, Harin was instead giving him his lunch.

“Bbookbbook, do you want to eat another one?”

Harin's voice, which was more mellow than any other noise that existed in the world, and even with a line that shook Bbookbbook's heartstrings stronger than any lyrics!

Bbookbbook hadn't even finished the meatball that was right in front of him yet, but he nodded his head crazily.

Bbook-Bboo-Bbook-!

If it wasn't for a case like this, when else would he ever be able to eat drug meatballs until he was full. If it was Ian, his evil owner, even at the most, he never gave him more than 2.

Bbookbbook rubbed his face against Harin's hand with a happy expression.

"But, Bbookbbook."

Bbook-?

"Can you eat all of this before Ian comes back?"

Bboo-Bbook!

Bbookbbook wore a confident expression as he nodded his head energetically.

However, Harin spoke again with a worried expression.

"If Ian sees that I've given you this many meatballs, I'm going to get punished..."

Bbookbbook, who had discovered Harin's large eyes brimming with tears, shook his shell as he was trapped in sadness.

Bbook.

For his evil owner to dare punish this beautiful and kind meatball goddess... That was something that simply must not happen.

“So, Bbookbbook, you need to eat it quickly. Okay?”

Bbook-!

Harin, who had received Bbookbbook's promise, turned her attention towards Pin this time.

Different from Bbookbbook, the thing that Pin was eating was not a meatball.

The thing that Harin gave Pin was a rib eye steak that she had carefully prepared.

Harin asked Pin, who was ripping through the steak gracefully along with a coy expression.

“Pin, what about you? Is it delicious?”

Harin was incredibly careful. This was because Pin was different from Bbookbbook.

Different from Bbookbbook, who had an elementary school student's palate, Pin's palate was incredibly luxurious.

Kku-ru-ruk-.

As if Pin was savouring the taste of the steak, he gently closed his eyes.

“How is it, do you want to eat more, Pin?”

Harin was nervous as she studied the reaction of Pin, the eagle with a luxurious diet.

When she first met Pin, in order to gain points from him, Harin tried to prepare a variety of different drug meatballs.

She liked Pin, the cute, baby eagle, but since he was also Ian's Familiar, there was a need to gain points from him at all costs.

However, Pin was nonchalant.

That's why Harin just thought that Pin had no gluttony and was disappointed.

This was because cooking was the easiest and the fastest way for her to gain points from Ian's Familiars.

However, that was a misunderstanding.

It was just simply that the stimulating drug meatballs didn't fit Pin's palate.

If it wasn't a certain luxurious recipe, she couldn't satisfy Pin's palate.

Right now, it was the nerve-wracking moment where Harin's recipe was judged.

And shortly after, Pin opened his eyes and nodded his head.

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

This was definitely Pin's communicative expression that he wanted to eat more.

Instantly, Harin's expression brightened.

"Wow! Pin, then this time, this one! Try eating this one!"

Harin pulled out a new dish again from her inventory.

Because, as she tried to fit dishes to Pin's palate, she had raised her Cooking Proficiency incredibly well, so lately, Pin was Harin's main customer.

It was even to the point where she had to beg him to please eat it.

At around this point, Bbookbbook could also become jealous, but Bbookbbook liked the stimulating flavour of the meatball more than any other food.

For Bbookbbook, who had a mission to eat all of the meatballs in front of him before Ian came, there was no way that there was a chance for Pin's steak to catch his eye.



## Chapter 104: The Ruler Of The Battlefield (4)

---

However, just then, in the Lotus Domain's Breeding Ground that was this peaceful, a dark shadow appeared.

“Harin, I’m done!”

The moment he heard that voice, Bbookbbook put the whole meatball that was right in front of him into his mouth.

Bboo-Bbook-

And in order to cut off Jinsung's attention, Harin quickly stood up from her spot.

“Oh, Jinsung, you came?”

She smiled brightly as she approached Ian.

However, despite her efforts, Ian's attention was focused completely on something else.

“Bbookbbook.”

Ian's voice dropped lowly.

Bbookbbook, who was biting onto a mouthful of meatball, had

frozen on the spot like ice.

Ian slowly approached Bbookbbook.

“Are you not going to answer? Bbookbbook?”

It wasn't that Bbookbbook wasn't responding, but that he 'couldn't' respond because of the piece of meat that filled his mouth.

Bbookbbook desperately tried to somehow swallow the meatball that was in his mouth whole before Ian got to him.

However, since he had shoved down five meatballs at once, there was no way that would be easy.

“Our Bbookbbook, did you eat your lunch well?”

As if Bbookbbook had heard the voice of the Grim Reaper, he shut his eyes tightly.

As Ian's voice could be heard coming closer and closer, Bbookbbook became more anxious.

And as Ian stood right behind him, Bbookbbook used his last resort.

Bbook-!

He tried to hide inside his shell.

However, because of the meatball that filled his mouth, his head, which was already big enough as it was, caught onto his shell and couldn't go in.

Ian, who saw that, smirked.

“What are you doing, dude.”

After approaching Bbookbbook, he picked up his shell and shook him side to side mercilessly.

“What exactly have you stuffed your mouth with? There's no way that you've eaten everything without leaving this hyung anything, right, Bbookbbook?”

Bbookbbook felt that the meatball that was in his mouth would drop to the ground any moment now, but he desperately swallowed the meatball.

Because if he swallowed the whole thing, he hoped that Ian would also let it slide as he would have no evidence.

However, just then.

A situation outside of Bbookbbook's prediction was unfolded.

Ian suddenly put Bbookbbook down.

And the words that came out of his mouth made Bbookbbook fall into despair.

“Hmm, Bbookbbook, I think you weigh about 200 grams more than usual, so you must have eaten about five more meatballs.”

As if he was a scale, it was a calculation of the exact number.

From the mouth of Bbookbbook, who was taken aback, a hiccup came out before he realized it.

Bboo-Kkook-.

After following Ian and coming out to the world, Bbookbbook had seen his many abilities, but by far, there was never a time that he had felt Ian's abilities to be as mysterious as right now.

At Ian's 'superhuman skill', even Harin wore a flustered expression as she stared at him.

Of course, Ian had just made a rough estimation.

“Bbookbbook.”

As Ian called Bbookbbook, Bbookbbook, who had swallowed all of the meatballs before he realized, responded with a sad expression.

Bbook...

Ian's words continued.

"Since you've eaten five more meatballs, one meatball will be deducted each meal for 5 days."

At Ian's cold-blooded and heartless judgement, both of Bbookbbook's eyes were filled with tears.

Bboo-Bbook!

Bbookbbook tried once to defy him timidly, but Ian was cold-hearted.

"If you don't listen to me, I'll deduct another meatball each time."

At the terrible threat, Bbookbbook eventually dropped his head with a dejected expression.

Bbookbbook.

Bbookbbook was depressed.

He was very regretful that he couldn't even savour the flavour and just swallowed hastily in order to eat it quickly.

If he knew that this was going to be the case, he would have eaten about two meatballs slowly as he savoured it.

If that had happened, it would have ended off as a happy lunch.

Ian, who had finished Bbookbbook's lesson(?) as usual, turned his head towards Harin.

“Where to today, Harin?”

“Uh... Uh? One second!”

Harin, who was watching Bbookbbook and Ian with a dazed expression, was taken aback as Ian called her.

This was because she didn't have any thoughts up until moments before.

After thinking about it for a moment, Harin responded.

“Hmm... Let's go to Norman Mountains today.”

“Norman Mountains?”

“Yeah!”

Truthfully, the reason why Harin was waiting for Ian right now was because today Ian was on duty to be Harin’s gathering guide.

Harin chose Norman Mountains, where there were a lot of ingredients she needed from and where the route was long.

This was because she was determined to make the most out of her time with Ian.

After thinking about it for a moment, Ian opened his mouth.

“Harin, instead of there, how about Forlas Plateau? Would there be no ingredients there?”

“Where was Forlas Plateau again?”

“It’s a plateau that’s right after you pass through Norman Mountains, but it’s probably a place you haven’t been to yet. The average monster level is around 120.”

At those words, Harin answered with a flustered expression.

“Huuuh? Would it be okay for us to go to such a dangerous place like that?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah. It’s alright. Over there, their level range is high, but the number of monsters is quite on the low side, so there should be no problem for me to protect you even with just me.”

Harin, who felt butterflies in her stomach for some odd reason at the words ‘protect’, didn’t think about it anymore and nodded her head energetically.

“Alright, cool! Let’s go!”

Harin was around lv 90 now.

She could end up being kicked out of the game in an instant if she was caught properly by a lv 120 monster, but whether she had even realized that, she just wore a broad smile.

“Can you go right now?”

Harin nodded her head without hesitation.

“Yeah!”



Like that, the slightly dangerous date(?) of the two people began.

\*

YouCast, a video-sharing site that is the most famous and largest in size in the world.

In YouCast, there are a lot of vast and diverse videos that pop up, but amongst them, the videos that take up most of the shares are the game 'Kailran' videos.

This was because Kailran, which was reaching its first-year anniversary since opening, was spreading rapidly throughout the world, and had become a game so famous that there was nobody that didn't know it.

Even in South America, where it was the latest area that the service opened, Kailran had taken up over 50% of the game shares there already, there was no way it couldn't be a truly amazing figure.

“Hmm... Are there no good sources lately anywhere?”

Sojin, a named uploader in YouCast, was a freelancer that usually dealt professionally with video editing and CG.

However, ever since starting Kailran, she began to professionally edit Kailran's videos and upload them onto YouCast, and amongst the videos that she uploaded, was a video that exploded, causing

her to decide to change her job into a YouCast uploader.

Of course, even amongst games, she was a specialty uploader in the Kailran category.

“I thought that I’d be able to make some money with the giant guild territory wars this month, but there aren’t as many good ones as I expected.”

After obtaining the information that the base protections of the giant guilds’ domains would be released all at once, Sojin was full of expectancy to edit the videos that would come out from there and upload them.

As she also had an exclusive contract with the Valiant Guild, which was ranked at 5th place in the guild rankings, she was exclusively provided with the videos of the Valiant Guild’s war.

And in the beginning, just as she predicted, because the giant guilds were at each other’s throats, she was able to get a hold of a couple good videos, and she had made a decent amount with them.

However, as about a week passed by, just like before the base protection was released, all of the guilds had become quiet.

Especially the fights amongst the giant guilds, which Sojin wanted most, rarely happened.

This was because, unless there was a decent power gap, it was

decided from the result of the territory wars that happened within a couple days that it was hard for the attacking guild to win against the defending guild.

That's why after losing her enthusiasm, she had lowered her expectations and was currently searching for different videos.

“Are there no sources anywhere that could be made into an issue right away...”

However, just then.

While searching videos diligently with the keyword ‘territory wars’, a quite interesting title caught her eye.

Kailran Diamond-Class Territory War (Lotus Vs Polaris) Mad Movie (1 VS 30)

Two days ago.

View Count – 58,291

A mad movie on the Summoner user ‘Ian’ of the Lotus Guild, who was famous for sweeping up the top ranks of the lv 100 Forlan dungeon.

This is a personal cam that was shot in-person at the Valiant Battleground.

Please watch and enjoy^^

Sojin, who read the content that popped up on her screen, mumbled with a slightly dumbfounded expression.

“It’s a Diamond-class territory war, yet how did they fight 1 vs 30? If they won against 30 opponents alone, did a user at around lv 130 slaughter users that are in the lv 80-range?”

However, after seeing the part saying ‘Summoner’, her expression turned into a frown.

This was because, if it was a Summoner-class, from what she knew, there weren’t a lot of users that were over lv 100, let alone lv 130.

‘It must be a video watching beginners that are under lv 50. Lately, anything and everything is being labelled a mad movie.’

However, still, as it had been a while since a title that was interesting enough caught her eye, she couldn’t just skip it.

‘Well, since I’ve got nothing to lose, shall we give it a click?’

She wasn’t expecting much for it to be an amazing video, but the part stating 1vs 30 was very charming.

“Oh-ho?”

The video quality and structure looked quite good for one that an

ordinary person in the spectators' area took.

However, as the video started, both eyes of Sojin, who studied the camps on either side, slightly widened.

“Huh? The levels of the side where there are 30 are still over lv 90.”

The couple of users that had left their levels on public had caught her eyes. The other users were also users that weren't at a beginner-level either.

Moved by excitement, she began to focus on the video even more.

‘What the hell? Are they really going to win against that fighting power alone?’

As the battle soon began, the Summoner that stood alone on the other side started to summon monsters that looked like his Familiars.

And the eyes of Sojin, who checked each and every one, rounded.

This was because, they were mostly monsters that she was seeing for the first time, but the monster that looked like a white tiger with red stripes was one that she also knew.

‘That... Isn't that a Hallikan?’

The Hallikan, a Boss monster ranking at a Heroic-rank that users of a top-ranking guild just barely succeeded in killing it in a raid in the north.

On top of that, as she remembered seeing a video where they had received almost annihilating amounts of damage and just luckily cleared it, it made sense as to why she was so taken aback.

It looked as if it was a little smaller in size than the Hallikan that appeared as a boss monster, but the outer appearance was still definitely a Hallikan.

‘This crazy! How exactly did he obtain a Heroic-rank monster that’s over lv 150? Catching it would have been absolutely impossible...’

However, no matter how curious she was, because there was no way for her to know, she put aside her curiosity for now and began to focus on the video.

And in the video, Ian’s one-sided slaughtering began.

“Wo, wow...!”

Before she even realized it, Sojin let out an exclamation.

Her jaw had automatically dropped while looking at the excellent

connection of the AoE skills that made her have chills and the control of the Familiars, as well as Ian's battlefield command that didn't leave any NPC carelessly idle.

Because of Ddukdae's Abyss Hole and Lake's Breath from the beginning, as well as the connection of Pin's AoE skill Crush, it was a fight that already started off with more than half the fighting power slaughtered, but the battle that continued after was still elaborate and impressive enough to cause Sojin to automatically let out exclamations.

‘No, why is this video still buried away?’

Sojin, who watched the video that was slightly over 20 minutes long while holding her breath, hurriedly checked the view count of the video.

The view count was about 50 thousand.

It was hard to say that it was an extremely low view count, but it was definitely not a lot.

“I need to buy the copyright to this video immediately!”

Sojin quickly clicked the ID of the uploader of the video, and found out their contact information.

With an incredibly excited expression, she was quickly typing the numbers onto her smartphone.

“This... Is truly a jackpot!”

After editing this video incredibly well and getting it up in the top ranks first, a plan to find the user named ‘Ian’ and make an exclusive contract with him was quickly mapped out in her head.

Because the top-ranking rankers already had an exclusive contract with companies or experts, for her, as she started later, she didn’t have a ranker that she traded videos with 1 on 1.

At the harvest that was larger than expected, her two eyes shone with anticipation.



# Chapter 105: The Secret Of Forlas Plateau (1)

---

“All done now. There’s nobody here now, so you can gather at ease.”

“Yep, okay!”

After killing a couple of large lv 120 yetis, Ian let Bbookbbook down from his back.

There was no large-scale battle, but as they had been moving constantly without rest, they were quite exhausted.

“Bbookbbook, shall we also rest a bit?”

Bboobbook-!

As Ian let him down on the ground, Bbookbbook, who had come out of his shell, ran around before he began moving towards some place.

Different from an exhausted Ian, it looked as if Bbookbbook, who had been in his shell the whole time, was full of energy.

Harin, who saw that, wore a worried expression as she asked Ian.

“Jinsung, is it alright for Bbookbbook to run around freely like that? Won’t it be dangerous?”

At her words, Ian shook his head and smiled.

“No, it’s not dangerous at all. Even if he gets hit all day by monsters here, only half of his Vitality will probably be gone.”

“Huuuh? How?”

“Bbookbbook’s stats are all piled up on his Defensive Power. It’s hard to deal even 10 damage with a decent attack.”

“I see, Bbookbbook is amazing.”

It seemed he had heard Harin’s words saying he was amazing, as Bbookbbook let out an energetic, witty reply.

Bbook-Bboobbook-!

While seeing that, Ian burst out laughing.

“Bbookbbook, if you find a monster while playing around, just go hide well like you usually do. Understood?”

Bbook-!

After Bbookbbook nodded his head energetically, he disappeared off to somewhere.

During break time while hunting, etc., Ian let Bbookbbook run free like this.

Whether Bbookbbook's sense of smell was amazing or if he had some sort of special secret, either way, he had a special ability that allowed him to find rare gathering ingredients, minerals, etc.

Because of that, Ian positively encouraged his slacking(?).

If Bbookbbook was to meet a monster while energetically running around and received damage, a system message would alert Ian, so he just needed to move to find him then.

Harin, who was watching Bbookbbook's form that was getting farther away momentarily, turned her attention towards Jinsung and opened her mouth.

“But Jinsung.”

“Yeah?”

“I'm just curious, but why do you not give Bbookbbook a lot of meatballs? Is there a specific reason?”

Whenever she saw cute Bbookbbook's sullen face because he couldn't eat more meatballs, Harin's heart hurt, so she was really curious of Ian's intentions.

“That...”

As Ian momentarily hesitated, Harin pressed him on.

“What is it, tell me. Or by any chance...?”

“By any chance what?”

“It’s not because you have no reason except that it’s fun to bother Bbookbbook or something like that, right?”

At those words, Ian slightly flinched.

‘That isn’t the reason, but for some reason, it stings a little...’

Because it was the truth that his mood brightened whenever he saw Bbookbbook act cutely in order to eat one more meatball.

However, the true reason was different.

“No way. Do you know how much I like Bbookbbook for me to do such a thing?”

“That’s right, right?”

Harin, who was relieved(?) that Ian didn't have a personality disorder, asked again with an expression as if she was truly curious.

“Then why are you like that?”

“That... At first, since I couldn't get meatballs from you often, so it was to save them...”

Ian, who paused for a moment to take a breath, continued.

“But as this one ate a lot of meatballs, Bbookbbook slowly started to gain weight.”

At the unexpected response, Harin wore a slightly sour expression.

“Huh? Then, were you doing that because you were really worried that Bbookbbook would become an obese turtle? I think that even if Bbookbbook was to gain a little weight, he would be come a little rounder and cuter.”

Ian shook his head.

“No, it's not that. Since he gained a little weight, he was too heavy to go around with him on my back...”

“ ... ”

While looking at Ian, who responded embarrassedly, Harin became speechless.

Ian's excuses continued.

“Bbookbbook needs to be light in order for me to be able to move a little more quickly even in battle. It's not like Bbookbbook's weight is related to his Defensive Power anyways...”

Harin, who found out about the truth anyways, wore an awkward smile as she nodded her head.

“If it's for that reason, then, well, there's nothing we can do about that.”

Harin, for some odd reason, felt more pitiful towards Bbookbbook.

‘Because he met a hunting-addicted owner, our poor Bbookbbook can't even eat a lot of meatballs...’

Harin, who solved her curiosity anyways, stood up from her spot and began to gather all of the cooking ingredients that were in the vicinity.

It definitely seemed because it was a high-level hunting ground that only top-level users could hunt at, as she was able to gather a

lot of high-class cooking ingredients, so she wore a satisfied expression.

Had about 20 minutes passed like that?

Ian, who sat on top of a rock, suddenly stood up and called Harin.

“Harin. Are you done gathering?”

“No, there’s still a little left.”

“Hmm... Just leave the ones remaining for now and let’s move.”

At Ian’s words, Harin, who wondered if monsters had at least appeared and looked around, wore a confused expression.

This was because she couldn’t see anything nearby.

“Why? Did something urgent suddenly come up?”

Ian scratched the back of his head as he responded.

“It’s not really something urgent, but it seems that Bbookbbook met some monsters. I wanted to go over there and help him.”

At those words, Harin flung away the ingredients she was gathering and immediately stood up.

“Ah, then we must go.”

Ian, who thought that somehow, Harin instead cherished Bbookbbook more than he, the owner, did, wore an awkward expression and moved his feet.

He even slightly felt the pangs of his conscience.

\*

The place that the two people had arrived at was a snowy field where Bbookbbook, who had cast Shell Expansion, was in the middle of it, and surrounding him, a couple of giant yetis were roaming around.

“Over there, there’s Bbookbbook. But a really dangerous situation isn’t happening.”

At Harin’s words, Ian nodded his head.

“I told you. That there would be no reason for Bbookbbook to be in danger.”

Far from a dangerous situation, Bbookbbook didn’t even grab the attention of the monsters.

Bbookbbook was basically receiving the same treatment as a



geographic feature.

The reason for that was none other than because of the ‘Shell Expansion’ skill.

It was because of one of the additional effects of the Shell Expansion skill,

**\*\* For the duration of Shell Expansion, you will be recognized as an inanimate object.**

That the monsters didn’t recognize him as an opponent.

That was one of the reasons why Bbookbbook was able to properly take on the role of a reconnaissance agent.

Ian, who had checked all of the levels of the yetis, momentarily thought of an effective strategy in order to fight properly.

“Hmm... If it’s about four of them, it’s a little dangerous to gather them all at once and hunt them.”

Firstly, Ian firmly warned Harin to be careful.

“Harin, I’ll say it again, but use all of your buffs and heals just on yourself, alright?”

Harin had already allowed herself to be properly hit by a yeti.

After seeing over half of her max Vitality disappear from one hit, she was already well-aware.

“Yep, got it. Don’t worry. I’ll keep my shield up constantly, so I won’t be able to die easily. I don’t know what you take me for, but I am a Priest.”

Ian grinned as he responded.

“Yeah, alright. Be careful.”

Ian, who finished speaking, moved towards the yeti with his Familiars.

And he slowly started to catch the ones that were the most isolated from the rest first.

Because yetis had outrageously high Health, outstanding Offensive Power, as well as a Health regeneration skill, although it wasn’t as good as a troll’s, they were amongst the fussy monsters to hunt.

They were monsters that instantly recovered the Vitality that you’ve cut down with difficulty if your hands and feet were momentarily tied and you hesitated, allowing them time to

recover.

On top of that, as they were over an outrageous lv 120, the danger burden was too big for Ian to do group hunting, which was even his forte.

Ian's strategy for hunting yetis was to use Smash, the Inherent Ability of Halli, whose reflexes were maximized, and with short, single hits, he stuns them and focuses damage as much as possible for that duration to kill them one by one.

Because his Griffin, which was now over lv 100, was beginning to reveal an appearance that was expected of a Legendary-rank Familiar, Ian's party boasted an incredible firepower.

Thud-.

You have killed the 'Glacial Yeti'. You have obtained 128,500 EXP.

You have obtained 3845 gold from the 'Glacial Yeti'.

You have obtained the 'Thick Yeti's Pelt'.

The reward that was obtained from an over lv 120 yeti was quite savoury as well.

Ian wore a pleased expression as he mumbled inwardly.

‘The current market price for gold isn’t as high as before, but it’s still about 5 thousand Won for each yeti.’

As Ian had put all his focus on raising his level and played accordingly up until now, he always spent his money lavishly on the highest-grade equipment.

It seemed because of that, compared to the money he earned, there wasn’t much he had saved up.

‘I need to slowly start saving up money again as well.’

Ian diligently hunted the yetis with the thought that he could make enough money for a day’s worth of meals if he killed all of the yetis in front of him.

On top of that, there was something he wanted to buy recently as well.

‘Once this term is over, I should also change my capsule to a new model.’

His heart was sold on the new capsule that was recently released from LB Corporations that he saw on an advertisement on TV while eating.

Of course, it was possible to control the temperature inside of the

capsule even if you didn't turn on the AC or the heater in the room, and as you could even control the humidity and create the most optimal gaming environment, the new capsule was the dream for Kailran users.

On top of that, they said that they had succeeded in increasing the synchronization of the VR aspect by a whopping 2%, it was impossible for Ian to not want it.

2% Synchronization may not be considered much in other people's eyes, but for Ian, who obsessed over each and every numerical value, he felt he was at a loss for some odd reason.

It somehow felt like his leveling-up speed would be 2% slower than users that used the new capsule.

“Whew, I caught all of them.”

It had been a while since he had such miscellaneous thoughts, but still, Ian had wiped the yetis and succeeded in rescuing Bbookbbook, and had approached Bbookbbook, who still had no intentions of coming out of his shell.

Knock-knock-.

“Is Mr. Bbookbbook here by any chance?”

At Ian's knock Bbookbbook poked out his head from his shell.

Bbookbbook-!

And Ian turned his back towards Bbookbbook.

“Alright, get on my back now. So we can hunt those guys down there as well.”

However, for some reason, Bbookbbook shook his head and started to walk towards somewhere.

Bbook-Bbookbbook-!

“Hmm...?”

And because Bbookbbook always discovered something whenever he moved like this, Ian began to follow Bbookbbook with anticipation.

“Harin, you come this way, too.”

Harin, who was hiding herself in a slightly more secluded spot, quickly stood next to Ian, and followed behind Bbookbbook.

“Jinsung, where is he going right now?”

At Harin’s question, Ian shrugged his shoulders.

“That I don’t know either.”

“Then why are we following him?”

“Bbookbbook sometimes finds rare medicinal herbs or stuff like items. I think he’s found something right now as well, so I’m just following him.”

“Ah...”

Had they had moved like that for about 5 minutes?

The place that Bbookbbook had stopped and stood in a valley where an incredibly high and grand cliff that was endless was spread in front of them.

And in the middle of that cliff, Ian discovered something.

“Oh, there’s a cave there. Bbookbbook, is that where you want to go?”

At Ian’s question, Bbookbbook nodded his head without hesitation.

Bbook-!

Even at a glance, it looked like a cave that had something to it.

And Ian's sixth sense was telling him that he would be able to find something special inside there.

However, there was a problem.

"But, how do we get up there?"

Just like Harin's question, the cave was kind of in the middle of the high cliff. It was a height that couldn't be reached by just a normal method.

However, there was a way for Ian.

"We just need to ride Pin and go up. Wait one moment."

Firstly, after calling Pin, Ian slowly got onto his back.

The upper half of Pin was an eagle, but his body had the form of a lion.

Because of that, if they were to move carefully, it was possible enough to ride Pin and move.

Of course, Ian couldn't ride Pin as he pleased like he could with Ly yet, but a short distance like this wasn't hard.



Ian, who had gotten on Pin, called for Harin.

“Harin, you come here, too.”

“Huh? You want me to get on with you?”

“Yeah.”

Harin asked again carefully.

“Wo, won’t it be too heavy?”

This time, instead of Ian, Pin nodded his head and responded.

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-.

He meant for her to have no worries.

Harin, who had received Pin’s consent, carefully sat in front of Ian, and Ian’s arm wrapped around her waist as he hugged her. Taken aback for a moment, Harin’s pale face had flushed a bright red.

‘Huh, huh?’

This was because she had no idea that her relationship with Ian, whom she hadn't even held hands with yet, would progress(?) so suddenly like this.

However, on the other hand, Ian wore an expression that showed little thought.

“Pin, take us there slowly.”

Kku-ru-ruk-!

Pin, who had Harin and Ian on his back, slowly flew up towards the cave in the cliff with careful wing movements.

And as Pin's wings started to flap, Harin grasped tightly onto Ian's hand before she even realized it.

Shortly after, Harin, who had become familiar with holding her balance, laughed as she slightly turned her head and looked at Ian.

‘Hehe, this is actually quite nice. I should ask him to give me a ride again next time.’

Of course, she had no intentions of being able to ride(?) him alone, it was always with Ian.

Meanwhile, Ian closely studied Pin's movements as he contemplated internally.

‘I should also practice riding Pin a bit more... If I could definitely ride him freely like with Ly, it will truly be of help in battle.’

After Pin reached over lv 80, Ian tried riding on Pin’s back every now and then.

This was because, starting from lv 80, he had grown to a size big enough to carry around Ian. However, as expected, in comparison to Ly, a ground monster, it took much longer to adjust.

Before long, Pin arrived at the destination, the cave of the cliff.

Kku-ruk-!

“Harin, get off slowly.”

As they arrived in front of the cave, Ian held onto Harin’s hand so she could get off easily.

“Heave-ho.”

And the two people, who had gotten off Pin’s back, slowly started heading towards the inside of the cave.

As they did so, as if it was waiting, a system message rang out.

Ring-

You have become the very first discoverer of this dungeon.

For the next 5 days, all the EXP you obtain from the dungeon will double.

For the next 5 days, the chance of obtaining items from the dungeon will double.

It was an obvious that the corners of Ian's mouth hung from his ears.

# Chapter 106: The Secret Of Forlas Plateau

## (2)

---

While Ian was exploring Forlas Plateau with Harin, the defending battle of the Lotus Guild ended smoothly.

Just like Ian predicted, the Polaris Guild had used over half their fighting power in the 3rd, 4th, and 5th match.

And with Polaris Guild like that, the Lotus Guild fought against them with almost all of their fighting power, excluding Ian, preserved.

On top of that, as it was a defending battle that the Lotus Guild could only be at an advantage with, no matter if the Polaris Guild had hired mercenaries, there was no way that they could win against the Lotus Guild which was at a similar rank as them.

In the end, just like Ian's strategy, the Lotus Guild had won their first territory war with the sixth battle as their last one.

“With this, we’ve guarded it for another week for now.”

At Fiolan's words, Herz smiled happily as he responded.

“In a week, our Military Facility will probably be at lv 3, and the Defense Tower that we’re building now will also be mostly completed, so even if a stronger guild tries and raids us, we should

be able to block them off.”

In Kailran, a Domain that has gone through a territory war will change into a base protection state for a week.

There was an exception, though, that if they were to attack a different Domain while they were in the duration of base protection, the base protection of the Domain would automatically be released, but as they had no intentions, it was just something they were saying.

“This... I feel like we’ve won when I haven’t done anything, so I feel a little embarrassed.”

As Fiolan spoke with a bashful expression, Herz also nodded his head.

“Well, I’m feeling the same way. It’s all something that Ian made alone. In the end, we went with the strategy that Ian planned out as well. At least you got to take play in the last defending battle with an AoE attack, so you’re a little better than I am. Since I’m a Knight class, there’s seriously nothing that I’ve done.”

It was hard for close-combat classes to play an active role in defending battles.

Especially, in a battle that was won as easily as this, it was even more so.

The troops of the opposing side needed to break through the exterior and get inside for the close-combat classes to get a chance to fight, but as the Polaris Guild didn't have much troops left, they weren't even able to get over the exterior.

“Well, anyways. Thanks to that, the guild's rank has gone up by two, so it put me in a good mood.”

“No kidding.”

“But, once the base protection for the week is over, do you think another guild will declare a territory war against us?”

“Hmm...”

At Fiolan's question, Herz, who momentarily thought about it, slowly responded.

“I think that the chances for it to happen are quite high. Everybody has become more careful in declaring territory wars now compared to the beginning, but our Domain is very desirable.”

“I see.”

“And when the protection duration is about to end, Ian said let's try and declare territory war on a couple of places...”

“Huuuh?”

Fiolan, who was only thinking about defending the Domain, was taken aback at Herz’s words.

Her words continued.

“Would we have enough strength to spare for that?”

Herz shrugged his shoulders as he responded.

“Well, it’s not something that’s been decided, and I do think it could be dangerous... But Ian also probably said it with thought put into it, right?”

While in a territory war, if another guild was to even raid the Lotus Domain, that would be a problem.

This was because, even if they were two different territory wars that happened at the same time, guild members that were registered for one battle couldn’t participate in any other battle.

Fiolan, who thought about it for a moment, mumbled.

“Hmm... Let’s just trust the Lord.”

As Fiolan shook her head, Herz laughed as he agreed with her



words.

“That’s right. And for now, for the next week, we should also hunt a little diligently. If it continues like this, I feel like Ian will catch up to our levels.”

As he said so, Fiolan grinned as she answered.

“Didn’t he already catch up to you, Herz?”

Herz let out a sigh as he responded.

“I’m still 1 level higher than him. Probably...”

Fiolan snickered as she added on.

“Are you sure?”

\*

The dungeon that Ian discovered first in the Forlas Plateau was a place with the name ‘Bloody Way’.

And fitting of that name, the dungeon’s structure was just one long, winding passageway, and was stained with blood here and there.

When they first entered the dungeon, because of the slightly frightening atmosphere, Harin was petrified, but as the battle started, she instead found stability immediately.

For now, this was because the monsters that appeared weren't much different from the ones outside of the dungeon.

On top of that, as the passageway wasn't that wide, it was instead possible to hunt more securely than when they fought in the field.

Because the passageway was structured so narrowly, if there were about two Ddukdae's, they would be able to block it off perfectly, so unless Ian, who fought at the front, didn't die, there was no reason for Harin to be in danger.

Like that, Harin, who had hunted with Ian like that for some time now, mumbled as she spoke.

“Speaking of which, this passageway is quite long.”

At her words, Ian nodded his head.

“No kidding. It's not even a structure that can go down or up to some other floor, so it must just continue straight like this.”

“Yeah. I wish there was a little bit of change... Will a brighter place not appear?”

At her words, Ian replied and grumbled.

“First, shouldn’t we have to reach the end of this passageway in order for a brighter map to appear? In the meantime, I wish that a lot of monsters will appear, but why are there only small amounts of them? I need to hunt a ton while I can get double the EXP...”

Harin shook her head before she even realized it.

From her perspective, the hunting level was quite difficult even now, but while looking at Ian complain, she automatically let out a sigh.

“It’s enough even now, Jinsung.”

At Harin’s scolding, Jinsung turned his head in order to reply.

However, just before Ian was about to open his mouth, a familiar cry was heard from deep within the dungeon, in a place that couldn’t be told.

Awooooo-!

It was none other than the howling of a wolf. It was even similar to Ly’s.

The atmosphere of the place was already eerie, but as the howls of wolves rang through on top of that, Harin wore a slightly

petrified expression.

“Yo, it looks like more monsters were made because you complained.”

While looking at Harin, who stuck like glue to his side and glanced around, Ian smirked.

“If you just think of them as lumps of EXP, you’ll be at ease.”

Ian got into stance.

Based on the senses felt from deeper within the dungeon, he felt that there would be quite a large number of monsters that would appear.

“Ddukdae, get ready!”

Deu-reuk- Deu-reu-reuk-.

Because of the constant little appearance of two to three monsters, Ian wasn’t able to use any AoE skills, and as a matter of fact, his body was itching.

“Lake, Pin. You guys as well, once I give you the signal, prepare to use your skill right away. Understood?”

At Ian's words, the two Familiars responded at the same time.

Grr-.

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

And shortly after, from the dark depths of the cave, the forms of monsters began to appear.

Grr-Grrr-!

However, Ian, who had checked each and every one of the monsters, was considerably flustered.

“What the hell, they're Ly!”

Harin was just as surprised.

“Ehh? The same kind of species as Ly existed in the field as well?”

The name ‘Blood-Red Maned Wolf’, which was just above the heads of the monsters, confirmed the two people's words.

Ian made a hand action towards Harin as spoke.

“Harin, I think we'll need to be a bit more careful this time. Stand a little farther back.”

“Okay, understood.”

At Ian’s words, without hesitation, Harin hid in a spot a little far-off.

In the case of the yetis or Ice Trolls that had appeared up until now in the dungeon, since they were big in size and their movements were slow, if Ian guarded her from the front, it wasn’t dangerous at all, but it was a different story if it was a Blood-Red Maned Wolf, whose base reflexes were far superior.

On top of that, there were a lot of them, so he had no idea when they would find the chance and attack Harin.

If she was properly bitten and received critical damage, Harin would have to instantly see a grey screen.

‘On top of being around lv 125, they’re all Rare-rank monsters...’

There wasn’t a big difference in their levels with yetis alone, but the problem was that they were a higher rank than them.

Ian, who was personally nurturing his Familiars, was well aware of how much one rank difference made a difference in the stats.

‘A total of about seven... And during battle, any amount of them could additionally appear.’

Ian felt nervous for the first time since coming to hunt at Forlas Plateau.

And the wolves that discovered Ian quickly began to charge towards him.

“Ddukdae, forward first!”

Just like he always did, Ddukdae moved forward in order to find the most optimal angle to cast Abyss Hole.

And Ian shot his Magic Spheres cleverly and induced the charging wolves to move towards one side of the passageway.

“Now!”

As Ian yelled, without hesitation, Ddukdae spread both of his arms forward.

Kuoooh-!

And amongst the total of seven wolves, five of them began to be sucked into the range of Abyss Hole.

“Pin, Lake!”

As Ian made a hand action, the two Familiars' AoE skills burst out without fail as well.

Kwaaah-!

Ian, who had checked that the AoE skills were invoked properly, got on top of Halli's back.

"Halli, Ly. Let's go!"

Ian, who was on Halli's back, and Ly quickly charged towards the remaining two wolves.

Familiar 'Halli' has used the skill 'Guardian of the Wind'.

Familiar 'Halli's Agility will increase as much as the total value of the rest of his combat stats.

Wind energy charged with a white light wrapped around Halli and Ian and began to blow violently.

Ian held onto Halli firmly.

For the next 2 minutes, if he was to try and not fall off the back of Halli, who was moving like a crazy wind, he couldn't let even a little bit of his nervousness go.



Kyaooh-!

Ian, who put strength in his legs in order to not fall off, fired Magic Spheres from the back of charging Halli.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

And with his recovered Spirit Magic, he invoked Current Proliferation right after.

Za-Zap- Za-Za-Zap-!

Even on top of Halli, who was moving at a fast speed, there was no way for Ian's attacks to miss.

The Current Proliferation that had exactly hit the wolves had also dealt additional blows and after bouncing around a couple of times, they disappeared into the air.

The 'Blood-Red Maned Wolf' has gone into 'paralyzed' state.  
The cooldown time of 'Current Proliferation' has been reset.

Meanwhile, owing to Ian's active part on his back, Halli was also able to approach the subject he had targeted.

Crunch-!

Halli, who had succeeded in yanking the shoulder joint of one of the monsters, roughly ripped through its neck.

Familiar 'Halli' has dealt critical damage to the 'Blood-Red Maned Wolf'!

The Vitality of the 'Blood-Red Maned Wolf' has been reduced by 8125.

The Blood-Red Maned Wolf had low Vitality and Defensive Power, but as their levels were at 125, they didn't die easily from a couple attacks.

'So, their levels are gangsters?'

Ian was a little surprised.

This was because even the five wolves that couldn't avoid any of the AoE attacks were still breathing.

If the power of Lake's Breath and Pin's Crush skills were considered, it was quite surprising.

However, Ian, who saw that the names of the wolves were quickly flickering, gave a command to Ly without hesitation.

“Ly, Thirst for Blood!”

It was the most optimal time to invoke the Thirst for Blood skill!

Grrr-!

A bright, blood-red aura began to gush out from Ly’s body.

Familiar ‘Ly’ has used the ‘Thirst for Blood’ skill.

Familiar ‘Ly’s Offensive Power and Agility have increased by 30% for 3 minutes.

Familiar ‘Ly’s movements have increased by 40% for 3 minutes.

From now on, whenever an opponent with Vitality lower than 30% is attacked, all damage dealt by ‘Ly’s attack will double.

Ly charged towards the wolves without hesitation.

And seeing that, Ddukdae and Lake, as well as Pin moved intelligently and blocked off the route of the wolves.

Kyaooh-!

Pin, who had cried in the air once, helped Ly and subdued the wolves one by one with incredible reflexes.

You have killed the 'Blood-Red Maned Wolf'. You have obtained 142,300 EXP.

You have obtained 4122 gold from the 'Blood-Red Maned Wolf'.

You have obtained 'Slice of Blood'.

Ian, who had discovered the item called 'Slice of Blood', which he was seeing for the first time, from the corpse of the wolf, wore an expression full of curiosity.

'What's this? Is this like a quest item?'

## Chapter 107: The Secret Of Forlas Plateau (3)

---

Because there was not much content even when he checked the item information, he had absolutely no idea where it was used just from looking at the name.

However, Ian put aside his curiosity for now and focused on cleaning up all of the wolves in the hall first.

And he was able to wipe all of the seven wolves without much difficulty.

“Alright! The EXP is savoury.”

However, on the other hand, he also felt even more alert.

This was because, compared to the Common-rank monsters that he had fought against up until now, he could definitely feel that the Offensive Power and Agility of the Blood-Red Maned Wolves were far superior.

The fact that his Familiars' Vitalities had dropped to quite a dangerous level was proof of that.

“Harin, please heal my Familiars.”

“Sure!”

Ian smacked his lips inwardly.

‘I should have brought my retainers. Even if I had Celia, she would have been a big help in recovering my Familiars...’

Celia’s Familiar recovery skill and cloning skill was a big help in hunting.

However, there was a reason why he also left them behind.

This was because they needed to lead the Domain police and hunt the nearby monsters in order for the hunting effectiveness of the police to be good.

‘Next time, I should just bring even Celia. Since even with the other retainers, they should be enough to lead the police.’

While Ian was thinking of this and that, he didn’t forget to continuously use his First-Aid skill.

This was because, compared to Harin’s recovery skill, its effect could be considered a drop in the ocean, but for when he hunted alone, he needed to consistently raise its Proficiency.

As maintenance was completed, Ian stood up from his spot.

“Alright, shall we go deeper inside now?”

“Yeah, sounds good!”

As Harin responded with a beaming expression, which was completely different from her expressions up until now, Ian asked her with a quizzical voice.

“Hm? Did you get something good, Harin?”

Harin shook her head as she responded.

“No, nothing like that, but I did already level-up 2 levels since entering this dungeon. Although, I was already over 90% EXP before we entered...”

Because Ian had only now barely gained about 15% EXP, his stomach hurt a little.

However, it was obvious that there would be a difference in the leveling-up speed of Harin, who was now at lv 93, versus Ian, who was at lv 116.

‘Well, since it’s good on the guild’s part if Harin levels up...’

He was a little disappointed that he had to share the EXP with Harin, but because he was able to hunt even a little faster thanks to her heals and buffs, he couldn’t really say it was a big loss.

The two people moved their feet and began to go deeper into the

dungeon.

\*

“Huh? What’s this?”

As Ian stopped walking and raised his hand to keep everybody back, Harin, who was following from behind, asked with a quizzical expression.

“Why, is there a problem?”

“There isn’t a problem, but the path is blocked.”

At Ian’s words, she came forward, and after seeing the inside of the passageway that was curved, both of Harin’s eyes grew.

And she scolded Ian.

“The path being blocked is a problem, you idiot.”

“Is, is it?”

Ian scratched the back of his head as he approached and stood in front of the blocked passageway.

“But I think that this wasn’t always blocked off.”



“Really?”

“Yeah. If the passageway was just always blocked off, then the walls would have naturally narrowed down, but here, if you look at the ceilings and the walls, they’re completely perpendicular to the wall blocking the path.”

“You’re right.”

At Ian’s explanation, Harin also approached the wall and checked the blocked-off section.

On top of being dark, the wall was black, so it wasn’t clearly visible, but looking at it from a closer perspective, the wall was not just flat.

It was symmetrically made up with a rough shape that had an artificial feeling.

“Oh, this is completely covered in dust.”

As Harin placed her hand on the wall that blocked the path, black dust completely covered her hand as she pulled it away.

And from the spot where the dust was cleared, a stone wall made up of worn-out marble was revealed.

It was a little unusual, but at the giant stone gate-like image, Ian nodded his head and mumbled.

“As expected... There was no way that a dungeon would end in vain like this. There wasn’t even some sort of Boss.”

At Ian’s words, Harin also nodded her head.

“That’s right. But, first, I feel like we need to clear some of the dust in order for us to see something.”

At those words, Ian turned his head towards Bbookbbook, who was on his back.

“Bbookbbook, can you not shoot out something like a water cannon?”

He seemed to have heard Ian’s words, as Bbookbbook, who was inside of his shell, poked his head out and wore a puzzled expression.

Bbook?

While looking at Bbookbbook, who wore a naïve expression while tilting his head, Ian shook his head.

“It will be faster to ask Pin.”

And Ian made all of his Familiars and Harin stand far back.

“Pin, try using your Crush skill on there.”

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

At Ian’s command, Pin, who slightly flew up into the air, began to flap his wings towards the stone wall covered in dust.

Kwaaah-!

And the giant vortex of wind that appeared in front of Pin swept past the stone wall.

Harin took a couple more steps backwards as she squinted her eyes.

“Whew, look at the dust.”

This was because, just like she said, a thick cloud of dust formed in the inner side of the passageway.

The party turned their back towards the dust wind and escaped out of the passageway.

This was because it was obvious that if they were to just get directly hit by it, their whole body would be covered with dust just

like black coal.

And shortly after, once the dust had calmed down, Ian and Harin approached the stone wall.

“Wow, this is cool.”

Harin let out an exclamation.

This was because the violent wind that gushed out from Pin's wings had removed the dust that was piled on the stone wall very cleanly, and the form of the wall that was previously unknown was revealed intact.

And the thing that had caught the two people's eyes first was the large sphere, which was about 4-metres in length and width, that was lodged in the centre of the stone wall.

To be more specific, it was a clear, glass marble that was in the wide-opened mouth of a wolf that was carved right in the middle of the stone wall.

“What could this be?”

Harin asked, but there was no way that Ian would know about it.

“I'm not sure. It also seems like some sort of entrance to a religious altar...’

While speaking, Ian let down Bbookbbook, who he was carrying on his back, and beat his waist.

“Ow, my waist. First, let’s think about this while resting a little.”

Harin, who saw him, grinned.

“Is he really heavy?”

“Well, not that much...”

As soon as Bbookbbook was on the ground, he poked his head out, and indubitably started to run around.

Harin laughed as she called Ian.

“Jinsung.”

“Yeah?”

“By any chance, the reason why Bbookbbook is gaining weight...”

Bbookbbook, who had heard up to this point, stopped walking and suddenly turned his head as he glared at Harin.

Glare-!

Even if it was Harin, the meatball angel, he couldn't forgive her if she was going to give him stress about dieting.

Harin's words continued.

"Could it be that it's not because he eats a lot, but maybe because lack of exercise?"

"Hm? Lack of exercise?"

Harin nodded her head as she continued.

"Yeah. Since he's just always on your back, he never gets the chance to move around. Even if he eats a lot, if you make him exercise, I feel like he won't gain weight..."

"Hmm. That could also be right."

Ian turned his attention towards Bbookbbook.

"Bbookbbook, what do you think? Do you want to just eat as much as you want and exercise a little?"

Bbookbbook, who met eyes with Ian, closed his eyes and wore a distressed expression.

Bboo-ook...

Truthfully, Bbookbbook wasn't just a gluttonous turtle, he was also incredibly lazy.

To the point he was enjoying getting piggybacked by Ian quite a bit.

He was happy when he occasionally came down from his back and ran around, but for some reason, if it was his evil owner Ian, Bbookbbook felt Ian would exercise intensely.

Bbookbbook, who was contemplating it, ended up postponing his decision.

Bbook-!

While watching Bbookbbook, who crawled off towards somewhere, Ian shook his head.

"See. He doesn't even want to exercise either right now. I'm positive."

At the cutting remark of Ian, who had perfectly grasped his mental condition, Bbookbbook momentarily flinched.

However, he acted as if he hadn't heard anything, and began to

crawl again.

Harin wore a bitter expression as she mumbled.

“No kidding...”

The two people rested for a moment as they inspected their equipment.

Even during then, Ian’s attention continuously lingered on the clear, glass marble.

‘What could that be? If I figure out the secret of that glass marble, I feel like the stone wall will open up...’

Ian slowly stood up and approached the stone wall.

And before he realized it, he placed his hand on top of the glass marble.

However, just then, a completely unexpected system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

Ring-

You are able to use the ‘Blood’ item. Will you use it?



---

At the unexpected situation, Ian momentarily flinched, but without hesitating, he used the blood.

This was because there was quite a lot of blood that he had gained from catching Blood-Red Maned Wolves up until now.

“I’ll use it.”

As soon as Ian was done speaking, one blood that was within Ian’s chest jumped out and was absorbed into the clear marble.

You have used the ‘Blood’ item.

2% of the ‘Blood Vessel Jade’ has been restored.

The current restoration rate of the ‘Blood Vessel Jade’: 2/100

Ian, who saw that, was immediately able to get an idea.

‘This place must open once this is filled.’

First of all, Ian used up all of the bloods that he had without exception.

1.2% of the ‘Blood Vessel Jade’ has been restored.

2.3% of the 'Blood Vessel Jade' has been restored.

As the restoration rate was different depending on the size of the bloods, despite having used a little more than twenty of them, it only amounted to a restoration rate of 30%.

Harin, who was watching a red light from Ian's hand endlessly being sucked in, seemed to have grown curious as she approached him.

"Jinsung, what are you doing?"

"Ah, I think I've found the answer to this. Harin, there were bloods that you gained while hunting, right?"

Jinsung assumed that Harin would also have a similar amount of bloods, and he thought if he used all of those as well, he would be able to almost fill the restoration rate.

However, Harin wasn't able to respond right away and hesitated.

"Uh... That... Jinsung."

"Yeah?"

"I didn't have enough space for my cooking ingredients, so I threw out all those bloods or whatever..."

“ ... ”

Jinsung was a little flustered, but he decided to think positively of it.

‘Well, that’s okay, since we have the first discoverer’s buff as well... It’s good if we hunt a lot, I guess.’

If they went back a little from where they came from, the Blood-Red Maned Wolves that they had hunted before would have all regenerated.

Ian called over Bbookbbook, who had crawled into a corner of the passageway and was wriggling.

“Bbookbbook, let’s go hunt.”

However, Bbookbbook acted as if he hadn’t even heard him.

Ian, who saw that, grumbled as he approached Bbookbbook.

“Hey, what have you picked up and are eating now?”

As it wasn’t an everyday occurrence for Bbookbbook to be eating moss-like stuff that grew in fields here and there, Ian approached Bbookbbook without much thought.

However, Harin, who had approached Bbookbbook before Ian, shouted with a surprised voice.

“Jinsung, this is Bloody Salty Grass!”

“Huh? What’s that?”

“It’s a cooking ingredient, but, how do I explain this...”

Harin, who thought about it for a moment, seemed to have thought of something, as her words continued.

“Uh, you know capsaicin, right? You should be able to understand what it is if you think of it like a cooking ingredient that’s used similarly to capsaicin?”

And Jinsung’s two eyes rounded.

“What? Capsaicin?”

Jinsung was well aware of the terror(?) of capsaicin.

When he first began living alone, while cooking [Ddukbokki](#), he had put a good amount of capsaicin in it without thinking.

Spicy Korean rice cakes

He still hadn’t forgotten hellishly spicy flavour that he had tasted

then.

As his butt was on fire for almost two days, it was something he couldn't forget even if he wanted to.

“Harin, then, is it okay for him to take a proper bite out of that?”

Ian wasn't able to continue what he was going to say next.

This was because Bbookbbook, who had eaten the capsaicin(?), began to jump around here and there.

While watching him, Harin let out a deep sigh.

“Whew, his stomachs probably going to flip inside out even from just eating one leaf...”

Ian watched Bbookbbook with a pitiful expression as he sympathized.

“That's why hyung told you not to just go around eating anything, Bbookbbook...”

A horrible shriek(?) that they had never heard of from Bbookbbook up until now came out from his mouth.

Bboo-roo-roo-rook-!

# Chapter 108: Liberated Fenrir (1)

---

YouCast, the world's largest video-sharing site.

In the upper left corner on the main page of YouCast, there was a ranking chart called 'The Ranking of the Rapidly Rising in Popularity'.

Hanjoon, a company employee in his 30s, always watched YouCast before he went to bed as his last daily task everyday.

This was because even by just making sure to watch YouCast everyday, he could find interesting incidents and videos in all sorts of categories from the entertainment world, sports, games, etc.

At first, Hanjoon mainly watched videos on the bulletin board of the Best, which were of videos with a high number of total views, but for some time now, he always checked the top-ranking bulletin board of videos rapidly rising in popularity first in order to mainly see the latest videos.

"Ha, so tired."

Hanjoon, who suffered all day from hard work, changed into his PJs and turned off his lights before he lied down on his bed and opened his smartphone.

Drowsiness overcame him, but he had no plans of skipping his time to watch YouCast before he went to bed.

“Let’s see here, I wonder what kind of fun video there will be today.”

Hanjoon, who had gone into YouCast’s bulletin board of videos rapidly rising in popularity with just a couple taps, scrolled down.

“Hm, most of them are videos I watched yesterday... Are there no new ones?”

He mumbled when suddenly, both his eyes shone.

“Huh? The increase quotient is 940%? Isn’t this a mistake?”

A video with an increase quotient so high that it was incomparable to the other videos had caught his eyes.

The title of the video was incredibly long, and it seemed because it was a global version, as it was written in English.

However, because it was translated in Korean after it, he had no problem in reading it.

Kailan

Diamond Class Dominion Battle (Lotus Vs Polaris)

Summoner User Ian’s Mad Movie (1 VS 30)

Hanjoon, who read the title, wore a surprised expression.

“Huh? It seems to be a Kailan video, but it’s a Summoner user’s mad movie?”

Hanjoon was even more interested.

Because of his work life, he didn’t have time during the weekdays, but during the weekends, he was user that always played Kailan.

On top of that, he was a Summoner-class.

Because he had never seen a video uploaded that was a mad movie of a Summoner user up until now, Hanjoon tapped the video without hesitation.

And a video that was edited with an incredibly luxurious design began to be played.

“Oh, this is a video that Sojin has edited.”

Hanjoon, who had discovered the words ‘Made by Sojin’ on the bottom of the video began to be immersed with an even more excited expression.



This was because he also knew of the uploader with the ID Sojin, as they were quite famous.

“Keu, are they really fighting 30 to 1?”

As the video started, Hanjoon began to focus.

And shortly after, as if he had been sucked into his smartphone, he wasn't able to take his eyes away from it for even a moment.

The video was not inferior to any videos that he had seen up until now in terms of extravagance.

“Wo, wow...”

He kept on blurting out exclamations no matter what part he was watching.

Hanjoon, who had watched the 30-minute video until the end without skipping over even one part in his dark room, pressed the ‘replay’ button before he even realized it.

Hanjoon mumbled with a dazed voice.

“Does... This even make sense?”

To him, a Summoner that was currently around lv 50, Ian's territory war battle video was the definition of shocking.

From what he saw, this video had completely flipped over the established theory that 'Summoners were the worst for PVP'.

Even just last weekend, he was feeling doubtful of the 'Summoner'-class and was contemplating resetting his character, but his mind was now filled with an incredible sensation.

'Exactly how many Familiars does he have? One, two... You're telling me that it's possible to control five Familiars so elaborately like that?'

Bbookbbook, that hung on Ian's back, was not classified as a Familiar in Hanjoon's eyes.

Because of that, he had counted a total of five.

'No, and that Familiar that looks similar to an eagle has an image similar to a Griffin that appears in myths... There's no way that's a real Griffin, right?'

When he first played the video, he was distracted by the extravagant battle and had no chance to even develop a curiosity towards the Familiars that Ian operated, but as he replayed the video, his eyes started to focus on each and every Familiar.

'For the Blood-Red Maned Wolf, there are quite a bit of users that

had evolved to one, so that's doesn't really matter, but the other Familiars are ones that I'm completely seeing for the first time. By any chance, is that white tiger a Hallikan?'

Hanjoon was incredibly confused.

He had seen the specs of the Summoner rankers that popped up in the community every now and then, but he had definitely never seen such nonsense specs.

'An edit or a fabrication... This isn't one, right? Or by any chance, a system administrator?'

While Hanjoon was deeply thinking about it, the video had ended, and he was about to press the replay button without thinking again when he stopped.

'Shall we take a look at the comments instead?'

He scrolled down and began to read through the comments.

Comments in various languages of different countries were attached, but as they were all translated into Korean, there was no problem reading them.

Kpio900 – This crazy! You're telling me this is a Summoner? Are you expecting me to believe this right now?

Holyaai – What is the identity of that blue golem? Is there by chance anybody that knows that channeling skill that sucks in with that opponents with that whirlwind?

CoCo1123 – For crying out loud! I'm positive that's a Griffin. I'm telling you, I've definitely seen it drawn on the walls of the Luspel Empire's main castle!

KailanHolic – Summoner God. Where are all the dudes that dissed Summoners? I want to bring them over and show them. Speaking of which, what exactly is that dude's level? Even if it was the Korean server that opened up first, how does it make sense that he can easily take down thirty people in the lv 90 range? Has he hit lv 130 or something?

Pts1120 – Commenter above, I think you've got the wrong idea. Summoner is a class that came out after all servers were opened. No matter if it was the Korean server that opened the quickest, if it's a Summoner-class, there's no difference.

There were already over hundreds of comments.

If there was a common feature of all of these comments, they were all plastered with exclamation and question marks.

It showed that most of the reactions weren't able to believe this.

Hanjoon, who read through the comments, couldn't help but nod his head automatically as well.

‘This is an obvious reaction. If it’s a user that had played Summoner even a little, then they should be able to know how nonsensical that battle is.’

As a Summoner himself, he had experience losing to a user that was almost 5-10 levels lower than him in PVP from a bad match-up.

Because of that, he couldn’t understand Ian’s fighting power at all.

Hanjoon abruptly got up from his bed and turned on his computer.

‘Ah... I was planning on going to bed early, but that’s too late now.’

If he didn’t search up on the user ‘Ian’, he felt he wouldn’t be able to get any sleep.

Sitting in front of the computer, the sound of the mouse that was clicking in his hands began to ring out constantly.

\*

“All done!”

From the marble that Ian had his hand on top of, a red light

began to ooze.

100% of the 'Blood Vessel Jade' has been restored.

And the bright red light that oozed from the marble began to flare out from the whole stone gate that was blocking the passageway.

In the end of going around the dungeon and hunting without rest for about an hour, they had succeeded in raising the restoration rate to 100%.

The 'Gateway of Blood's seal has been released.

A system message popped up in front of Ian and Harin's eyes, and the giant stone gate that looked to be over 4-metres in length and width slowly began to open up.

At that sight, an exclamation flowed out of Harin's mouth before she even realized.

"Wow..."

On the other hand, Ian instinctively grabbed and pulled Harin's hand as he backed up.

“Harin, let’s take a step back a bit. Since we have no idea what will be inside.”

“Yeah, got it.”

Keu-keung- Keu-keu-keung-!

As the stone gate opened from the left and right, a boom rang out in every direction, and Ian looked into the inner part behind the stone gate attentively.

And Ian, who had checked the inner part, got into fighting stance.

“Harin, stay far back. I think there’s a boss monster inside.”

A strong light oozed out from the inner part.

Because of that, he couldn’t see the monster inside well, but the silhouette from the backlight looked similar to a giant wolf.

A slightly interesting point was that the wolf was standing on two legs.

Shortly after, the light died down, and the shape of the wolf was completely revealed.

“Wow, is that a werewolf? It’s incredibly cool.”

Harin let out an exclamation with a naïve expression, but meanwhile, a cold sweat broke out on Ian’s forehead, who had had immediately checked the information of the monster.

Bloody Fenrir – Lv 128 (Heroic-rank)

‘Fenrir? Euh, I knew that it would be a Heroic-rank since it is a boss monster, but lv 128, though...’

Fenrir was a legendary monster that appeared in Northern European myths.

There was no chance for a monster created with the name of a legendary creature that appeared in myths to be weak.

Ian grew even more nervous.

‘But, on the topic of wolves, why is that thing so big.’

The wolf, which looked to even be a little bigger than white tiger Halli, had red fur on its back that looked as if it was on fire and with even its two eyes tinged a dark red, it had an incredibly overpowering image.



Keu-reu-reu-.

It seemed that the Fenrir had discovered Ian as well, as both its eyes shone and it began to move its body.

With an expression of complete madness, it started to turn its body.

Ian, who saw that, controlled his Familiars calmly.

“Ddukdae, go forward first!”

Deu-reu-reuk-.

Along with the loud sound of Ddukdae’s steps, he began to move.

And the Fenrir also started to run in equally.

The movements of the Fenrir were incredibly agile, and in an instant, the space in between began to shrink.

‘If I slip up, I could end up kicking the bucket.’

Ian got on Halli’s back.

Even at a glance, the opponent had Agility that was far superior to Ian.

In case the Fenrir was to ignore the Familiars and charged towards Ian, there would be no way for him to avoid it.

However, if he was riding Halli, that was a different story.

“You can’t lose its movements!”

Fortunately, the opponent that Fenrir charged into first was Ddukdae.

Ian closely watched how much damage Ddukdae received from the Fenrir’s attack.

And the Fenrir’s teeth, which shone a bright red, directly impacted Ddukdae’s chest.

Ba-bang-!

Familiar ‘Ddukdae’ has received critical damage from the ‘Bloody Fenrir’.

Familiar ‘Ddukdae’s Vitality has been reduced by 12740.

Ian, who checked the damage, gulped inwardly.

‘Even if it was a critical hit, for the damage to be over 10 thousand...’

The Vitality of Ddukdae, who was close to lv 120 now, was over 60 thousand.

However, even if his Vitality was that high, if damage being dealt was going to be 12 thousand, he wouldn’t be able to last five hits before he died.

If Ddukdae’s Defensive Power of over 25 hundred was considered, it was truly outrageous Offensive Power.

Ian hurried and invoked Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole.

“Ddukdae, Abyss Hole!”

If he was to have invoked Abyss Hole from the beginning, there was the risk of the incredibly agile Fenrir avoiding the attack, so even if he was to allow one hit, he purposely used it later.

Kuoooh-!

And no matter how agile the Fenrir was, there was no way that it could avoid the AoE Abyss Hole that was in close-range.

Kyaaoo-!

The Fenrir that began to be sucked into the range of the Abyss Hole let out a horrible shriek.

Ian, who had confirmed that the Fenrir's feet were tied down, quickly yelled.

“Charge in now!”

## Chapter 109: Liberated Fenrir (2)

---

At those words, the other Familiars charged towards the Fenrir.

The one that first attacked the Fenrir was none other than Ly.

Chomp-!

Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to the 'Bloody Fenrir'.

The 'Bloody Fenrir's Vitality has been reduced by 5876.

Ian, who saw that Ly's critical damage had only dealt about 6 thousand damage, slightly squinted his eyes.

'Ha... It's definitely not a Defensive-type monster, it's level is seriously a gangster.'

Compared to the almost 9 thousand damage that Ly's attack dealt on a normal Common monster, only about 60% of his damage was applied.

However, just then, an unexpected counterattack from the Fenrir burst out.

Pu-puck-!

The Fenrir had quickly swung both of its front legs towards Ly, who had bit its shoulder joint.

Familiar 'Ly' has been attacked by the 'Bloody Fenrir'.

Familiar 'Ly's Vitality has been reduced by 9760.

Familiar 'Ly's Vitality has been reduced by 8958.

Ly, who was struck in an instant by the Fenrir's front legs, was thrown through the air.

Kkae-kkaeng-!

Ly's Vitality was just under 20 thousand.

From that one set of attack, Ly was on the brink of death.

'If there was even a critical attack, he would have died!'

Ian felt his heart sank as he hurriedly Summon Released Ly.

"Ly, Summon Release!"

And from the spot where Ly disappeared from, Lake and Pin's AoE skills rained down.

Kwaaah-!

Hwa-reu-reuk-!

Along with that, the Fenrir's Vitality also began to drop quickly.

Familiar 'Pin' has used Inherent Ability 'Crush'.

The 'Bloody Fenrir's Vitality has been reduced by 2439.

The 'Bloody Fenrir's Vitality has been reduced by 2399.

The 'Bloody Fenrir's Vitality has been reduced by 2501.

The Crush skill that dealt 125% of his Offensive Power every 0.5 seconds literally boasted an incredible destructive power.

On top of that, as Lake's Breath overlapped with it, even if the Fenrir was almost lv 130, it could only receive an enormous amount of damage.

And the name of the Fenrir, who was directly hit by the two Familiars' powerful skills, began to blink without a doubt.

Ian was also firing off Magic Spheres and Current Proliferation from a further distance away.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

And lastly, Ddukdae's Abyss Hole exploded with a deafening boom.

Baaang-!

The Fenrir's name began to blink even quicker.

Ian, who saw that, let out a shout of delight.

'Despite being a boss monster, it's Vitality isn't much.'

It was normal for Boss monsters that appeared in dungeons or fields to have several times the amount of Vitality of a Common monster, regardless of their rank.

In the case of a Defensive-type or Health-type boss, with a little bit of exaggeration mixed in, there were ones that you needed to knock out all day.

Of course, the Offensive Power of Crush and Breath were powerful, but even taking that into consideration, he couldn't help but feel that the Fenrir's Vitality dropped quickly.

'I did Summon Release Ly, but we might be able to catch him more easily than I expected.'

The Familiars that used up all of their AoE skills charged towards



the Fenrir with ferocious spirits as if they planned on ending this battle.

However, as the slowing effect of Abyss Hole was over now, the Fenrir quickly leaped into the air and avoided all of the attacks.

Ta-tat-.

The Fenrir stood on two feet when it was on the ground, but as it began to run along the walls of the passageway, it used all of its four feet naturally and began to move at an incredible speed.

“Pin! The right-!”

The Fenrir, who had gone around behind Lake before he realized, raised his front paws that shone a bright red.

However, after seeing the front paws of the Fenrir, Ian’s eyes widened.

‘What the hell is that?’

This was because, from the raised paws of the Fenrir, bright-red claws that looked long enough to be 1-metre long had grown out.

Chwaak-!

And the next moment.

Ian couldn't help but doubt his two eyes.

Familiar 'Lake' has received critical damage from the 'Bloody Fenrir'.

Familiar 'Lake's Vitality has been reduced by 29,760.

It was an outrageous attack that was hard to believe even after checking it with both eyes.

Moreover, that wasn't the end.

The 'Bloody Fenrir' has absorbed 'Lake's Vitality and has recovered 44,640 Vitality.

The dying Fenrir had revived through its Health Absorption effect.

As it revived an incredible ratio of almost 150% of the damage it dealt, Ian couldn't help but be taken aback.

'What kind of monster like this actually exists?'

Of course, it wasn't like it completely recovered its Vitality to the maximum just by recovering 44 thousand Vitality.

Based on the fact that its name was still blinking, it meant that less than half its Vitality remained.

However, in a situation where the Familiars had poured at most of their skills, the Fenrir, which had recovered over 30% of its Vitality, was an incredibly dangerous existence.

‘We can't allow him to attack as much as possible!’

He was positive that the Fenrir's attack just a moment ago was an Inherent Ability.

Since when they were normally attacked, the Health Absorption effect wasn't invoked.

If in the case that Health Absorption was applied even for normal attacks, there would be nothing that was as much of a pain in the ass as that.

‘Is that at least a relief?’

Ian withdrew Lake without hesitation as well.

“Lake, Summon Release!”

Lake's Inherent Abilities were specialized to AoE attacks.

And compared to his powerful Offensive Power, Lake's reflexes were on the quite low side, so there was no way that Lake would be able to avoid the Fenrir's attacks.

There was no reason to keep Lake summoned when it was certain that if he allowed one or two more hits, he would die.

Ian slightly turned his head and glanced at Harin.

From a far distance, Harin was recovering Ddukdae's Vitality.

'If Harin just keeps healing, Ddukdae should be able to withstand that outrageous Offensive Power.'

Now, the remaining Familiars on the battleground were Pin and Halli, as well as Ddukdae and Bbookbbook.

'We'll go for the speediest battle possible. We need to catch it before it recovers its Vitality.'

If they were slow and dragged out the time, and the Health Absorption effect was invoked one or two more times, then there would be no chance.

The Familiars began to move quickly and accurately according to Ian's commands.

Fortunately, because Pin and Halli's Agility didn't fall back at all compared to the Fenrir, they were able to prevent it from easily attacking them.

The Fenrir chased after Ian, who was continuously on top of Halli, but eventually changed its target.

It had its eye on Ddukdae, whose movements were slow, first.

Kka-ka-kang-!

The Fenrir's claws raked through Ddukdae's sturdy exterior and a bang reminiscent of the sound of metal scraping against each other rang out.

Familiar 'Ddukdae's Vitality has been reduced by 6760.

Familiar 'Ddukdae's Vitality has been reduced by 7312.

Two attacks lodged in one after another, but fortunately, it wasn't a critical attack, and Harin quickly recovered Ddukdae's Vitality.

And Ian didn't let that chance go.

'The moment that dude focuses on Harin, Harin will immediately

be kicked out of the game.'

As Harin was hiding her body behind Ddukdae, it was a situation where the Fenrir could definitely discover her.

He couldn't leave the situation to happen like that.

Halli, who had Ian on his back, and Pin violently rushed towards the Fenrir.

Puck-Pu-puck-!

Pin's front feet, that reached the Fenrir first, raked through the back of the Fenrir's head.

And continued, Halli lodged his front feet strongly into the chest of Fenrir that turned around.

Along with that, Ian yelled.

"Halli, Guardian of the Wind!"

As Ian let out the command, Halli's Inherent Ability, Guardian of the Wind, was invoked, and Halli, whose Agility had increased in an instant, hit the Fenrir continuously.

Bang-Ba-bang!

And the system message that Ian was waiting for popped up.

Familiar 'Halli's Inherent Ability, 'Smash', has been invoked.  
For 1 second, the 'Bloody Fenrir' will go into a 'stunned' state.

'Alright!'

Halli and Pin mercilessly attacked the Fenrir, which flinched backwards in its stunned state.

7192 damage has been dealt to the 'Bloody Fenrir'.  
4823 damage has been dealt to the 'Bloody Fenrir'.  
6859 damage has been dealt to the 'Bloody Fenrir'.

And as soon as the Fenrir was about to recover from its stunned state, Halli's Smash had miraculously invoked again.

Bang-!

Ian poured the rest of his remaining Spirit Magic towards the Fenrir.

As the purple Magic Spheres and Pin's wind attacks, as well as Halli's attacks were focused, the Fenrir's large body slowly began to crumble.

Kyaooh-!

Ddukdae approached the Fenrir, who let out a horrible shriek as it collapsed, and brought down his large fist.

Puck-!

Normally, the Fenrir wouldn't have been struck by the attack of Ddukdae, whose Agility practically hit the floor, but as it had been surrounded from all directions and also had a stunned effect, it couldn't help but be struck.

Plop-!

And shortly after, the Fenrir's body turned into a grey light and completely collapsed.

“Alright!”

Ian clenched his fist tightly.

He hadn't withdrawn his Familiars even once recently, but after having fought a powerful opponent to the point he had to Summon Release two Familiars, he felt completely drained of energy.



You have killed the 'Bloody Fenrir'. You have obtained 997,710 EXP.

It was an enormous amount of EXP that was close to 1 million. However, Ian didn't think that it was a lot of EXP by a long shot.

"Whew, that was seriously close."

If he had given the Fenrir even a little bit more time, Ian would have suffered instead.

Harin, who diligently filled up Ddukdae's Vitality while hiding in the corner, seemed to also have been quite tense, as she let out a sigh of relief and approached Ian.

Harin carefully opened her mouth towards Ian, who had caught his breath.

"Whew, Jinsung, shall we go back now?"

Harin felt that Jinsung was just suffering more for nothing because of her, so she was apologetic.

However, having even caught a boss monster, there was no way that Jinsung would think of going back without seeing the end of

the dungeon.

“No. There’s still a continuing path that way. We need to reach the end of the dungeon before going back.”

With a bitter voice, Harin opened her mouth.

“You also Summon Released Lake and Ly. You can’t summon them right away again, can you?”

“Yeah. I can only summon them after 30 minutes, but with the current fighting power, we can move forward while catching Common monsters, don’t worry.”

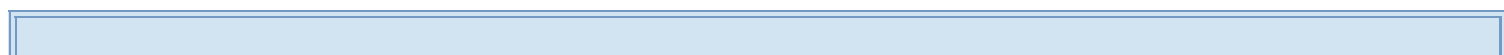
Eventually, at Ian’s stubbornness, Harin couldn’t help but nod her head.

“Alright, well... If you say so.”

Ian got down from Halli’s back and approached the corpse of the Fenrir.

And he placed his hand on top of it.

Just as difficult as it was to hunt it, Ian was anticipating the reward as well.



You have obtained 32,145 gold from the 'Bloody Fenrir'.

You have obtained the 'Bloody Fenrir's Necklace'.

You have obtained the 'Fenrir's Revengeful Spirit'.

After checking the necklace, which the name for was written in a purple light, Ian's mouth turned into a broad smile.

This was because it had been a while since he had received a Heroic-rank item.

However, just when Ian was about to open his inventory and check the items he obtained.

The blood-red marble that Ian was holding in his hand floated into the air and began to shine a strange light.

And a system message popped up in front of his eyes.

You have liberated the 'Fenrir's Revengeful Spirit' that was devoured by madness.

"Huh, huh...?"

The blood-red marble that left Ian's hand whisked around here and there and began to take some sort of form.

The two people watched that with a dazed expression.

Continuing, a ghost with a colourful, translucent shape floated in front of Harin and Ian.

# Chapter 110: Liberated Fenrir (3)

---

Where is this...?

“Sorry...?”

And who are you? This is quite confusing.

The Fenrir that was killed because of Ian.

Its ghost had risen and began to speak to Ian.

Beside him, Harin also stared at that form with amazement.

“Wow, the wolf is talking.”

At Harin’s words, the Fenrir flew into a rage.

I am Shallos, the leader that protects the kin of blood. Don’t compare me to a lowly life form.

At the Fenrir’s spirit, Harin flinched.

“Al, alright. Well...”

And Ian, who was watching the two people’s conversation,

introduced himself with a bitter expression.

“I’m Ian.”

Ian? Ian, you say...

Before Ian was even done speaking, the Fenrir, who introduced himself as ‘Shallos’, opened his mouth again.

So, you are a Summoner.

At his words, Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right, I’m a Summoner.”

Shallos, who took a moment to scan the area, glanced once at his collapsed corpse and turned his head towards Ian again.

Ian slightly tensed up.

Since in any case, he was the one that killed him.

However, different from Ian’s expectation, the Fenrir said something unexpected.

Hmm, firstly, I want to say thank you.

“...?”

I’m expressing my gratitude for saving me as I was snared by the chains of madness.

Shallos’ words to Ian, who wore a dubious expression as he had no idea on how to respond, continued.

My strength was apparently sealed, but still, to have beaten me... I will express my respect to your strength.

At the words that his strength was sealed, Ian shook his head.

‘No, if those were his sealed stats, exactly how strong is he normally?’

Ian, whose mind was on something else on the inside, nodded his head for now as he responded to his words.

“Thanks wo-no, Shallos.”

Shallos’ gaze turned to the Familiars that were standing behind Ian like posts.

And after scanning them once, he continued speaking again.

However, it's disappointing.

Ian reflexively asked back.

“What is?”

If there was a kin of ours amongst your Familiars, I would have been able to be of big help to you.

“What kind of help?”

It's different depending on the qualifications of the kin, but I have the ability to strengthen a child of our kin.

Once he heard those words, there was something that flashed through for an instant.

‘By any chance, could it be possible I gain a clue to evolve Ly through this dude?’

Truthfully, this was a speculation that was closer to assurance than a guess.

Ian opened his mouth urgently.

“My Familiar ‘Ly’ will probably be one of your kin. Blood-Red Maned Wolf, right?”



At Ian's words, Shallos' two eyes slightly rounded.

Hmm? From amongst the Maned Wolves, if it's a relative of blood, then it is my descendant. However, I don't see one amongst your Familiars...

Currently, as Ly suffered from Shallos, who was held captive by madness, it was a situation where he was withdrawn to a different space.

Ian spoke.

"Ly's currently in a Summon Release state. If you just wait about 20 more minutes, I can call him back."

Shallos nodded his head as if he finally understood.

I see, that's why I didn't see him. As a matter of fact, I felt the presence of a relative of blood, but because I couldn't see him, I was just wondering.

"That's right, just wait a little bit longer. I'll summon him again soon."

However, different from Ian's expectations, he shook his head as he continued speaking.

However, it's disappointing.

Ian's two eyes slightly narrowed.

“What is it now? I told you, I can call back Ly in 20 minutes.”

That's because I'll disappear before then. Before I go to the spirit world, the time I can spend here as a substance will not go over 10 minutes. I only have 9 minutes left.

As soon as he heard those words, Ian wore a dumbfounded expression.

“ ... ”

At this miserable situation, Ian barely held back the swear words that almost left his mouth.

‘This, damn it! Why exactly did they make this game like this?’

While looking at Ly, who had no intentions of evolving no matter how diligently he leveled him up, Ian was thinking that he needed to fulfill some sort of requirement.

However, as he couldn't even make use of the situation despite having found the clue in such an unexpected place like this, it was indeed grievous work.

While looking at Ian, who let out an incredibly deep sigh from his depression, Shallos added on.

Anyways, since my spirit has been freed from confinement thanks to you, I should give you a reasonable pay.

As he finished speaking, a system message alerting Ian that he obtained a message popped up.

You have obtained the item 'Bloody Hole'.

Based on the name that was written in purple, it was a definite that it was a Heroic-rank item.

However, there was no way that Ian's mood would brighten from just that.

'Ha, how am I going to evolve Ly now...'

In order to express his gratitude at the reward no matter what kind of mood he was in, Ian slightly dipped his head.

This was an action that had become naturally embedded in Ian's body after playing Kailan up until now in order to get along in this world.

“Thanks, I’ll use it well.”

It’s an item that is also the symbol of the kin of blood. I ask that you treat it with care.

He hadn’t checked what kind of item it was yet, but Ian nodded his head.

“Sure, I will do so.”

Ian, who thought that he finished all of his business now, moved his feet towards the opposite passageway.

However, just then, Shallos’ mouth opened again.

Ah, by any chance, are you going to pass through this passageway and exit out the other side, Ian?

“Hmm...?”

Because he had no idea from the beginning that the passageway even connected to somewhere else, there was no way he would have had such intentions, but Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right. We’re going to go out now through this opposite side.”

As he planned on checking the end of the dungeon anyways, he wasn't exactly saying a lie.

As expected, I see. If that's the case, do you think you could do me a favour?

A NPC's request would be a quest.

Ian's eyes slightly shone.

'If I could gain a clue related to Ly's evolution through even this quest, that would be nice...'

"What kind of que-no, favour?"

At Ian's question, Shallos' words immediately continued.

I have a brother whose spirit has also been restricted.

And a quest window popped up.

Ring-.

\*Bloody Fenrir 'Shallos' request

Bloody Fenrir Shallos, the protector of the kin of blood, has been freed from the restraints on his spirit through your help.

He is incredibly grateful towards you.

However, his brother has not been able to be freed from the restraints on his spirit and is suffering.

With the information received from Shallos as the foundation, let's liberate the restraints of the spirit of 'Orvil', Shallos' brother as well as a Dark Fenrir, a kin of the night.

Quest Difficulty Level: S

Quest Condition: User that has liberated the spirit of Bloody Fenrir 'Shallos'

Time Limit: None

Reward – Unknown

Ian's two eyes rounded as soon as the quest window opened.

'S-rank? This is an S-rank...?'

At the difficulty level that he was seeing for the first time while playing Kailan, Ian was momentarily engulfed by confliction.

'If it's an S-rank quest... I think I've read somewhere in the community not long ago that a lv 130 ranker failed a quest as well.'

However, to just reject it, his regret for having lost the chance to evolve Ly just a moment ago was too big.

At the end of a moment of hesitation, Ian ended up accepting the quest.

‘That’s right, there’s no time limit either, so might as well give it a try.’

“Alright, I’ll try and help.”

As Ian accepted the quest, Shallos’ expression brightened noticeably.

Thank you, Ian. I hope that you’ll liberate my poor brother, who has been suffering by restraints for over a century.

“Sure, well... I’ll try.”

‘Although I don’t know if I’ll be able to do it.

And Shallos’ words continued.

If you walk about 10 more minutes following this passageway, you’ll be able to pass the Forlas Cliff and be able to go outside.

The Forlas Cliff that he was talking about was the endless cliff that unfolded in front of Ian’s eyes before he entered the passageway.

If you go outside of the passageway, it will probably connect to a waterfront. And if you follow that waterfront and move north, Ollibus Village should appear. 100 years have passed, but the

topography shouldn't have changed much.

Ian listened intently to Shallos' words.

As there was no significantly complicated content, though, there was no need to write it down.

Once you arrive at Ollibus Village, find 'Ikael' there. Since he will probably know about the whereabouts of my brother.

Ian, who felt doubtful, asked.

"Ikael? Is he human?"

Shallos responded.

That's right. He is Orvil and my sole human friend.

"I see. But didn't you say that you guys have been locked up for over 100 years? Will a human still be alive?"

At Ian's question, Shallos slowly nodded his head.

He will probably be alive. That's because...

After taking a moment to catch his breath, he slowly opened his mouth.



He is the 'One that has changed his fate'.

\*

Ian and Harin left Shallos and walked to the end following the passageway.

"But Jinsung, wouldn't it be better to just keep hunting here for now until our first discoverer's buff is over?"

At Harin's extremely justifiable question, Ian nodded his head as he responded.

"That's right. That's also what I was planning on doing. He said that there's a place called Ollibus Village once we get out of this passageway. I'm going to go there and buy a Return Stone as well as do maintenance before coming back to hunt again."

"I see."

About ten minutes later, at the end of quickly hunting the monsters that appeared in the latter half of the passageway and moving accordingly, the two people were able to exit out of the place.

"Wow! It actually was a coast!"

As they came out of the passageway, the endless sea and horizon caught the two people's eyes.

Ian was no different in admiration.

“Wow... Is even the sea actually materialized?”

Because Colonar Continent, the land that you first step on when you first start Kailan, was closed off on three sides as it was surrounded by maps, there was not one user in Kailan that had seen the 'sea' yet.

Before the northern continent was open, all four sides were cut off from the beginning, but from the last patch, the map opened up and the north had become accessible.

On top of that, even the fact that the northern continent was connected to the sea was first discovered through Ian.

And sure enough, the first discoverer's reward popped up in front of Ian and Harin's eyes.

Ring-.

You are the first discoverer of the 'sea'.

Your Fame has increased by 50,000.

Your Affinity with 'water'-types has increased by 5%.

---

Instead of her type Affinity increasing, Harin's understanding on seafood cooking ingredients increased by 5%.

The two people, who had gained Fame and stats for free, followed the waterfront and moved north while in a good mood.

And just like Shallos said, they were soon able to discover 'Ollibus Seashore Village'.

"Whoa, there's actually a village here in such a secluded area."

At Ian's words that he said to himself out loud, Harin agreed.

"No kidding. On top of that, the village's size is also on the quite large side."

At her words, there was something that suddenly flashed through Ian's mind all of a sudden.

'By any chance, if it's a village that hasn't been discovered yet, could it be that it doesn't have an affiliated nation or guild?'

If it was a village that was in an independent state, it basically meant that it corresponded with the words that he could immediately register this place as the Lotus Guild's new base.

Ian immediately checked the information of Ollibus Village.

\*Ollibus

Category: Seashore Village (Independent)

Rank: Village

Area: 5582 m2

Population: 1995 people

Ollibus is a village at the north end of the seashore.

Shipbuilding and fishery is well-developed here.

Value of Territory: 2758

Detailed Information (Expand)

‘Independent! It’s actually independent!’

Ian’s expression was full of complete excitement.

This was because, amongst the independent bases that had been discovered in the northern continent up until now, there was no place that was as big in size and as developed as this one.

On top of that, as it’s rank was also at the ‘Village’-rank, if they could just take it in, it would become a big help to the guild.

Ian hurriedly pulled out the Seal of the Lord from his inventory.

“Base occupation!”

However, unexpected system messages popped up in order in front of Ian’s eyes, who was grinning from ear to ear as he spread out his seal.

You cannot occupy the ‘Ollibus’ Seashore Village.

In order to occupy ‘Ollibus’ Seashore Village, the requirements must be satisfied.

Requirement 1. You must possess a Domain higher than the ‘Village’-rank. (Satisfied)

Requirement 2. You must have military power stronger than the relevant village. (Unsatisfied)

Requirement 3. Your friendship with the relevant village must be over 70%. (Unsatisfied)

# Chapter 111: Ollibus Seashore Village (1)

---

Ian, who checked the system message, mumbled while wearing a disappointed expression.

“Euh, as expected, there was no way I would be able to take this so easily.”

Harin approached him while he grumbled.

“Jinsung, what are you doing instead of going in?”

At her question, Ian shook his head as he responded.

“Ah, it’s nothing. I was just thinking about something for a bit.”

Ian moved with Harin, and he first compared the military power of the Lotus Domain and Ollibus Village.

He couldn’t take it for free, but he wanted to occupy this bonanza-like village no matter what.

Before any of the other giant guilds discovered it.

‘Hmm... There’s not much of a difference between the military power. It seems because the rank of the village is low, the levels of the soldiers are much lower in comparison to their numbers.’

The fighting power of the soldiers and fighting-type NPCs of the Domain were all digitized and added up to mark the Domain's military power.

Ollibus Village had over two times more the number of soldiers than the Lotus Domain, but as the soldiers' levels and rank weren't high, their fighting power was similar.

‘The military power requirement is a value that we can satisfy in a few days if we put our mind to it...’

Lastly, Ian's gaze turned towards the message that was written as ‘Requirement 3’.

‘So, ‘Your friendship with the relevant village must be over 70%’, huh...’

There were several ways to raise friendship.

On a Domain level, you could try to trade with them or support them, or you could do the quests of the NPCs in the village.

‘Firstly, I should think about this after I figure out the quest I received now. Since our friendship will go up a little from this quest as well.’

Currently, his friendship with Ollibus Village was a little over

20%.

Because he had never worked on raising his friendship with a village before, he didn't even have an assumption as to how long it will take.

'I should find the most effective method after trying this and that.'

While Ian organized his tangled thoughts, the two people arrived at the general merchandise store of Ollibus Village.

"Jinsung, I'll be organizing a bit of my random items!"

"Okay! Got it."

Jinsung opened his inventory.

'Then, while Harin is organizing her items, shall we check the items that I gained earlier?'

Ian first checked the Heroic-rank item with the name 'Bloody Fenrir's Necklace'.

'Ooh, this necklace is perfect for an Assassin. I could probably sell it for quite a high price.'



Ian, who wore a satisfied smile at the options of the magnificent item, checked the information of the item called 'Bloody Hole' that he received from 'Shallos' this time.

Bloody Hole

Category – Charm

Rank – Heroic

Equip Limit – Can be equipped onto one 'Familiar'.

Durability – 55/55

Option – All Combat Stats +35%

Cooldown times of all Inherent Abilities -15%

\*If equipped onto a 'Wolf' species, their Offensive Power will increase an additional 15%.

\*If equipped onto a 'Wolf' species, their movements will speed up by 30%.

\*This is an item belonging to user 'Ian'.

This item cannot be transferred to another user or be sold, and even if the character dies, it does not drop.

(Transferrable only once for the first time.)

This is a charm that Bloody Fenrir Shallos had made by taking a part of his soul.

It retains an extremely powerful ability.

Ian, who checked the information of the item, was incredibly surprised.

This was because this was a type of item that he had never once seen before.

‘Are you seriously telling me it’s a Familiar-exclusive item?’

If he was curious, he just needed to confirm it right now.

Ian immediately summoned Ly.

“Ly, Summon!”

This was because, after reading the item’s options, it was indubitably an item for Ly.

Grr-Grrr-!

It seemed while he was Summon Released, Ly felt quite stifled, as he approached Ian and growled happily as he rubbed his head against him.

‘But how do you equip this?’

Firstly, Ian pulled out Bloody Hole for his inventory and lifted it up.

And as if he was using a normal item, he first tried to use it.

As he did so, a message popped up.

Ring-

Please select the Familiar that you wish to equip 'Bloody Hole' with.

Ian, who saw that system message, nodded his head at last.

'Ah, I just need to do it like this.'

After Ian placed his hand on top of Ly's head, he used the item again.

As he did so, a system message popped up again.

Item 'Bloody Hole' will be equipped onto Familiar 'Ly'. (To Equip Release, you just need to recall the command 'Equip Release' after selecting the Familiar.)

And the Bloody Hole that was held in Ian's hand turned into a bright-red light and floated into the air before it was sucked into Ly's forehead.

“Oh-ho. It’s equipped with this kind of method.”

The Bloody Hole was originally an item that had a small, marble-like form, but as it was sucked into Ly’s forehead, it was engraved onto his forehead like a tattoo with an interesting design.

Ian opened Ly’s information window.

And after checking the changed stats of Ly, Ian wore a pleased expression.

‘This is really good! But is there no other way to find Familiar-exclusive items? If I go to the auction house, will it be up there?’

While Ian was thinking of this and that, Harin approached him.

It seemed she had disposed of items at the general merchandise store and finished organizing, as she wore a much lighter expression.

“Jinsung. I have to go now, so I’ll be heading out first.”

At her words, Jinsung nodded his head.

“Thanks for your hard work today, Harin.”

Harin smiled brightly as she responded.

“Pfft, what do you mean hard work? You’re the one that seriously suffered.”

And shortly after.

Jinsung, who sent off Harin, stood up from his spot.

There was a lot of work that had to be done, but firstly, he planned on finding the NPC named ‘Ikael’, whom Shallos talked about.

“If Harin didn’t leave, I would have felt a little bad about proceeding through the quest alone, but it worked out well.”

Harin was there with him when he took the quest from Shallos, but because Harin’s level was too low, she couldn’t receive the quest, so it was something he was just saying.

Ian returned to the entrance of the village, and starting from the NPCs he saw first, he spoke to them one by one and began to collect information.

“Over there, handsome mister!”

“Hu-hu, you’re a youngster I haven’t seen before, but you have an sharp eye for people. What’s wrong?”

“By any chance, do you know a person named ‘Ikael’?”

“Ikael? Ikael, huh... I’m not sure. It does seem like a name that I’ve heard somewhere, but I don’t really know.”

Ian was a ranking aristocrat with a baron title, but it seemed because they were NPCs of a village that didn’t have an affiliated nation, they weren’t able to see that Ian was an aristocrat.

Because of that, it was instead easier to gather information without constraint.

‘Hmm... He is in this village, though, right?’

He went around for some time now, but as the information he wanted didn’t appear, Ian slowly began to get irritated.

‘Ah, seriously, he should have told me the exact location. I had no idea that the village was this big!’

Had he wandered around for about 40 minutes like that?

Ian eventually obtained information about Ikael from an elder that was in the corner of the village.

“Ikael? If it’s that person, then he lives in a small cabin in the west of the village.”

Ian's expression immediately brightened.

“There seemed to be several cabins in the west of the village, so by any chance, could you tell me which house it is?”

“That's nothing difficult. The cabin that Ikael lives in is the northernmost house.”

“Ah, thank you!”

Following the information he received from the elder, Ian headed towards the west of the village.

‘It looks like it's that house.’

Ian, who found the cabin without difficulty, carefully opened the house and entered.

Creak-.

“Anyone here?”

As he opened the door and entered, the backside of a grey-haired elder caught Ian's eyes.

He sat at his desk and was diligently doing something.

‘What’s this? Did he not hear me?’

Ian called the elder once again.

“Excuse me, by any chance, are you Ikael?”

He seemed to have only then heard Ian’s voice, as the elder slowly turned around.

“Keu-heum, it looks like a visitor has come in.”

And Ian, who met eyes with the elder, couldn’t help but be taken aback for a moment.

‘What the hell? He looks exactly the same as Gripper!’

\*

“So... In other words, it could be considered a Dungeon Attack King Event?”

At Fiolan’s words, Herz nodded his head.

“That’s right. You know the attack bulletin board in the official community, right?”

“Yes. Of course, I know.”



“In the low-rank group of the attack bulletin board, they said that they were going to make a new bulletin board that was event-exclusive. On there, once they put up the attack posting, they’re going to evaluate after a week and based on the order that was most recommended, they’re going to give prizes.”

“What is the prize?”

“You’re probably going to be surprised once I tell you.”

“...?”

Herz took a breath before he opened his mouth.

“You know the newly released capsule model from LB Sports, right?”

“That of course I know of. Lately, whenever I turn on the TV, its ad always comes up.”

After responding, Fiolan’s two eyes rounded.

“Ah... So, by any chance, is the prize...?”

Herz laughed as he nodded his head.

“That by any chance is right. This event’s prize is exactly that new capsule model. They’re going to select up to 10th place and give it apparently.”

According to the comments of the early adapters, the new capsule model truly allowed for a new-worldly experience.

Despite the price being close to 30 million Won, there was no word that it was a waste, and at the word that the capsule of all Kailan users’ dreams was going to be handed out as a prize, both of Fiolan’s eyes shone.

“Keu... I really wanted that.”

“I did as well.”

“But you said that this is an event that you need to participate with your Guild name, not individually. There’s no way that they’re going to give all the members of the guild a capsule...”

Herz nodded his head as he added his explanation.

“That’s right. Of course, there’s no way that they would do that. For the 1st place guild, they’ll get 3 new capsule models, and for all guild members, they’ll be giving out ‘Mystery Item Boxes’. And for the guilds that have ranked, they will automatically get publicized.”

“Wow, 3? And by the Mystery Boxes, do you mean the ones from

the last event, where some user pulled out a Legendary item?”

“That’s right. It’s exactly that!”

However, Fiolan, who was elated, immediately wore a tearful expression.

This was because, if such a generous prize was on the line, she felt that everybody would run in and participate in the event.

“But I’m not sure if I’ll be able to write an attack or something of the sort well. Are you confident, Herz?”

As expected, Herz shook his head.

“I’m also quite distant with that kind of meticulousness and scrupulousness...”

“Then what should we do?”

At Fiolan’s question, Herz grinned as he opened his mouth.

“We have the Lord.”

And once she remembered Ian, Fiolan’s expression immediately brightened.

“Ah, definitely, if it is Ian...!”

“You saw last time, right?”

“What?”

“The notebook where he had written and organized all of the internal building’s cooldown times, saying that he’s taking care of internal affairs.”

“Ah... That!”

The two people remembered seeing Ian’s notebooks full of his notes not coincidentally and being shocked.

Starting from the time that it took for soldiers that went into training to turn out to the time it took to complete construction for each building, Ian’s note was jam-packed with writing.

It was a note that was filled with a level of obsession that could only be thought of a job that no human should be doing.

Herz’s words continued.

“What do you think, Fiolan? We also have a chance of winning, no?”

Fiolan energetically nodded her head.

“Of course!”

And with a highly enthusiastic voice, she added on.

“This time, when Ian returns, we decided to challenge for a S-clear rank in Forlan Dungeon. I think we should be able to experiment then and write it.”

“Good. Nice.”

Herz and Fiolan firmly shook hands.

“One of the three capsules will definitely be Ian’s, while the remaining two can be returned to the Guild Master and the Sub-Guild Master, right?”

At Herz’s quiet question, Fiolan nodded her head as she agreed.

“Definitely.”

“Huhu, now we just need to convince Ian well.”

As if she had already accepted 1st place as a fact, Fiolan wore a happy expression.

“Keu! The new capsule model, even just thinking about it makes my heart flutter.”

And Herz added on.

“But that, will it really show icons and stuff inside?”

## Chapter 112: Ollibus Seashore Village (2)

---

“So, you’re telling me... that you are the older twin brother of Gripper?”

“That’s right, hul-hul. Why would I lie to you?”

However, Ian couldn’t believe it.

‘No, Gripper looks like he’s around his 50s at most, but this grandpa is basically a mountain wizard. How is this possible?’

To call them twins, the age difference in the two people’s physical appearances looked too severe.

If Gripper had the image of a good-looking middle-aged man, Ikael’s appearance, with grey hair and a white beard that reached his waist, had a similar feeling to a mountain god that would definitely appear in a fairy tale.

Ian wore a bitter expression.

“Compared to Gripper... you are much more elderly.”

At Ian’s words, Ikael roared with laughter as he responded.

“Is that guy not the Dimensional Enchanter? Since he can completely control time as he wishes, he was less affected by

time.”

“Ah...”

Finally, Ian understood.

‘No wonder... There was some sort of reason.’

Ian and Ikael began to talk about this and that.

And in that process, Ian’s friendship with Gripper was an incredibly big help to him.

‘Thanks to Gripper, it’s incredibly easy to raise my Affinity with Ikael. It’s an unexpected profit.’

The two people’s conversation continued.

“Because I also have the strength to change fate, I am able to live a much longer life compared to others. However, I wasn’t able to prevent myself from aging.”

“I see. But is it not an amazing ability that many people truly desire? The power to change fate, I mean.”

At Ian’s flattery, Ikael grinned.



“That may be so. However, since I have received a heavy mission suitable for such power, it’s not only a good thing.”

Ikael wore a bitter smile as he opened his mouth again.

“Speaking of which, what was the reason you came looking for me?”

At his question, Ian quickly explained the situation where he met Bloody Fenrir Shallos, and the favour he received from him.

As the short explanation ended, Ikael nodded his head and organized everything.

“So, Shallos has been freed.”

“That’s right.”

“And he told you that I would know about Orvil’s whereabouts?”

“Yes.”

“Hmm...”

As if he was thinking about something, he was momentarily silent, but soon opened his mouth again.

“Firstly, I should thank you.”

“Sorry?”

“I meant for freeing Shallos. He was a saviour of this village, and has been an appreciative friend of mine for a long time.”

As Ikael slightly bowed his head, Ian also equally dipped his head on impulse.

“And as for Orvil’s liberation... Definitely, if it is you, who has won against Shallos that has been blinded by madness, then it’s possible that you could put Orvil to rest as well.”

And Ikael began to release the story related to Shallos and Orvil.

As words related to the quest began to come out, Ian concentrated even more as he listened to his words.

“Truthfully, Shallos and Orvil are heroes that have saved this village from Sorcerers of Darkness a long time ago.”

The story was quite long.

About 100 years ago from now.

There was a time when a questionable ghost ship had docked at

Ollibus Village.

On the ghost ship, over a dozen Necromancers and Sorcerers of Darkness were boarded, and they began to destroy the village.

Ikael, who had failed to protect the village with just his own strength, requested the help of the two Guardians of Forlas Plateau, Shallos and Orvil, and the two, who maintained a friendly relationship with Ollibus Village, willingly helped Ikael and protected the village.

However, before the head of the Sorcerers of Darkness died, in pledge of their life, they placed a curse to restrict the spirits of the two Fenrir, and the two were blinded by madness.

As Shallos and Orvil's consciousness weren't controlled, they shut themselves up deep inside of Forlas Plateau themselves.

This was because if they didn't do that, they wouldn't be able to control their murderous intent.

And time had passed by like that up until now.

"Orvil is stronger than Shallos. If you are not confident in beating him, I cannot tell you where he is."

Ian let out a low groan.

“Hmm...”

The reason was because Shallos was also outrageously strong, but since Orvil was supposed to be stronger than him, he was worried.

‘Alright. Well, since I wasn’t expecting an S-rank quest to be easy to clear.’

Ikael wore an incredibly worried expression as he continued talking.

“In the case that Orvil’s seal was released, and you are unable to defeat him and he is released into the world while engulfed with madness, then starting from Ollibus Village, it will most likely become devastated.”

“I see.”

“I definitely know the place where he is confined, but because of those reasons, I cannot readily tell you his location.”

This was because, to Ikael, the liberation of his appreciative friend Orvil was important, but the safety of the people of the village was even more important.

Ian asked.

“If that’s the case, then what must I do in order for you to be able

to believe me? No, will I definitely be able to suppress Orvil?”

“Hmm...”

Ikael closed his eyes and was submerged in his thoughts for a moment.

“Firstly, since I know that you are strong enough to win against Shallos, if there was just something that could make you a little stronger, I’ll be able to relax...”

And suddenly, he seemed to have thought of something, as he abruptly stood up from his spot.

“Ah, you said you were a Summoner, right?”

“Yes, so?”

“Just recently, an elder skilled in Summoning from the eastern continent crossed the sea with a trading ship and came here.”

“Oh...?”

Once hearing those words, Ian’s head started to rotate quickly.

‘The eastern continent? A trading ship? By any chance, is it related to the new update that they are apparently doing next

month?’

Anticipation filled Ian’s expression.

This was because he felt that he could gain some sort of special skill or opportunity for Summoners that hasn’t been released yet.

“If you go find that person and learn a little bit of that mysterious ability, then I think I’ll be able to believe in you and tell you the place where Orvil is sealed.”

Ikael stroked his long beard once and stared at Ian.

“What do you think? That person is most likely entrusting himself at the chief’s place. Will you try to go and see him?”

Of course, without an inch of hesitation, Ian nodded his head.

On top of intending to do the quest no matter what anyways, there was a chance that he would be able to obtain a new Summoner skill, so it was an obvious choice.

“Yes. I will try and go see him.”

At his response, Ikael also wore a satisfied expression.

“Good, good. Thank you. That person’s name is ‘Damcheon’. Go

to him and tell him that I've sent you, and if you tell him the whole story, he will probably help you."

\*

Because the house of Ollibus Village's chief was located right in the heart of the village, he was able to find it without much difficulty.

And inside of the chief's house, there were quite a lot of NPCs, but Ian was able to immediately figure out at a glance who the Damcheon that Ikael was talking about was.

'He did say he crossed over here from the eastern continent, and he's wearing something like a modernized hanbok.'

It seemed that the eastern continent in the world of Kailan made the actual East their motif.

On top of that, it seemed as LB Sports, the developers of Kailan, was a Korean company, he was an NPC that dressed strongly exuding a Korean vibe.

For some reason, Ian felt some sort of kinship(?) and approached him.

"Are you... Damcheon?"

Sitting by the window and fanning himself while he stared outside the window, he slowly turned his head at Ian's calling.

“That's right. Who are you?”

Ian slightly bowed his head and continued speaking.

“Ah, I am a Summoner named ‘Ian’.”

At the word Summoner, it seemed that perked Damcheon's interest, as he changed into a more assertive posture.

“I see, so you are a Summoner. But what business do you have to see me for?”

Ian began to explain the whole story to him.

‘Euh, since I have to say the same words multiple times, it's a little bothersome.’

However, because it was a quest where he could possibly gain a clue related to Ly's evolution, and he could also gain an ability that hasn't been revealed to Summoners, so he told the story with sincerity.

And fortunately, Damcheon listened to Ian's story with incredible interest.



“They are truly pitiful souls. To have received that much pain for over 100 years, I mean.”

“That’s why I need your help, Damcheon.”

Ian, who spoke, focused even more on his words now as he thought that a story related to the quest would come out.

However, different from his expectations, as soon as he heard his next words, he couldn’t help but become a little dejected.

“Hm, if that’s the case, could you tell me about the abilities of this continent’s Summoners? I need to know the abilities you have in order to figure out what part I can be of help to you.”

‘Ah, what the hell, I have to explain again?’

Ian was a little annoyed, but because it was a quest worth the labour, he nodded his head without unnecessary remark.

On top of that, there was some truth to his words.

“Of, of course. That much, well...”

Ian began to briefly explain the abilities that he had.

However, different from what he first thought, quite a lot of time

had passed by from talking about this and that.

‘Aho, how tiring. It would have been better if he made me fight instead.’

Still, fortunately, Damcheon was incredibly satisfied with Ian’s explanation.

Damcheon, who heard all of his explanation, slowly opened his mouth.

“I can definitely be of help to you.”

As he heard the positive response, Ian’s expression immediately brightened.

“Oh, is that so?”

Damcheon nodded his head.

“That’s right.”

And he added on.

“Truthfully, amongst the fighting abilities I have, there’s nothing that would be of big help to you.”

Ian, who had heard up to this point, felt the spirit of disappointment fall.

However, after hearing the next words of his, he was able to grab a string of hope.

“However, I have an ability that will truly be of big help to you in a different part.”

“...?”

Ian was going to ask about that ability, but suddenly, a large system window popped up.

Ring-.

\*Pass down the ability of Summoner ‘Damcheon’-

\*Production Class (Hidden) Class-changing Quest.

Damcheon, a Summoner that came from the eastern continent, has a special ability.

The special ability that he has is exactly the ability to produce ‘Talismans’ and ‘Incantation Patterns’.

If you are to learn the ability from him, you will be able to produce Talismans and Incantation Patterns.

Also, Talismans and Incantation Patterns will sharply increase the abilities of your Familiars.

Once you receive acknowledgement on your qualification,

then you will class-change to ‘Diviner (Psychic)’.

Quest Difficulty Level – Unknown

Reward – Class-change to Diviner (Psychic)

Will you accept this quest?

“Huk...!”

Ian let out an exclamation with his voice before he could even realize it.

This was because he was that surprised.

He had obtained a class-changing quest for his production class in a truly unexpected location at such an unexpected time. And even to a hidden class.

Ian grinned broadly.

“If you will just teach me, I will learn diligently.”

And a message popped up.

You have accepted the Production Class Class-changing Quest.

Damcheon nodded his head as he opened his mouth.

“Alright. Of course, it’s not going to be an easy path, but if it’s a Summoner as outstanding as yourself, I think you will definitely be able to learn.”

## Chapter 113: Ollibus Seashore Village (3)

---

“No, what kind of super-grinding like this exists?”

The good mood that Ian had when he started the production class class-changing quest vanished completely.

Only Ian, who was diligently hunting with sunken eyes, remained before he even realized!

No, rather than hunting, it was a situation where never-ending capturing fit the description better.

‘Still, it’s a relief that I don’t have a capturing limit thanks to my head ornament. If it was a normal Summoner, wouldn’t they have had to go back and forth from the village whenever their Leadership was full?’

The first content of the class-changing quest was a task to gather 100 white spirit marbles.

These white spirit marbles could be gained by capturing Common-rank monsters and taking them to Damcheon for him to make them into spirit marbles, but no matter how bromidic of a Common-rank monster it was, Ian’s back was breaking trying to catch 100 of them.

On top of that, as he said that the higher the level of the captured monster was the better, characteristically of Ian, he didn’t want to

capture low-level monsters.

That's why the monsters that Ian was in the middle of capturing were the northern monsters in their early-lv 120s that inhabited the area around Ollibus Village!

Since he was capturing high-level monsters that weren't even easy to just simply hunt, this indeed couldn't be anything other than incredible grinding.

“Capture!”

You have succeeded in capturing the ‘Ice Troll’.

While looking at the Ice Troll that was sucked into his hand, Ian wiped the beads of sweat on his forehead.

“Whew... Is everything approximately done now...?”

Ian opened the list of Familiars and counted the captured monsters one by one.

After doing so, he shook his head as he let out a deep sigh.

This was because this task was so difficult that even Ian, who was confident in grinding, didn't want to do this ever again.

‘It’s not like you could just catch any monster for this, but I bought his words and now I’m suffering, right...?’

Ian set back the unknown nervousness that swept over him and turned back.

“Alright, shall we go back now?”

Ian used a return stone and returned Ollibus Village.

Still, having finished grinding, he felt satisfied.

‘That’s right, it’s because of this rewarding feeling that grinding is fun.’

After Ian comforted his weary mind and body through self-justification, he went looking for Damcheon.

And after discovering Ian, who had returned, Damcheon asked with a quizzical expression.

“No, why did it take you so long?”

At the unexpected reaction, Ian wore a flustered expression.

“Sorry?”



‘No, how is he expecting me to do it faster than this? If it took me two days to catch 100, then that’s fast!’

However, that was Ian’s misunderstanding.

Because Damcheon didn’t know that Ian had an artifact that got rid of the capturing restriction, he had thought that he had returned after catching about 5-6 at most.

However, no matter how long he waited, he didn’t return, so he thought that was weird.

“How many have you captured?”

“What do you mean how many, obviously I’ve captured 100.”

“...?”

Ian firstly Summon Released Ly and Bbookbbook, as well as Pin, who were all summoned, and sent them off to Subspace.

And he began to pull out the monsters of the northern area that he just caught in order.

You have summoned Familiar ‘Ice Troll’.

You have summoned Familiar ‘Yeti’.

You cannot summon anymore Familiars as you lack Leadership.

As he pulled out about 20 of them, a message saying that he lacked Leadership popped up, and Damcheon nodded his head as he spoke.

“Your Leadership is incredibly high. To be able to capture 20 monsters that are over lv 120... No wonder it took you this much time.”

Damcheon, who finished speaking, absorbed the spirits of the monsters that Ian pulled out one by one and began to turn them into white spirit marbles.

And whenever Damcheon removed one, Ian continuously summoned one.

“Ho-ho?”

As a new Familiar continued to be summoned from Ian’s hand, Damcheon, who had become wide-eyed, looked as if he was expecting some sort of explanation, but as Ian couldn’t be bothered, he glossed over it roughly.

“I have an artifact, so I have no capturing restriction.”

“I, I see.”

As about 30 minutes passed, all of the monsters that Ian had captured had turned into spirit marbles and were collected in Damcheon’s basket.

As the task was finished, Damcheon wore a pleased expression.

“Excellent. They are incredibly good quality spirits. If this is the case, you will be able to make quite a good talisman.”

Along with Damcheon’s words, a system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

Ring-

You have completed the ‘Gather White Spirit Marbles’ quest.  
You have obtained the ‘Spirit Seal’ skill.

\*Spirit Seal  
Classification – Active Skill  
Skill Level – Lv. 0  
Proficiency – 0%  
Mana Consumption – None

The spirit of a captured Familiar is sealed and turned into a ‘Spirit Marble’.

Depending on the rank of the Familiar that will turn into the material, the colour of the Spirit Marble will be decided, and depending on its abilities, the amount of magic that is inside the marble is decided.

- \* A Familiar that has been turned into a marble cannot be restored.

- \* Spirit Marbles are the basic material for all Diviner’s production skill.

- \* Using the ‘Spirit Reinforcement’ skill, the marble can be reinforced into a higher rank.

Ian, who read through all of the skill information, wore a confused expression.

‘Then, if I seal a Rare-rank or Unique-rank monster, then will a green or blue marble come out? Also, what the hell is the Spirit Reinforcement skill. He’ll probably let me know now, right?’

And sure enough.

As if he had read Ian’s thoughts, Damcheon’s words continued.

“Alright, since you have learned how to Spirit Seal now, I will teach you about Spirit Reinforcement.”

“Yes.”

Damcheon's words continued.

“Watch my hand well. Since I won't be showing you a second time.”

Once he finished speaking, his hand began to move slowly.

A pale, white light shone at his fingertips.

Ian's gaze followed Damcheon's fingertips on either hand and moved accordingly.

‘What is he doing?’

The ray of light that remained after Damcheon's hand moved drew out a complicated pattern and embroidered the air.

And once the pattern was completed, Spirit Marbles were lodged into the five corners of the pattern as if it was going to be sucked in.

‘There's no way that I need to draw this out myself right now and do this, right?’

Ever since he was young, Ian had no ties with dexterity.

During art time in high school, whenever he drew, he produced a bizarre creature whose form was unknown, so there was no way that he would be able to draw out such a complicated pattern like this exactly.

While he was dripping in a cold sweat, Damcheon approached him after completing the Spirit Reinforcement before he realized it.

“What do you think. Will you give it a try? Of course, it won’t be easy, though.”

Ian swallowed dryly before he realized it.

‘No, how exactly is he expecting me to re-enact such a complicated thing? I seriously don’t remember a thing...’

While Ian was so flustered as he had no idea what to do and was hesitating. Suddenly, a white light began to shine from his fingertips.

‘Uh... Uh?’

And just like the situation when he received his noble title in front of the king, wasn’t his body moving on its own?!

His hand was re-enacting the exact pattern that Damcheon had just shown him a moment ago.

Only then Ian was able to let out a sigh of relief for the first time.

‘Whew... What a relief. I was about to give up on the quest halfway through.’

Either way, the hand of Ian, who received the help of the system, completed the pattern splendidly, and Damcheon, who was watching that, clapped with a surprised expression.

“Hu-hu... What a surprise, to have completed this right away! It’s truly surprising!”

And a system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

Ring-

You have completed the ‘Draw Reinforcement Pattern’ quest.

Ian, who saw the message, mumbled inwardly.

‘I didn’t even do anything this time... Well, still, what’s good is good.’

And a message that alerted him that he learned a skill appeared.

You have obtained the 'Spirit Reinforcement' skill.

\*Spirit Reinforcement

Classification – Active Skill

Skill Level – Lv. 0

Proficiency – 0%

Mana Consumption – None

At least two, and a maximum of five Spirit Marbles are combined to reinforce them into a higher-stage Spirit Marble.

The higher the Proficiency, the chance of failing to reinforce is reduced, and the chance for a Spirit Marble with an even higher rank and one with Spirit Magic to appear is increased.

\*If reinforcement is failed, all Spirit Marbles that were used will disappear.

And the successfully reinforced Spirit Marble that was made from Ian's hand just now lied all alone.

Ian stared at it in wonder.

'Oh... It was a white marble, but after reinforcing it, it changed to a blue marble.'



He had succeeded in raising its rank.

Towards Ian, who stared at the marble here and there in wonder, Damcheon opened his mouth with a satisfied voice.

“Good work, Ian. You were a much more outstanding Summoner than what I expected.”

On the other hand, Ian was thinking it was a relief as the class-changing quest finished much easier than what he was expecting.

‘Of course, the capturing-grind was definitely not easy, though...’

“Thank you, Damcheon. Thanks to you, I feel like I’ve obtained a magnificent ability.”

“Because you think that way, I’m even more thankful.”

“Now what do I need to do next?”

At Ian’s form overflowing with will, Damcheon grinned as he replied.

“If it’s like this, you have fulfilled all basics in order to become a Psychic. Congratulations, Ian. You have received the right to become a Psychic.”

And system messages began to unfold in front of Ian's eyes.

You have succeeded in being the first to class-change into the production class 'Diviner (Psychic)'.

A new ability, 'Dexterity', has been created.

A new ability, 'Luck', has been created.

Skill window 'Beginner-level Talisman Production Lv. 1 (Proficiency 0%)' has been created.

Skill window 'Beginner-level Incantation Pattern Production Lv. 1 (Proficiency 0%)' has been created.

You have learned basic active skill 'Produce'.

As you have discovered hidden class 'Psychic', abilities 'Dexterity' and 'Luck' have increased by 30 each.

As he read down the system messages, Ian had his fill of happiness.

'Kya, I don't really know what it is yet... But seeing something being created is putting me in a good mood.'

However, this wasn't the end.

From now on, a Class Guild that allows class-changing into 'Diviner' will be created in Luspel Empire and Kaimon Empire.

All Summoners of Colonar Continent are praising you.

You have obtained 100,000 Fame.

From now on, whenever you hunt a monster, Familiar-exclusive items 'Talismans' and 'Incantation Patterns' will drop.

“Keu...”

Having completely forgotten the fact that Damcheon was in front of him, Ian let out an exclamation.

It was something he felt whenever a first discoverer message and the reward popped up, but as he felt that he was going down in Kailan's history, he felt incredibly good.

Towards Ian, who was checking his newly formed skill window and abilities related to the class with a happy expression, Damcheon opened his mouth.

“In order to become an outstanding Psychic, a lot of trials and errors as well as effort is required. You can make Talismans and Incantation Patterns of even higher ranks the better your abilities are, so be patient and devote yourself.”

To Ian, his lengthy words was heard compressed into one word.

‘So, isn't he telling me to grind diligently?’

Ian nodded his head with an expression overflowing with confidence.

“When it comes to grinding, no, effort and patience, I am confident. Don’t worry.”

# Chapter 114: Beginner Diviner (1)

---

Ian had finally(?) obtained a production class after almost reaching lv 120.

Ian took Ikael's advice and went looking for Damcheon after safely succeeding in class-changing to the hidden class Psychic, but for now, he momentarily postponed returning to Ikael.

‘I think the quest will proceed even I go back now, but...’

In order to face Orvil, a Fenrir that is apparently even stronger than Shallos, more preparations were needed.

Truthfully, since he had just obtained a production class as of now, his fighting power didn't increase.

‘If I was to return to Ikael to quickly proceed onwards and a quest time limit was to appear, that would be a pain...’

Ian decided to return to Ikael after he produced the best Familiar items and equipped them onto all of his Familiars.

‘He said that all Familiars can equip a Talisman and an Incantation Pattern each, right?’

Ian opened the new explanation tab that formed after class-changing and thoroughly read through the information related to

production.

Ian, who had carefully read the explanation for about ten minutes, opened the skill window.

“Alright, shall we try making it now? Starting with the Talisman first...”

Ian, who was about to use the produce skill, was momentarily taken aback.

‘What the hell? [Hanji](#)? Brush? Where am I supposed to find all of this? Is it something they sell at the general merchandise store?’

Traditional Korean paper handmade from mulberry trees

In order to make a Talisman, he needed a material item called ‘Hanji’.

Ian hurriedly went to the general merchandise store in Ollibus Village and checked the sale catalogue.

And fortunately, he was able to buy the items that he needed.

‘How come I didn’t know that there were such things when it’s not like I’ve only been to the general merchandise store once or twice?’

Items such as ‘Hanji’ or ‘Brush’ appeared in the general merchandise store’s sale catalogue after Ian had class-changed to a

Psychic, so the fact that Ian was seeing this for the first time was an obvious.

Anyways, Ian, who had bought all the items that he needed, found a spot in the corner of the village and sat down.

And he used the Produce skill.

“Produce!”

You have used the Produce skill.

Select the item that you will produce.

Current items that are able to be produced:  
Talisman/Incantation Pattern

Ian chose Talisman like his original plan.

“Talisman.”

As he did so, a system message continued.

Will you produce a ‘Talisman’ item?

Items required for production: Hanji/Brush/Ink Stick

Ian seemed to have felt fascination and interest in the production content that he was encountering for the first time, as he was immersed in it in no time.

“I will produce it.”

‘Hmm... If I just stay like this, will it be produced on its own now?’

However, Ian couldn’t help but be flustered in the next moment.

This was because, he thought that if he used the Produce skill, then his hand would move on its own just like before when he used the Spirit Reinforcement skill and would draw a Talisman, but an unexpected message popped up.

Please draw your desired pattern on top of the Hanji (It must be drawn in one go without the brush being removed).

Production is possible no matter what kind of pattern is drawn (The artistic grade and sincerity in the drawn pattern will reflect the stats of the Talisman).

Ian despaired.

‘Ah... Can I not refuse this degree of freedom? What exactly am I supposed to draw?’



Ian, who momentarily thought about it, lifted his brush without much thought and began to draw a picture(?) on top of the Hanji.

And the drawing he completed in 5 seconds was the Sauna mark that he saw on the way to school this morning.

As Ian removed his brush, a system message popped up.

Ring-.

Will the Talisman be completed?

He didn't really like the design of the pattern, but for now, Ian nodded his head.

‘Since it’s practice, anyways...’

“Yeah. I’m done.”

As Ian’s response ended, a system message continued again.

Artistic Grade: -10/Sincerity: 1

Please select three Spirit Marbles that will be used in the Talisman production (The higher the rank of the used Spirit Marbles, the higher the rank of the created Talisman).

‘Hmm... Since all of the Spirit Marbles I have right now are Common-rank, anyways...’

Ian randomly pulled out three marbles from his inventory and lifted them up.

As he did so, the three Spirit Marbles that Ian held in his hand were sucked into the Talisman.

Whoong-.

While looking at the three streams of white light that were being absorbed into the Sauna mark that he drew with his own hands, Ian swallowed dryly.

Ring-!

You have failed in producing a Talisman.

You must draw with more sincerity.

Along with the message that popped up, the Spirit Marbles became powder and scattered in the air.

“What...?”

Ian was enraged at Kailan's system as it didn't recognize his aesthetic sense.

“No, what, you said to draw with sincerity...”

Like that, Ian's painful drawing study began.

\*

“Mallaim! Please take care of that side!”

“Yes, Celia.”

“Cerus and I will support you from the back together.”

A flag with the words ‘Lotus’ written on it.

And below that, Ian's five retainers led about what looked like a dozen soldiers and were making an effort(?) for the public safety of the Domain.

And the retainer that was leading all of them was Celia, the one that Ian had appointed as his retainer first.

If a user with a 'Baron' title appointed a retainer, they needed to nominate at least one and up to a maximum of five retainers as 'Knights', and Ian had nominated Celia, whose stats were the most outstanding, for now.

He could have nominated all five of them as Knights, but to give Common-rank or Rare-rank retainers such a title felt wasteful.

Thanks to that, the hierarchy amongst Ian's retainers was in good control, so the regulation of the police was being well maintained.

Of course, this part wasn't also part of Ian's intentions.

The fortunate part was that the other retainers followed Celia, who was the only woman as well as being on the younger side.

The primary reason was because Celia's stats were overwhelmingly higher in comparison to the other retainers.

And a characteristic of the Summoner-class, it seemed as her Leadership stat was high, she was quite steadfast in purpose.

"Tenpus, what areas now remain that haven't been suppressed in this vicinity?"

Tenpus was a blonde-haired young man that was a Priest-class.

At Celia's question, Tenpus slightly bowed his head as he answered.

"If we just suppress Tullan Canyon now then this zone is complete."

"I see. Has Loreuten returned from patrolling Tullan Canyon earlier?"

Instead of Tenpus, a voice from behind them was heard.

It was Loreuten.

"Yes, I just returned. Celia."

"How is it? Would we be able to fight in that area with our current fighting power as well?"

At her question, Loreuten nodded his head.

"Yes. It's not much different from this side."

"I see. Then let's move over there right away."

However, Loreuten opened his mouth towards her as she was about to turn her footsteps.

“Uh, but Celia. There’s something that I have to report.”

“Yes?”

“I have discovered a dungeon in Tullan Canyon.”

At those words, Celia’s large eyes shone.

“A dungeon?”

“Yes. You told us that if we discovered a dungeon to not go in and report it first instead...”

Truthfully, that command was not Celia’s command.

It was just a command that Ian had given through Celia.

However, Celia showed the same expression of happiness as Ian would.

‘The Lord will probably be incredibly happy!’

This was because she remembered the expression of a very happy Ian after discovering a hidden dungeon while hunting with him last time.

“Then, today we will just secure the location of the dungeon, and

return back. I will give the report to the Lord.”

At Celia’s words, the rest of the retainers simultaneously bowed their heads and responded.

“Your command will be honoured.”

\*

“Whew...”

Ian wiped the sweat that dripped down his forehead and plopped down onto the ground.

Around him, there were a ton of failures that had been created from his hands sprawled around him in disorder.

“Ha... The pain of creating...”

It had been two hours since he had started the Talisman production.

Ian had succeeded in using all hundred of the Spirit Marbles that he made with Damcheon.

“Still, to have succeeded with five sheets, I’m quite pleased.”

He had tried a dozen times and had barely saved five Talisman sheets, but somehow, he was in a good mood.

Ian laid out the Talismans in order.

The logos of famous companies were drawn on two of the Talisman sheets, while on the remaining three sheets, the three letters of Jinsung's name was written in Chinese characters.

That was the limit of Jinsung's creativity.

“Do I at least need to go to an art academy...”

In any case, Ian began to check the stats of the successful Talismans one by one.

\*Synthetic Talisman (Name change possible)

Classification – Talisman (Charm)

Rank – Common

Equip Limit – Can be equipped onto one ‘Familiar’.

Durability – 55/55

Option – Offensive Power +10% (-3%)

Vitality +3% (-1%)

A Talisman produced by beginner Diviner ‘Ian’.

As it was produced with a bizarre pattern, its full capacity cannot be demonstrated.



---

“ ... ”

Ian, who checked the option, licked his lips.

“Tsk, is the minus part behind that because the artistic grade is low?’

Still, it seemed because the Spirit Marbles used in the production held the spirits of quite high-level monsters, the options were more handsome than he expected.

“It will probably still be better than having nothing...”

Ian evenly divided the Talismans that he produced with his own hands to his Familiars.

Of course, there was backlash.

Bbook-!

Kku-ru-ruk-Kkuk-kkuk!

Bbookbbook and Pin didn’t like the designs and momentarily rebelled.

However, there was no way that would get through to Ian.

Ian, who ignored the resistance of the two easily, let out a sigh and mumbled.

“Euh... I need to make Incantation Patterns, too, but I’ve used up all of the Spirit Marbles!”

Ian had no choice but to make preparations to go hunting.

It was an effect that increased the stats by about 5-10%, but still, if it could be equipped onto all of the Familiars, hopefully it would be a little better.

It was Ian’s plan to equip a Talisman and Incantation Pattern each on all of his Familiars.

“Do I need to go catch Ice Trolls again? Or, since I’m producing anyways, should I look for Rare-rank monsters and try producing?”

However, Ian, who finished his hunting preparations and was leaving Ollibus Village, was taken aback after seeing a message window that he was seeing the first of its type of pop up.

This was because a message with the name ‘<Retainer> Celia’ written in green had caught his eyes.

‘Huh? Retainers could also send messages?’

Ian opened the message window in fascination.

Celia: Lord, apologies for contacting you first so rudely. You weren’t at the Domain Manor.

At the message where her careful tone could be felt, Ian grinned and mumbled.

“No, why is she so courteous?”

And he sent a responding message.

Ian: Ah, I’m currently outside. If I knew that such a good method existed, there was no need for me to have told you to come all the way to the Domain Manor in order to report. From now on, send the regular reports through message, Celia.

Celia: Ah, no, Lord! I will personally give you the regular reports!

Ian: But, what’s going on?

Celia: Ah... During the police assignment today, we discovered a dungeon in Tullan Canyon. I remembered that you said that if we discovered a dungeon to not go in and report it first.

A broad smile formed on Ian's face after he saw that message.

Because, as a matter of fact, he was just getting the feeling that the first discoverer's reward for the dungeon in Forlas Plateau was wasted, so his delight was even bigger.

'I wasn't expecting much...'

And he put his brain to work and quickly made a hunting plan.

'Since it's ended up like this, I should hunt all the Common-rank monsters and just capture the Rare-rank monsters that are inside the dungeon.'

Even if he captured a monster, an EXP amount equivalent to if he was to hunt it came in.

However, because it would take too long if he tried to just capture all of them, he had no intentions of hunting so inefficiently with the first discoverer's buff on his back.

Ian quickly sent a response message.

Ian: Oh, really? Great work, Celia!

Celia: No. There's nothing I've really done, anyways. Loreuten was the one that found the dungeon.

Ian: Really? Anyways! I'll head over there right now.

Celia: Right now?

Ian: Yeah, Immediately, right now! Could you give me the coordinates?

Celia: Yes, here is... Tullan Canyon, East 156, South 879!

Ian, who received the coordinates of the dungeon from Celia, pulled out his return stone without hesitation.

‘Since I’m hunting anyways, it’s better to get twice the dungeon EXP, right?’

Lv 120 was just around the corner.

Because the EXP required to get to lv 120 from lv 119 was enormous compared to before, it took quite a bit of time, but if he received the dungeon first discoverer’s buff and hunted for about two days, he felt it would be possible to level up.

‘I’ll hit lv 120, and complete all of the Talismans and Incantation Patterns as Rare-ranks.’

“Return!”

Whoong-.

As Ian used the return stone, a blue light wrapped around Ian's body, and shortly after, Ian's body was sucked into the air.

## Chapter 115: Beginner Diviner (2)

---

“What? Dungeon Attack King?”

“Yeah. That’s what I’m telling you! From what I see, this is an event perfectly made for you. This is Park Jinsung’s type.”

At Yoohyun’s words, Harin, who was next to him, also nodded her head in agreement.

“That’s right. I’m thinking exactly the same as Yoohyun! Jinsung, you’re the possessor of Forlan dungeon’s best record. Since Forlan dungeon is one of the most popular dungeons, I think if you wrote the attack, then we’ll be first place no doubt.”

Truthfully, there was no need for the two people to persuade him so diligently.

Since Jinsung’s two eyes were already fixed on the homepage where the event content was explained.

While looking at Jinsung, who read down the notification with enough spirit to be sucked into the monitor, Yoohyun grinned.

“What do you think? It’s definitely tempting, right?”

Jinsung nodded his head as he asked back.

“But, the deadline for this... Is there about ten days left now? Right?”

At Jinsung’s words, Yoohyun replied.

“Yeah, that’s right.”

“Hmm...”

While looking at Jinsung, who was suddenly submerged in his thoughts, Yoohyun carefully asked.

“Jinsung, by any chance, do you have some sort of important quest that you were doing?”

Jinsung nodded his head.

As it was a quest where he could possibly gain a clue related to Ly’s evolution, it couldn’t help but be important.

On the other hand, as Jinsung nodded his head, Yoohyun wore an even more nervous expression.

“Is it a quest that will take long? If we plan on making a proper attack, we need to consider at least 3 days...”

Whether Yoohyun was nervous or not, Jinsung was internally



calculating the amount of time that it would take to do the quest.

‘If I just need to catch Orvil, then it shouldn’t take that long. However, if there’s even some sort of connected quest as well, that’s a pain...’

However, he couldn’t just give the new capsule model up.

Rather than the various convenient functions of the new capsule model, the thing that Ian wanted most was the additional 2% synchronization.

Since that would raise the efficiency of Ian’s hunting even more.

Ian decided to participate in the Attack King event even if he needed to halt the quest momentarily halfway through.

“Alright, since I also wanted the new capsule model, I need to do this no matter what.”

At the positive response, Yoohyun’s face glowed.

“Fiolan said let’s try for a S-class clear while we’re participating in the Attack event anyways once you returned after finishing your quest. What do you think, is it possible?”

“Hmm... For sure, if we were to attach a video of a S-class clear in Forlan dungeon, I think our chance of winning will increase

significantly.”

Ian and Fiolan’s best record was about 26~7 minutes.

The S-rank cut of Forlan dungeon was 25 minutes.

It was just a minor difference of not even 2 minutes, but right now, where they had already reached the limit of their clear speed, trying to cut down 2 more minutes was definitely not an easy task.

‘I should catch Orvil as fast as possible and obtain a clue related to Ly’s evolution. If I could evolve Ly, the 25-minute cut will not be impossible.’

He was originally greatly motivated, but as a slight motivation was created even more, Jinsung’s will burned brightly.

\*

“Celia, have you raised the level of the Blue Wyvern quite a bit?”

“Hmm... It’s at lv 90 now. I raised it quite quickly, right? Hehe.”

“You’re right. You’re equipping all of the items I gave you last time well, right?”

“Of course! I also recently obtained a Heroic-rank ring that raises

my Leadership a ton.”

Celia proudly showed the ring she obtained.

‘Huh? What’s this? It’s incredibly good!’

Ian needed to make an effort in order to maintain his expression.

“Ye, yeah it’s really good. For your Leadership to go up 15%...”

Of course, the wedding ring that Ian wore was a better item, but because you could equip a ring on each hand, he also wanted Celia’s ring.

‘Must resist...’

He couldn’t just become a Lord and take the items of his retainers.

Innocent Celia, who didn’t even catch onto Ian’s internal thoughts, smiled brightly and continued to talk.

“Right, right! As expected, I told you that it was a good item!”

And as Ian’s ring caught her eyes, Celia’s round eyes opened wide as she asked.

“Oh, but what’s the ring that you’re using, Lord? It’s incredibly beautiful! What’s the name of the item?”

Ian awkwardly smiled as he answered.

“Ah, this, uh what was it, was it the Forest’s Wedding Ring...”

At the words wedding ring, Celia’s two eyes became bleary.

“Wedding ring? Lord, from what I knew, you hadn’t married yet.”

Celia stared at Ian with tearful eyes!

Ian didn’t know what the reason was, but a stream of cold sweat dripped down his back.

“Oh... That... Could you say that it’s just a good item, so I’m wearing it?”

Before entering the dungeon.

While looking at Celia who stuck to Ian’s side while she continuously chatted, the other retainers wore a dazed expression.

“Did Celia always have that kind of side to her?”

“I don’t know, this is also my first time since after the territory war where the Lord is also hunting with us...”

There was a momentary tussle before the real hunting began, but as they entered the dungeon, Ian’s gaze was the first to change.

And the hunting in the dungeon proceeded incredibly rapidly.

This was because it wasn’t that high-level of a dungeon.

It seemed it was because the area where the dungeon was discovered was a place that wasn’t too deep into the northern continent and was in the vicinity of the Lotus Domain.

The monsters that appeared were Snow Gargoyles that were in the lv 110 range, which Ian wouldn’t have had any trouble hunting them even alone.

On top of that, since he had his retainers, in other words, it couldn’t help but be a piece of cake.

“Celia! You can’t kill anything that’s a Rare-rank or above!”

“Alright!”

Amongst the tons of Snow Gargoyles, a gargoyle with bluish-white skin occasionally appeared.

That was a monster with the name ‘Frozen Gargoyle’ and because the Frozen Gargoyle was a Rare-rank monster, it was a good ingredient in order for Ian to make higher-rank Spirit Marbles.

“Mallaim.”

“Yes, Lord!”

“Just stand in the front and find the locations where the Frozen Gargoyles are beforehand while we move.”

“Understood!”

As the hunting proceeded onwards, Ian’s party began to go around the dungeon even more systematically and quickly.

Like that, the hunting in the dungeon continued for over two days.

\*

“Whew... Let’s see here. How many Spirit Marbles have I gathered?”

As Ian opened his inventory, the remnants of his grinding for two days filled the space.

“Hmm, 58 white Spirit Marbles, 16 blue Spirit Marbles. There’s 3 green Spirit Marbles.”

If it wasn’t for Ian’s horrible one-brushstroke drawing skill, it was an amount of Spirit Marbles where he could definitely make the items of the remaining Familiars!

However, different from several days ago, Ian was full of confidence.

Ian had something he was counting on.

‘Hu-hu, as expected, people need to use their heads.’

Ian snickered as he remembered yesterday’s incidents.

Ian: By any chance, is there anyone in the guild that has majored in Design?

Fiolan: Huh? Why a Design major?

Herz: What is it. Why are you looking for a Design major now?

Ian: Ah, it’s nothing else, but our guild has gotten quite high in the rankings as well now and I thought that we should have a guild mark. If there’s a guild member that’s majored in Design, I was planning on requesting a guild mark.

Carwin: Ooh, Ian hyung! That's a really good idea. As a matter of fact, it also bothered me to wear the guild mark that Kailan offered by default.

Fiolan: No kidding. Come to think of it, our guild mark was still the diamond-shaped mark that they provided by default.

Mishyal: Uh, Ian. I do happen to be a Design major...

Ian: Ooh! Mishyal, really?

Herz: Ooh! You were a Design major, Mishyal?

Carwin: Mishyal, talent donation go-go!

Ian: Since a donation is still a bit iffy no matter if you're a guild member, if you make a cool design, I will give you a Heroic-rank Magician-exclusive robe that I obtained recently.

Mishyal: Oh! Really?

Ian: Of course. So, would it be alright for me to request a cool design?

Mishyal: Just leave it to me!

Like that, Ian decided to use the guild mark that he obtained



from Mishyal on his Talismans and Incantation Patterns from now on.

‘It pricks my conscience... But, since I did give him quite a good robe as a gift.’

Ian, who finished his self-justification like that, opened the guild window and displayed the guild mark in the top where he could see.

‘Keu, as expected, a Design major is different.’

The golden eagle pattern drawn with Ian’s Familiar, Pin, as the motif was a cool shape that all of the guild members really liked.

Luspel Empire’s emblem was also a Griffin, but because the pattern of Luspel was a pattern where the whole body of a Griffin was drawn, while the pattern of the Lotus guild was a design drawn with a raised Pin’s head magnified and changed to a more simplified version, so they didn’t look similar.

Above all, Ian liked the simplicity of the pattern.

‘If it was complicated, then I wouldn’t have been able to copy it...’

With a determined expression, Ian pulled out a piece of Hanji and firstly began to practice looking and copying the pattern.

“Whew...”

After practicing for about thirty minutes like that, Ian, who was able to draw it quite decently, wore a satisfied expression as he plopped down on the spot.

“Ah... The path of a production class is long and difficult.”

Ian suddenly felt the greatness of Harin, who raised her cooking Proficiency to High-class lv 5.

“Still, if it’s this much, failures won’t pop up now, right?”

It was a little sloppy, but it was a magnificent quality that was incomparable to the Talismans that Ian drew a couple days ago.

At this point, Ian compromised and began to produce the items.

Success! / You have produced a Synthetic Talisman (Name change possible)! – Rank: Common

Great success! / You have produced a Synthetic Talisman (Name change possible)! – Rank: Rare

Success! / You have succeeded in producing a Synthetic Incantation Pattern (Name change possible)! – Rank: Common

And the conclusion was better than the standard that Ian expected.

“Euh-ha-hat! To have not failed even one...!”

As his Artistic Grade lacked a little, there were a couple of Talismans where the stats dropped a little, but at least there was no situation where he failed and wasted Spirit Marbles.

On top of that, as a ‘Great Success’ message even popped up for a couple of them, Ian was in an incredibly good mood.

‘Shall we take a look at the items that had great success?’

Ian displayed the information of the item.

\*Synthetic Talisman (Name change possible)

Classification – Talisman (Charm)

Rank – Rare

Equip Limit – Can be equipped onto one ‘Familiar’.

Durability 55/55

Option – Offensive Power +15% (+5%)

Agility +12% (+3%)

Vitality Regeneration +2% (+0.5%)

\*3% of the damage dealt for every attack is recovered as Vitality.

A Talisman produced by beginner Diviner ‘Ian’.

It’s a magnificent Talisman where the spirit of a glorious Griffin can be felt.

“Keu...!”

Ian was deeply moved.

But then again, the options were so good to the point it was truly incomparable to the Talismans he made several days ago.

On top of that, it seemed because of the effect of ‘Great success’, it was produced into a ‘Rare’-rank item despite having been made with white Spirit Marbles.

‘Mishyal, thank you!’

At the words ‘magnificent Talisman’ that were written on the information window last, his heartstrings were touched.

‘Hmm... A Common-rank item has two options, but a Rare-rank item has 3 options? Additionally, on the bottom, an Inherent Ability has also formed...’

As he heated the fire of passionate production, Ian, who used all of the Common-rank Spirit Marbles, opened his inventory again.

And with shaking hands, he grabbed the Rare-rank marbles, which he didn't have much of, and raised them up.

‘If I’ve practiced this much, then I could probably use some of the High-class marbles now, right?’

“Hoo!”

Ian, who took one deep breath, focused all of his mind onto the end of the brush and went to draw the pattern.

Because he only had 16 of the blue Spirit Marbles, different from the white Spirit Marbles, which he had more than 50 of, he was soon able to use all of the marbles and finish production.

Of course, he didn't fail any of them, and also succeeded in getting a ‘Great success’ once more.

‘This production is a lot more fun than I thought.’

Different from several days ago, as it began to go well, Ian, who was excited, hummed as he checked the performance of the items he made.

The result was huge satisfaction.

“Is this the last now?”

Ian mumbled as he pulled out the green Spirit Marbles, which he could only find 3 of from the dungeon.

‘Great success, let’s go!’

Lifting the brush, Ian’s fingers shook.

Since the greatly successful item made from blue Spirit Marbles was produced into a ‘Unique’-rank, an item made with green Spirit Marbles could be produced into a ‘Heroic’-rank.

It was an incredible tension similar to when the last number of a lottery ticket is checked!

After swallowing dryly once, Ian began to slowly draw out the pattern on top of the white Hanji.

And shortly after...

Great success! / You have succeeded in producing a Synthetic Incantation Pattern (Name change possible)! – Rank: Heroic

As you have succeeded in producing an outstanding item in comparison to your Proficiency, your Proficiency in ‘Production’ has drastically increased!

As you have succeeded in producing a Heroic-rank Incantation Pattern, your ‘Beginner-level Incantation Pattern Production Lv. 1’ Proficiency has drastically increased!

The level of your Beginner-level Incantation Pattern Production has increased to Lv. 2.

Still holding the brush with his shaking hands, Ian wore a broad smile.

“Euh-ha-hat, a Heroic-rank!”

And shortly after.

A couple lines of system messages additionally popped up.

As you have continuously perfected the same pattern, the ‘Artisan Mind’ has been invoked.

You have obtained ‘Spirit Sensitivity’, a special ‘Psychic’-class skill.

The related pattern has been registered as an ‘Inherent Pattern’. (Pattern Rank: Common)

You have succeeded in perfecting the ‘Inherent Pattern’. Please set a name for the pattern.

# Chapter 116: Beginner Diviner (3)

---

Ian's eyes slightly rounded.

‘Inherent Pattern? What is an Inherent Pattern? Have I already read it, but am not able to remember it?’

Because this was his first time hearing of information related to ‘Inherent Pattern’ now, Ian hurriedly opened the information tab.

And as expected, right next to the information related to ‘Inherent Pattern’, there was a N mark, meaning that it was new.

## \*Inherent Pattern

‘Inherent Pattern’ is a system that is invoked if a Diviner repeatedly perfects one pattern and exceeds a certain result.

Whenever a Diviner that has obtained ‘Inherent Pattern’ makes an item with the relevant pattern, the name of the relevant Inherent Pattern will be written next to the name of the item, and depending on the rank of the Inherent Pattern, an Inherent Ability will additionally form on the item.

The type of additional Inherent Ability will be decided the moment the Inherent Pattern is first made, and the higher the pattern's rank, the value will increase.

---



\*The more users there are that use the item with the Inherent Pattern, the higher the rank of the relevant pattern.

If you become an outstanding Diviner and many people use your pattern, the ability of the pattern will grow stronger.

The explanation wasn't long, but because the content within was quite complex, Ian could only perfectly understand the content after reading it about two times.

‘So basically, they’re saying that the kind of ability that will be granted is decided when an Inherent Pattern is made for the first time.’

In order to check the Inherent Pattern, Ian opened his pattern that had formed in the Diviner-class’s skill window.

Please decide the name of the pattern.

Ian, who thought about it momentarily, opened his mouth shortly after.

“The name is Lotus, I will go with Lotus.”

Is ‘Lotus’ correct for the name of the Inherent Pattern?

“Yeah, that’s right.”

After all, the pattern was designed for the Lotus guild, and because of that, he thought that the most fitting name would also be Lotus.

And the information related to the formed ‘Lotus’ pattern popped up.

\*Lotus

Classification – Inherent Ability

Rank – Common

Fame Experience – 0%

(When 100% is reached, it is promoted to the next rank.)

Inherent Option – All combat stats +100

This is the first Inherent Pattern of beginner Diviner ‘Ian’.

It embodies a strong Griffin.

Ian, who checked the information of the pattern, checked the items he just made again.

And he was able to see that the Inherent Option, ‘all combat stats +100’, was attached to all of the items.

‘If it’s about +100 on all combat stats, it’s not really an amazing value for me right now...’

Ian thought quickly.

‘Oh, but come to think of it... This is an item that doesn’t have a level restriction.’

If he thought on the basis of the data of the items he made through production up until now, there was no concept of a level restriction on Familiar-exclusive items.

Instead, all stat options increased as a percent value.

This was because a fitting level restriction needed to appear if there was a fixed stat value attached in order for the balance to not collapse.

However, the additional effect of Ian’s current Inherent Pattern, the Lotus Pattern, was added as a fixed value to the stats of a Familiar.

About 100 additional stats could be considered a measly difference to Ian’s Familiars that were around lv 120, but it was different for low-level Familiars.

Especially if it was thought about for Familiars that were about lv 10-20, the lowest level, it was a standard that almost doubled their stats.

Ian felt that it was an item he would really want even if he was a low-level user as well.

‘If I just use this well, I feel like I’ll be able to make a fortune.’

At the thought of gathering the pocket money of beginner users that weren’t at lv 50 yet, Ian became excited.

‘On top of that, if the rank goes up, won’t the stats also go up even more as well?’

At first, this would be greatly popular between users that were below lv 50, and eventually, the users that used Ian’s pattern would naturally exponentially increase.

‘Then the rank will probably shoot up, right?’

As it was a system where the more users there were that used it, the higher the value of the pattern went up and therefore the rank, so rank increase was in fact an obvious sequence.

He didn’t have an idea of how much of a stat increase there would be whenever it went up a rank, but even if the current value of 100 went up to about 500, it would become an incredible option.

If it was a standard where all stats went up about 500 each, it could be considered the best option for even Ian to use right now.

“Keu-heu-heu.”

Ian snickered as he began to make plans to run a business.

‘Firstly, since I have no idea about the price, let’s register just one with the auctioning method.’

Ian immediately headed to the auction house.

And he selected a decent Common-rank Talisman and made a bid on it in the auction house.

‘Hmm... shall we start with about 50 thousand gold?’

50 thousand gold sounded incredibly cheap, but it was not a small amount of money for low-level users.

‘If I register it and go do the Orvil quest before coming back, it will probably have sold then, right?’

He didn’t have an exact idea of how much it would sell for, but he felt he just needed to see the price it was auctioned off at and release a certain quantity in the auction house.

“Since the preparations are all done, do I just need to go do the quest now?”

However, Ian felt some sort of uncertainty.

‘I feel like I’m forgetting about something...’

And shortly after, he was able to remember what it was.

“Ah, I didn’t check the Spirit Sensitivity skill.”

As he was researching on Inherent Patterns and all of his attention was on that, he had forgotten about the Spirit Sensitivity skill he had obtained at the same time.

Ian opened the Spirit Sensitivity skill.

\*Spirit Sensitivity

Classification – Active Skill

Skill Level – Lv. 0

Proficiency – 0%

An Inherent Ability can be granted to one random item amongst all the ones that you have personally produced.

In order to use the ‘Spirit Sensitivity’ skill, five Spirit Marbles that are the same rank or of a higher rank than the item is required, and if failed, there is a chance for the item to be destroyed.

\*The Inherent Ability that can be granted through the Spirit Sensitivity skill is limited to Inherent Abilities that were

granted to items that were successfully produced previously.

\*As the skills' Proficiency and level goes up, the chance for Spirit Sensitivity to succeed will increase, and in case of failure, the chance for the item to be destroyed will also decrease.

\*Spirit Sensitivity can be attempted up to three times on one item.

\*If Spirit Sensitivity was used on a item with an option that was already granted through Spirit Sensitivity, the option that was originally there is erased and a new option is formed.

“Hmm...”

Ian, who read through all of the skill's content, fell into deep contemplation.

‘I do want to try and use this skill to add another option...’

However, because it would be a predicament if the item broke while he tried without purpose, he was a little reluctant.

‘I don't even know what the success rate of Spirit Sensitivity is yet, and in order to use it, I'll need to use the skill multiple times on production items that I don't need, but to do that, I'm a little short on time.’

In the end, Ian pushed off using the Spirit Sensitivity skill for a little later.

“That’s right, firstly, let’s finish the quest.”

He needed to complete the quest as quickly as possible and try for an S-clear rank with Fiolan in Forlan dungeon.

There was not much time left before the Dungeon Attack King event opened up.

‘The new capsule model is waiting for me!’

Ian, who was excited because everything he was doing was working out well, headed to Ikael with light footsteps.

He wanted to see his strengthened Familiars in an actual fight as quickly as possible.

\*

“Hmm...?”

Summoner Canoel, who was peeping around the auction house, discovered an item he had never seen before and had his eyes fixated on it.

“What’s this? Familiar-exclusive item? There was such a thing?”

As Canoel mumbled, Ranma, who stood behind him, approached



him and explained it for him.

“Young Master, they say that Familiar-exclusive items have begun to drop because of some user a couple days ago. A production class called ‘Diviner’ has also newly appeared.”

Canoel asked with an interested expression.

“Diviner? What does that class do, Ranma?”

“Hmm, from what is known so far, it’s a class that can produce Talismans and Incantation Patterns that are Familiar-exclusive items. As there aren’t many people that have succeeded in class-changing yet, not a lot of information has been released.”

“Oh-ho, is that so?”

This time, Ranma asked.

“Well, by any chance, did a Familiar-exclusive item pop up in the auction house?”

Canoel nodded his head.

“Yeah. It’s up here.”

At his words, Ranma wore an expression full of wariness.

‘What is the Young Master trying to buy now...’

Because it was quite difficult to prevent Canoel’s impulse buying, Ranma was nervous.

‘On top of that, it’s not even a well-known item, and it hasn’t been long since it has appeared, so for it to be a Familiar-exclusive item that doesn’t even have much information, either...’

Ranma forcibly put aside his ominous thoughts and approached the auction information window that Canoel was looking at.

As he did so, Canoel, who was diligently reading the information window, turned his head and spoke.

“Do you also want to see, Ranma?”

“Yes, Young Master.”

And Ranma, who checked the very top of the information window, let out a sigh of relief.

‘Whew, at least it’s an item that came up through the bidding method.’

The reason why Ranma was relieved was simple.

This was because there were a lot of cases amongst the items that came up with a fixed price where an extravagant price was set, but with items that came up through the bidding method, it was normally reasonably priced through the competition of the people.

Even if the merchandiser set the minimum price extravagantly high, the bidding method was a reasonable system where the price automatically went down if there were no bids for a certain time.

Ranma slowly began to read down the information.

\*Lotus Synthetic Talisman (Name change possible)

Classification – Talisman (Charm)

Rank – Common

Equip Limit – Can be equipped onto one ‘Familiar’.

Durability – 55/55

Option – Offensive Power +11% (+3%)

Vitality Regeneration +2% (+0.5%)

\*All combat stats +100

(This is the Inherent Ability of the ‘Lotus’ pattern. / Rank: Common)

A Talisman produced by beginner Diviner ‘Ian’.

It’s a magnificent Talisman where the spirit of a glorious Griffin can be felt.

After reading through all of the item information, his two eyes rounded.

‘What the hell, the options on this are incredibly good!’

Ranma wasn’t a Summoner-class, but in order to assist Canoel, the Young Master he served, he normally studied information related to Summoners.

That’s why, even though it was a Familiar-exclusive item he was seeing for the first time, it was possible for him to make a decision up to an extent.

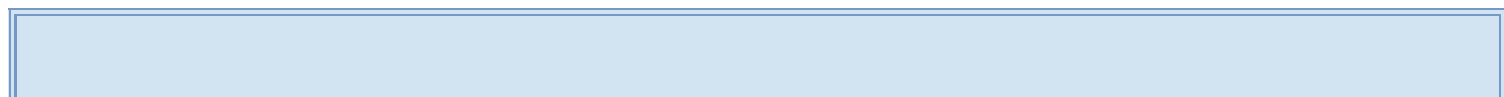
‘Let’s see, the equip limit... If it’s possible to equip on one Familiar, then that means that there’s nothing like a level limit.’

Towards Ranma, who was diligently thinking about the value of the item, Canoel asked with a quiet voice.

“What do you think, Ranma? If it’s something like this, wouldn’t it be an incredibly good item?”

It seemed that Canoel’s heart was already moved.

Firstly, Ranma calmed Canoel down and checked the price of the item.



\*Date and time of registration – 1 hour 17 minutes ago.

Immediate purchase price – (None)

Current bid – 105,000 gold

Time left until end of auction – 3 days

Ranma, who checked the price, fell into deeper contemplation.

If it was instead an extravagant price, he would have been able to cut him off and speak bluntly, but if it was about 100 thousand gold, the item looked cheap compared to its worth even from what he saw.

‘Of course, there’s still a lot of time left, but it probably won’t be bad to try and bid.’

The percent increase value that was attached as the basic option was good, but he felt that the all combat stats +100 that was attached as an Inherent Option would be a big help to Canoel.

‘The Young Master is at about lv 60 now. Normally, the total stat average of Familiars in the lv 60-range are a little less than 2 thousand...’

If all of their combat stats were to go up by 100 each, it meant that there was a total increase of 400, and if calculated like that, they would be able to see about an additional 20% stat increase effect.

Ranma, who made up his mind, turned his attention towards Canoel.

“Young Master, let’s also bid.”

And after hearing the positive response, Canoel’s face glowed.

“Ooh, alright! As expected, Ranma, you have a good eye. From what I see, it seems like a really good item this time!”

While looking at Canoel, who was as happy as a child, Ranma shook his head.

‘Whew... Still, since it’s a decent item this time, it’s a relief.’

After momentarily thinking about it, Ranma decided on the price and bid.

The price that he put up was 125,000 gold, about a 20 thousand gold increase.

# Chapter 117: Ruler Of Darkness (1)

---

Ian, who had returned to Ollibus Village again after many twists and turns, immediately went to Ikael's house.

Ikael warmly greeted Ian, who had returned.

“That's right, I definitely think preparations are complete.”

After checking the pattern that was engraved on Ly's forehead, Ikael wore a satisfied expression.

“Yes. I think I've done everything that I can do.”

At Ian's words, Ikael nodded his head.

“Good work, Ian. I should show you the place where Orvil is now.”

Ikael paused a moment to take a breath, and Ian waited patiently for his next words.

His words continued.

“Orvil is sealed at the top of Moonlight Peak.”

“Moonlight Peak?”

“That’s right. Moonlight Peak is at the southernmost part of Forlas Plateau.”

Ikael, who paused to take a breath, opened his mouth again.

“Have you never seen the peak that rises above the clouds, which is so sharp it’s incomparable to any other peak?”

“Hmm...”

There was a place that Ian roughly assumed was correct.

He already knew the geography of Forlas Plateau well because of Harin’s cooking ingredients.

‘I think it’s that place that Harin and I needed to turn around from last time after trying to go up because there was no path...’

Of course, he could go up if he just rode his Griffin, but at that time, because there was no reason to go up there like that, they had just passed by.

“Then if I go there, will I be able to find Orvil right away?”

Ikael shook his head.



“No, of course not. Wait a moment.”

After speaking, Ikael pulled out a small pebble that let out a dim light from his chest and handed it to Ian.

“If you go up the peak and into the centre of the open space at the very top, there is an altar that will go up to about your waist. If you stick this stone in the middle of that, the barrier that surrounded the whole peak will lift.”

Ian received the white pebble from Ikael and lifted it up.

The interesting thing was that he could barely feel a weight from the pebble.

“But do you have a way to go up there? It won’t be easy to go up by climbing the wall.”

Ian nodded his head.

He had Pin.

“Yes. I have a method, so you don’t have to worry about that.”

“Good, good.”

“Anyways, by any chance, is there anything that I should be

cautious of?”

“Hmm... Things you should be cautious of...”

After thinking about it for a moment, Ikael spoke.

“First of all, you’ll need to go as fast as possible.”

“Huh?”

Ikael pointed to the sky.

As it was the evening, they could see the round moon that hung high in the sky all by itself.

“That’s because two days from now, it will be a full moon. Once it’s a full moon, all of Orvil’s abilities will increase by almost double.”

“I see.”

It was definite that he was an opponent that would be a burden to face just as is, but for his stats to increase double the amount.

‘I need to finish this before then no matter what.’

Ikael’s words continued.

“However, don’t go this instant, but go after the sun rises tomorrow morning.”

“I’m assuming he gets stronger when it’s just night as well.”

At Ian’s assumption, Ikael nodded his head.

“That’s right. It’s not necessarily that his stats become stronger at night, but he has an Inherent Ability that he can only use in darkness. If possible, fight him during the daytime.”

“What is that ability that you’re talking about?”

“It’s an ability called ‘Darkness Encroachment’ that turns his whole body into pitch black fog. If Orvil goes into Darkness Encroachment state, it nullifies 70% of the attacks received.”

“Ah...”

Ian, who heard those words, grumbled to himself.

‘I have no idea how long the duration is, but isn’t this a fraud skill? Can I get this skill somewhere? This Darkness Encroachment or whatever...’

Ian, who heard a couple more matters that he needed to be careful of afterwards, firstly moved towards Forlas Plateau.

He had no intentions to fight him immediately right now, but because he was planning on going right up to the location and log out to try to fight him right away after logging in tomorrow morning.

‘Orvil or whatever, I’m going to catch him quickly.’

\*

“What? A festival?”

“Yeah, a festival.”

“What does that have to do with me?”

While looking at Jinsung, who stared at him blankly with a puzzled expression, Yoohyun wore a dumbfounded expression.

“What do you mean what does that have to do with you, dude, are you not a student at this school?”

Jinsung slightly frowned.

“Is attendance mandatory? The time I spend attending classes is a waste for me right now as well, so do I really have to attend such a thing?”

At Jinsung's complaining, Yoohyun wore a troubled expression.

‘What should I do? I don't know about the other guys, but I need to make Jinsung attend no matter what...’

The festival went on for three days, and although there was a lot of different things going on, there was one event that Jinsung was absolutely needed for.

That exactly was the E-sports competition that was opening on the second day during the track meet.

The E-sports competition was an event where departments were ranked based on their score with a total of ten different types of games, and there was an awards ceremony depending on the highest-ranking departments, with the prize money and benefits being quite big.

‘Even if we don't get the prize, the expectations of the professors is quite big as well...’

As much as it was the first year that the department was formed, the professors were hoping for the existence of the VR department to become widely known in the school through the festival.

Yoohyun began to slowly persuade Jinsung.

“They’re doing a E-sports competition on the second day at that festival, and if we win there, then a portion of scholarships will come out for the next semester...”

Had about ten minutes passed like that.

At Yoohyun’s long and persistent persuasion, Jinsung eventually promised to come to the festival just on the second day.

‘Still, since I’m a little interested in the E-sports competition.’

From hearing the explanation, there was not one game amongst the ten events including Kailan that Jinsung hadn’t played.

With the intentions of playing the games from his past for the first time in a while, Jinsung also accepted Yoohyun’s suggestion.

After actually thinking about it positively, he was looking quite forward to it.

\*

“You could say all of the darkness cleared at this rate, right?”

Ian, who quickly ran home and logged onto Kailan as soon as his morning classes ended, mumbled as he looked up at the sky once.

It was about 11 o'clock in the morning, and the sun was already high up in the sky.

“Alright.”

Amongst his Familiars, Ian summoned just Pin for now.

“Pin, Summon!”

Kku-ruk- Kkuk-kkuk-!

Pin, who was summoned, happily flew up to Ian and sat down.

As he was now bigger in size than even Ian, he couldn't sit on his shoulders or anything like that, but Ian still thought Pin was cute.

“Pin, please take me up to the top there.”

Kku-ruk-!

As Ian got on top of his back, Pin carefully began to flap his wings.

Flap-Flap-.

He wasn't as skilled in riding on Pin's back yet, but still, compared to before, his posture had become more stable.

“Pin, do you want to try flying with a little more speed?”

As if Pin was waiting for Ian’s words, he began to flap his wings faster little by little.

“Umph!”

At the strong wind that suddenly blew in front of him, Ian quickly lowered his posture.

‘Whew, Pin is really fast once he starts gaining speed.’

As the wind that blew from the opposite direction was too strong, he thought that he could just fall like that at the slightest slip up.

‘If I fall from this height, then I will immediately fall to death.’

Ian moved the balance of his body here and there as he tried to adjust riding on Pin’s back.

And shortly after, he was able to step foot on top of the incredibly high mountaintop.

“When you look at it from the bottom, it looks really sharp, but coming up here now, it’s quite spacious. That’s a relief.”



From Ian's perspective, where he needed to manage multiple Familiars, it couldn't help but be unfavourable the narrower the space.

It was even more so at a place where it was immediately a thousand-mile cliff if they broke away from each other.

Ian summoned all of his Familiars.

And from his chest, he pulled out the pebble that he received from Ikael.

‘So, this is the key that will lift the seal, huh?’

Ian strode up to the centre of the empty space.

And just like Ikael said, an altar-like thing that was short in height was there.

And as he approached it and checked the top of it, Ian was able to know the place that the pebble went into right away.

‘It must be here, right?’

As he placed it in a small, round, groove-like place, the pebble rolled and was sucked into a place like a helix-type hole in the middle of the altar.

Keu-Keu-Keung-!

As a mechanical noise rang out from within the altar, Ian became slightly nervous.

However, as nothing else happened, he wore a flustered expression.

“Hmm...?”

However, just then...

A white light began to ooze out from within the altar.

The Sealing of Forlas Darkness is invoked.

Whoong-!

‘What the hell? The seal is not lifted but invoked?’

Something was a little weird, but Ian, who checked the system message, took a couple steps backwards.

“Everybody prepare for battle!”

As he did so, in the next moment, a completely unexpected phenomenon began to arise.

Crack-Cra-cra-crack-!

Beneath Ian's feet, it began to crack.

"What the hell is this?"

And didn't the high-rising mountaintop begin to collapse downwards?

Thud-Thu-thud-!

Ian couldn't help but firstly Summon Release Ddukdae.

Ly, Lake, and Halli could ride the collapsing boulders here and there and not fall, but in Ddukdae's case, not only was his Agility too low to do that, but he was too big in size.

"Ddukdae, Summon Release!"

Ian, who Summon Released Ddukdae, hurriedly got on Pin's back.

And he diligently watched the Familiars, who jumped around frantically on top of the collapsing altar.

It was in order to immediately Summon Release them if they looked like they were going to even accidentally fall.

Ba-ang- Bang-!

As the giant peak collapsed, incredibly loud booms and clouds of dust spread out in every direction.

However, even despite that, Ian couldn't lose his mind.

‘Since the seal has been lifted, the Orvil will definitely appear from somewhere!’

It was a situation where it was truly a relief that he could ride on top of Pin.

Ian eventually couldn't help but be forced to even Summon Release Lake, who was unable to move as nimbly as Halli or Ly and was falling between the boulders.

‘Whew, this is a big problem. To have to fight Orvil without Ddukdae or Lake...’

And had about ten minutes passed like that?

The peak that had completely collapsed to the point that even its shape was unrecognizable had become a giant hill made of piles of

stones.

“Pin, let me down.”

And Ian also came down from Pin’s back and stepped foot on top of the pile of stones.

‘No, but when exactly is Orvil coming out?’

It was at that moment.

Whoong-!

As a bizarre sound rang out, incredibly strong beams of purple light began to be sucked into the middle of the pile of stones.

Kwaah-.

‘...?’

With a dazed expression, Ian watched that scene.

This was because the beams of light that were being sucked in from every direction was presenting a grand sight much like a meteor shower.

The beams of light gathered in the middle of the boulder pile and

formed a giant sphere.

And in the giant sphere of light, a dark shadow began to faintly appear.

‘Is that... Orvil?’

Just when Ian was about to strengthen his eyesight and check the identity of the dark shadow within the light, the rays of light burst out in every direction while letting out a loud boom.

Ba-ang-!

The boulders that flew out in all directions because of the explosion continuously smashed into Ian and his Familiars.

You have received a large impact. Your Vitality has been reduced by 970.

You have received a large impact. Your Vitality has been reduced by 1225.

It wasn't a large amount of damage, but as his Vitality was cut down even before the battle began, Ian frowned.

‘Damn it, what the hell?’

However, that wasn't the end.

Awhooo-!

A giant shadow rose from the spot where the pile of stones burst out from.

As Orvil's howl rang through the air, a shock wave exploded out in all directions.

Pung-!

'Dark Fenrir Orvil' has used Inherent Ability 'Darkness Emission'.

As you have been afflicted by 'Darkness Emission', your Vitality has been reduced by 6718.

Ian shouted before he even realized.

"No, what kind of crazy damage is this?!"

Ly had gone into a critical condition from just one hit.

Because Halli and Pin didn't have as paper-like bodies as Ly, they still had over half of their Vitality left, but they had still definitely received a huge amount of damage.

And lastly, a system message that was just one line long additionally popped up.

The world has been encased in darkness.



# Chapter 118: Ruler Of Darkness (2)

---

“No, what’s this? Why did it suddenly get dark?”

The largest village in the northern continent as well as the domain that the number 1 guild possessed, the DarkRuna Domain.

As the sky suddenly darkened in broad daylight, even before noon, everybody had become flustered.

“Could it be that some sort of large update quest has been invoked?”

“No, if that was the case, then a system message would have at least popped up, right? There’s nothing of the sort. Did some sort of system error occur?”

“Probably not. My friend is currently hunting in the southern continent, but apparently there’s nothing abnormal there.”

The square, where over hundreds of users were gathered, was suddenly in an uproar, and all sorts of assumptions at this weird phenomenon went rampant.

“It’s almost the second large update. Could it be something that’s related to that?”

“Damn, because it just suddenly got dark, I feel uncomfortable.”

However, the uproar was just for a moment.

As time passed and nothing happened, the users soon returned to their daily routines.

\*

“No, if this is the case, then there was no reason for me to have come during the day!”

Ian complained towards Ikael, who uselessly gave him the wrong information(?).

‘Truthfully, this, well... Even if I knew about this beforehand, there would be no method.’

Seu-seu-seu-.

While looking at Orvil, who emitted a dark fog while letting out a strange sound, Ian slowly moved step by step.

‘It would be difficult to win currently in this state.’

He felt that he needed to summon Ddukdae and Lake at least in order to be able to fight that monstrous dude.

Grr-.

Orvil, who had slowly approached Ian, growled as he glared at Ian.

However, after checking Orvil's level, Ian suddenly wore a quizzical expression.

‘Huh? What’s this? He’s only at lv 120?’

His performance was incredibly fancy, but if he was only about lv 120, Ian thought that he could somehow fight him.

However, in the next moment, he couldn’t help but let out a deep sigh.

Dark Fenrir Orvil – Rank: Legendary

“ ... ”

A Legendary-rank monster that had appeared only twice on the field up until now.

As soon as he saw the word ‘Legendary’, it had an effect that made Orvil, who stood in front of him, suddenly look 2 times stronger.

‘No, still, our Pin is also a Legendary-rank!’

Ian collected himself and began to think of ways to face the monster-like dude in front of his eyes.

‘Firstly, I need to last about 20 minutes somehow.’

20 minutes was the time it took until he could summon Lake and Ddukdae again. However, Orvil didn’t give Ian any more time to think.

Kyaaoooh-!

Orvil, who let out a horrible shriek towards the air, charged towards Ian.

Ta-tat-!

Dodging Orvil, who charged towards him with a fog that glowed a strange black, Ian quickly got on Halli’s back.

“Ly, you stay far back until your Vitality has recovered enough!”

Ly was in a dangerous situation, but because it was a situation where even one couldn’t be spared, he couldn’t Summon Release.

Ian, who was on Halli's back, shot out Current Proliferation towards Orvil.

Za-zap- Za-za-zap-!

However, because the projectile's speed of Current Proliferation was slow in comparison, Orvil was able to avoid them easily, and he spread his hand towards Ian.

Kka-kang-!

As Ian's staff and Orvil's long claws afflicted each other, a frictional sound that was uncomfortable to hear was made.

Kka-ka-ka-kak-!

And while Ian and Orvil faced each other, Pin, who stood back, didn't stay still either.

Kyaa-!

The front claws of Pin, who let out a high-pitched shout and charged, strongly hit Orvil's back.

Pung-!

Pin's head was shaped like an eagle, but his body resembled a

large lion.

As Pin's front claws that were like a caldron lid hit, Orvil's body was thrown far.

Familiar 'Pin' has dealt critical damage to 'Orvil'.

'Orvil's Vitality has been reduced by 13,250.

While looking at Orvil, who allowed a blow more easily than he expected, Ian slowly began to find his confidence little by little.

'Alright. If it's this much, it's worth a try.'

Ian picked up his staff again, and shot out Magic Spheres.

If it was Magic Spheres, which was far superior in projectile speed compared to Current Proliferation, he thought that he could hit Orvil.

Whoong-!

The spheres of purple magic that shot out from Ian's staff precisely flooded the movement route of Orvil, who charged towards Ian again.

'Alright!'

However, while looking at the spheres that flew towards him, Orvil roared loudly instead of dodging.

Awhoo-!

And a system message that made Ian fall into despair popped up.

Dark Fenrir 'Orvil' has invoked Inherent Ability 'Darkness Encroachment'.

Orvil's movement speed has increased by 50%.

From now on, all of Orvil's attacks will be applied as critical damage.

From now on, Orvil will neutralize 70% of all damage.

'Darkness Encroachment' will last for 3 minutes.

Ian was so dumbfounded that words didn't even come out.

He had never seen such an outrageous buff like this before.

'No, how do they expect me to face something like this?'

And Ian's Magic Spheres were absorbed by the black fog that wrapped around Orvil as if it was being sucked in.

Through Orvil's 'Darkness Encroachment', 'Magic Spheres' have become neutralized.

The somewhat fortunate thing was that because Halli and Pin's reflexes were so fast, they didn't fall too far behind from Orvil when it came to speed.

And it looked like Ly, who was far off, was outside of Orvil's interest.

It seemed because he was devoured by madness, Orvil only attacked the target right in front of him that he considered an opponent.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

Familiar 'Bbookbbook' has received critical damage.

'Bbookbbook's Vitality has been reduced by 527.

It was a huge Offensive Power that dealt damage with a value that was 3-figures to even Bbookbbook, who boasted an outrageous Defensive Power.

'Even if I just receive one proper blow, it's death!'



Fortunately, he could face him while enduring this much because Orvil charged in haphazardly, if by chance he had to fight him while he was in a state with a proper AI, it may have been game over for Ian.

“Halli, Guardian of the Wind!”

In order to last until the duration of the Darkness Encroachment skill was over no matter what, Ian grasped onto Halli’s back tightly.

Whoong-!

As Halli’s reflexes were maximized, although it was only for a moment, Halli began to overpower Orvil when it came to reflexes.

“Halli, try and buy some distance!”

Grr-!

Because Orvil stuck like glue to them, he wasn’t even able to use Pin’s Crush skill.

This was because even allies that were within the range of the Crush skill also received damage.

He had no idea that he would use this skill of Halli’s to make a getaway, but for now, Ian quickly bought space between Orvil and

him.

And as he gained enough distance, Ian let out a command to Pin.

“Pin, Crush!”

And Pin’s flapping began.

Kwaaah-!

As Crush, the strongest AoE attack of Pin’s, was invoked, a giant wind storm raided Orvil, who ran squarely into it.

Through ‘Darkness Encroachment’, the damage has become neutralized.

‘Orvil’s Vitality has been reduced by 1745.

‘Orvil’s Vitality has been reduced by 2301.

Through ‘Darkness Encroachment’, the damage has become neutralized.

Through ‘Darkness Encroachment’, the damage has become neutralized.

There was a lot of damage that was neutralized because of Darkness Encroachment, but because it was an attack that went through continuously without rest like a DoT, Orvil couldn’t help but receive quite a lot of damage.

And there was an effect that Ian hadn't even thought of, but the fierce wind that raged along with the Crush skill had an effect on the broken piles of stones here and there.

The tons of stones that had broken into sharp pieces had flown towards Orvil and dealt quite a bit of additional damage.

Keu-reu-reu-reu-!

Ian invoked all of the skills that he could use, and nibbled away at Orvil's Vitality.

Fortunately, it seemed like he didn't have any skills like the Bloody Fenrir where he could absorb Vitality or regenerate, as there was no incident where he recovered.

‘A little bit more now...!’

If he lasted a little bit longer, he would be able to summon Lake and Ddukdae again, and Ly would have recovered a decent amount of his Vitality as well.

Ian gritted his teeth.

\*

“Hmm...”

While looking at the strange sky that was dyed black even though the sun was up, Ikael let out a noise.

“I can’t believe it... While a hundred years have passed, has Orvil become a Legendary-rank?”

This phenomenon was an incredibly fascinating and strange phenomenon to most of them, but to Ikael, it wasn’t so.

He knew about this phenomenon.

‘Darkness Emission. It’s probably that.’

There were tribes of Fenrir that succeeded the three powers, the Blood clan, the Dark clan, and the Moon clan.

And amongst the leaders of the three clans, the Fenrir that received the most powerful strength would absorb the strength of the remaining two clans and would be re-awakened in their completed form, and this Darkness Emission was an Inherent Ability that could only be obtained if a trinity is successfully formed.

‘However, ever since the Moon clan fell a hundred years ago, there has never been a time that a completed form was born.

Even if they lacked one of the three different strengths, it was

impossible to reach the completed form, so in a sense, it was obvious why a completed form wasn't born in the meantime.

“Either way, if Orvil has reached his completed form, Ian, he won't be able to face him with his strength...”

Ikael slowly closed his eyes.

If Ian couldn't block Orvil, then he needed to find a way to block Orvil, who would have released his seal and escaped, no matter what.

\*

“Huff, huff...”

Ian's whole body was covered with dirt and wounds.

‘This dude... Is there no way to win against him?’

Orvil's Vitality gauge bar was blinking a bright red.

His Vitality had dropped below half.

However, compared to Orvil, Ian's condition was even more critical.

When it came to Vitality itself, Ian still had over half, but Lake, who he was barely able to summon back, was attacked by Orvil and he couldn't do anything else but Summon Release him, while Ddukdae's Vitality had completely run out and was recalled before he could even Summon Release.

Halli's Vitality was also almost gone now, while Pin, who at least could fly through the air, was on the more vigorous side, but it wasn't a situation that could be thought of so positively.

The most hopeful part was that, surprisingly, Ly, who hadn't received any attacks of Orvil, was maintaining almost full Vitality,

‘Soon now, the cooldown time for Darkness Encroachment might be over...’

Because Orvil wasn't in Darkness Encroachment stat right now, they were able to deal at least this much damage to him.

If the dark fog that neutralized 70% of the damage began to wrap around Orvil's body, then there would seriously be no answer.

‘Let's get to the end right now no matter what!’

Ian climbed up on top of a pile and continuously fired Magic Spheres towards a roaring Orvil.

As he did so, Ly, Halli and even Pin all charged towards Orvil.

‘Even if it’s game over for my Familiars, there’s nothing I can do. I need to catch that guy first!’

If the battle condition was going to go on like this anyways, until they cut all of Orvil’s Vitality down, Ian’s side would be annihilated.

If that was going to be the case, it could be better to gamble.

Keu-ahhh-!

Orvil, who let out a horrible shriek, lunged towards Ian face to face.

Once he saw that, Ian’s eyes slightly shone.

‘That means he’s targeted me, right...?’

This was because it was a better situation if he aimed for Ian himself rather than his other Familiars.

Since he still had Bbookbbook as his reliable shield.

Truthfully, because Orvil, who didn’t have proper decision-making abilities, had no thoughts to avoid Bbookbbook and attack Ian, that was the reason why Ian was able to last this long.

However, shortly after.

Ian's eyes, which was a little relaxed, was tinged with shock.

‘What, what the hell is that?’

This was because two dark masses that looked like large Magic Spheres began to form on Orvil's two front feet.

Because this was an attack pattern that he was seeing for the first time, he was taken aback, but he could also feel the incredible power within the masses even if he wasn't hit by them.

“Euaaah-!”

A shout flowed out of Ian's mouth.

This was because it looked like it would be hard to avoid Orvil's attack now.

No matter how strong that attack was, Bbookbbook's Vitality probably wouldn't be completely exhausted, but if it was an attack with a range like that, even if he blocked with Bbookbbook, it was obvious that Ian would receive an immense amount of damage.

In any case, Orvil was only a short distance away from him before Ian could even use his hands, and the giant sphere of



darkness slammed into Ian's back.

Baaang-!

You have received critical damage.

Your Vitality has been reduced by 17,850.

The immense amount of damage that came through in an instant.

If it wasn't for Bbookbbook, it was an attack where he could have instantly died.

Ian catapulted through the air and tumbled onto the ground.

“Whew...”

Halli and Pin, who saw that, ran towards Ian in order to protect him, but because they were too far away compared to Orvil, they couldn't block him off.

Ian closed his eyes.

‘Ah... My 24 hours...’

As he thought of death, as expected, the first thing that popped up into his mind was being unable to log on for 24 hours.

And the thing that he thought of next was failing the quest.

‘Damn it. We need to evolve Ly, though...’

However, just then.

An unexpected shadow jumped out from behind Ian and blocked off Orvil.

Ian, who saw that, shouted out of surprise.

“You idiot, get out of the way!”

This was because the identity of the shadow was none other than Ly.

If Ly, who had the weakest Vitality amongst his Familiars, was to directly face Orvil’s attack, then it would be impossible for him to survive.

Grr-!

However, Ly wasn’t even fazed by Ian’s command, and Ian Summon Released Ly as he had no other choice.

No, he tried to do that.

This was because, right now, when Ddukdae also received a death penalty, if Ly also received a penalty, the damage would be too big.

“Ly, Summon Release!”

However, didn't a system message that even Ian couldn't understand pop up?!

You cannot Summon Release Familiar 'Ly'.

As he was so taken aback, Ian wore a dazed expression.

And like that, the two wolves tangled up in the air.

# Chapter 119: Ruler Of Darkness (3)

---

Bang-!

Familiar 'Ly' has received critical damage.

'Ly's Vitality has been reduced by 26,794.

Of course, it wasn't like Orvil hadn't received any damage.

Since Ly also bit him that desperately.

However, Orvil definitely hadn't received enough damage to lose himself to death, while Ly collapsed onto the floor just like that and turned into a grey light.

"Hoo, Ly, why did you do that... You couldn't have won anyways."

Ian felt that he was tearing up a little in vain.

In the end, it was just a game, but still, it was because Ly's loyalty was quite touching.

Futility rapidly rushed in.

‘Hmm, but why is a message saying he died not popping up?’

Ly’s remaining Vitality was definitely 0.

His red mane was also turning into a grey light, and he was sure that he had died, but a message didn’t pop up.

However, just when Ian felt something was strange.

Rather than a message alerting of his death, a different system message popped up.

The hidden energy of the ‘Bloody Hole’ has been opened.

Ian wore a puzzled expression.

‘What is this? The Bloody Hole they’re talking about... I think it was the charm that I received from Bloody Fenrir Shallos.’

It was that item that Shallos said was the emblem of the blood-red kin.

At the unexpected situation, Ian wore an expression full of anticipation.

Familiar 'Ly's Vitality has been fully recovered through the strength of the Bloody Hole.

Grr-.

And when he thought he had died, Ly's body began to slowly rise into the air.

Whoong-!

And Ly's body, which was dyed a grey light, slowly began to be filled with a white light.

This was a scene that Ian had seen many times before as well.

'No way...!'

Ian hurriedly checked Ly's condition.

And after seeing the one-line long phrase that popped up in a golden light, he let out a shout of delight.

Evolving.

Ian stared at Orvil, who gazed at Ly from a distance, with nervous eyes.

‘But what will happen if he’s attacked while evolving and dies?’

It was a thoroughly worrisome situation.

However, for some reason, Orvil didn’t move and watched Ly’s evolving form with blank eyes.

Like that, for a moment, the nerve-wracking situation continued, and shortly after, Ly’s risen body shone brightly and the light exploded out in every direction.

Blood-Red Maned Wolf ‘Ly’ has evolved into a Bloody Fenrir.

Awhoo-!

Ly, whose body was completely wrapped in a red light, howled towards the air and glared at Orvil.

Ly’s name was shining in a purple light.

‘To have evolved straight into a Heroic-rank without passing through Unique-Rank...!’

Ian was deeply moved.

Because the situation was like this, he didn't have time to open up the information window and thoroughly rip through everything one by one, but just by looking at the force that could be felt from Ly, he could truly feel its strength.

Grrr-.

After discovering Ly, who was approaching him, Orvil's eyes returned to focus.

And he began to emit an even more ferocious spirit.

Shallos... Shallos, is that you...

As Orvil opened his mouth for the first time, a raspy voice that made a low, scratching noise flowed out.

However, the surprising part was that a voice not of a wolf's cry but of a voice that Ian could understand flowed out of Ly's mouth.

I am not Shallos, brother.



Kyaaoh-!

And at Ly's words, the brightness of Orvil's eyes burst a bright blue.

In that case, die here!

Ta-tat-!

Orvil closed the gap between Ly and him in an instant.

However, Ly, instead of dodging him, also growled and began to face Orvil.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

The two front feet of the wolves made a sound similar to that of an explosion, and Ian's two eyes rounded in disbelief.

'No, even if Ly had evolved, he's just a Heroic-rank, so how is he that strong?'

The dealt damage that was seen in the system messages that popped up as well as his combat abilities far exceeded Pin or Halli.

However, Ian was able to figure out soon enough after seeing the buff icon that popped up in Ly's condition window.

Buff/Altar of the Fenrir: All combat abilities +150%

Only then did it also explain Orvil's nonsensically strong abilities.

'It must be a buff restricted to Fenrir that is only activated in this area.'

Ian, who understood the situation, quickly let out a command to Pin and Halli.

"Pin, Halli, help Ly!"

It was a situation where the buff was equally received, and Ly and Orvil were both Fenrir. On top of that, their levels were the same, but either way, because Orvil was a Legendary-rank, which was one rank higher compared to Ly's, he decided that it would be hard for Ly to win.

And as Halli and Pin also joined in, even Orvil, who overflowed with confidence, began to be pushed back little by little.

Keu, I can't believe it...

In no time, Orvil's Vitality was almost completely cut down, and evidence of that, Orvil's name was flickering quickly.

For the Kin's Absolute to be a pathetic guy blinded by madness, I cannot acknowledge it!

Ly's two eyes began to shine a bright red.

And a system message rang out in front of Ian's eyes.

Familiar 'Ly' has used Inherent Ability 'Judgment of Blood'.

The lower Ly's Vitality goes, the stronger all of his abilities become, and if his Vitality drops below 50%, 50% of all damage dealt on the opponent will be recovered.

'Judgement of Blood' will last for 5 minutes.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

It was a new Inherent Ability of Ly's that even Ian didn't know of.

And at the combined attack of the three Familiars, Orvil eventually collapsed.

Thud-.

You have killed 'Dark Fenrir Orvil'. You have obtained 1,127,423 EXP.

As the system message popped up, only then was Ian able to let out a sigh of relief for the first time.

“Whew, that was seriously no joke. I thought this time I was really going to die helplessly...”

Ian seemed to be drained of energy, as he approached Orvil's corpse with slow footsteps.

And he put his hand on top there.

You have obtained 87,886 gold from 'Dark Fenrir Orvil'.

You have obtained the 'Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir'.

You have obtained the 'Fenrir's Revengeful Spirit'.

“Huh...?”

After checking the list of items he obtained, Ian's two eyes

rounded.

And amongst them, his eyes were fixated on the name of the item called the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir.

“Its name is in red.”

The colour of the item’s name was decided depending on its rank.

And the red was the same colour as the Legendary-ranked item, the head ornament that Ian was wearing on top of his head.

‘If that’s the case, then...!’

Ian opened the information of the item.

\*Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir

Classification – Two-handed sword

Rank – Legendary

Equip Limit – Over 650 Strength

Only ‘Warrior’-class can equip

Offensive Power – 2585-3730

Durability – 175/175

Options – All combat abilities +85%

Agility +5

## Inherent Ability

### \*Darkness Emission

In the event of an attack, there is a 30% chance for darkness to be released within a 5-metre radius all around. The released darkness will deal an equivalent damage of 250% of your Offensive Power to enemies, and will reduce their Defensive Power by 30% for 3 seconds.

### \*Indelible Wound

It will be impossible to recover 10% of damage received from the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir for 30 minutes.

### \*Bound to account

This is an item belonging to user 'Ian'.

This item cannot be transferred to another user or be sold, and even if the character dies, it does not drop.

A greatsword filled with the revengeful spirit of a legendary Fenrir.

If held in the hands of a tenacious Warrior, they will be able to cut through anything.

“ ... ”

Ian wore a dejected expression.

The options of the item were so ridiculous only laughter came out.

But the problem was that it was an item that Ian couldn't equip.

‘Ha... For it to be an item exclusive to Warrior-class...’

On top of that, because of the bound to account option, it was a situation where he couldn’t even sell it off.

‘Apparently Legendary-rank items mostly drop as account-bound, and it seems that’s correct. Still, well, there’ll probably be a chance for me to use it somehow.’

For now, Ian set aside his disappointment and grabbed the Fenrir’s Revengeful Spirit before lifting it up.

And just like with Shallos, a message began to pop up.

You have liberated the ‘Fenrir’s Revengeful Spirit’ that was devoured by madness.

The black marble that left Ian’s hand whipped through the air here and there and began to make a dark shadow.

And just like what Shallos said, a ghost that had a translucent shape floated gently.

The only difference was that if Shallos’ revengeful spirit was multicoloured, then Orvil’s revengeful spirit was a light grey colour.

Thank you, human.

At Orvil's words, Ian nodded his head and wore a bitter smile.

"I almost died."

Orvil's words continued.

I can't believe the truth that the one who saved me from the shackles of madness is a human.

And his gaze turned to Ly, who stood by Ian.

Are you the one that inherited the will of Shallos, kin of the blood?

Ly responded.

That's right. I inherited his will.



Orvil stared at Ly with a piercing gaze.

And shortly after, his mouth opened again.

You are... strong. Perhaps even stronger than the past Shallos.

The gaze of the two Fenrir met halfway in the air.

At Ly's figure that was full of fighting spirit, Orvil let out a low laughter.

Ho-ho, good. If you are a kin of blood, you must at least have a fighting spirit like that.

Orvil returned his gaze back to Ian and continued his words.

Human, what is your name?

Ian, who received shock from the truth that Ly spoke and was wearing a dazed expression, was startled before he replied.

“I am Ian.”

I see. Ian, thanks to you, my spirit was able to be freed. Thank you.

“It was nothing.”

He spoke like that, but Ian stared at Orvil with an expression filled with anticipation.

‘Since I’ve already evolved Ly, I wonder what I’ll be able to receive from this dude.’

The thing that Orvil handed to him was a sphere that looked similar to the item that Shallos gave to Ian, as well as what allowed Ly to evolve.

You have obtained the item ‘Dark Hole’.

Ian reflexively mumbled.

“This...”

Orvil's mouth opened again.

This is the item that represents us kin of the dark. So far as my observation goes, it seems that you have already received the item of the kin of the blood from Shallos.

Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah, that’s right.”

Orvil stared at Ly, who just stood there, and grinned.

Perhaps... It may be possible that, in the true sense of the word, you may become the Kin's Absolute for the first time in 100 years.

“Hmm...?”

As Ian, who didn't understand what he was saying, tilted his head, Orvil pointed to somewhere.

And there, a pure white and round object was floating in the air.

“What’s that?”

You'll know when you see it, human.

The round item began to go up to the sky little by little, and a bright light shone from between the piles of collapsed stones and began to be sucked into the round sphere.

“Ooh...”

It wasn't even 1 o'clock in the afternoon yet, but thanks to Orvil, the sky was still dark, and the white object that floated in the black sky was reminiscent of a bright white full moon.

For the first time in 100 years, the three powers have gathered in one place.

Ian, who still hadn't understood what he was saying yet, stared at Orvil with a blank expression, and Orvil just laughed.

‘What the hell? So, what about it?’

However, just then.

A large howling sound that was incomparable to anything from

before rang out from beside Ian.

Awhooo-!

Ian, who was startled, turned his head.

And Ly, who began to emit a white light in all directions, stood there.

I was nothing more than half, but it looks like this one will become the true one.

Orvil mumbled with a self-mocking voice.

And a strong light from the white sphere that floated in the air began to pour onto Ly.

“Oh, oh...!”

Ian slightly squinted at the blinding light.

However, a system message that he couldn't believe appeared in front of his slightly opened eyes.

Bloody Fenrir 'Ly' has evolved to 'Sovereign Fenrir'.

# Chapter 120: Ly's Performance (1)

---

Ba-ang-!

As soon as the message that Ly's evolution was complete rang out, a large explosion with Ly as the centre of it formed and a pure white surf spread out in all directions.

“Hul...”

Ian felt his mind go blank.

‘To have continuously evolved...’

If Ly, who evolved to a Heroic-rank, evolved once more, then he would at least be a Legendary-rank.

Ian wore an excited expression as a couple of system messages continuously popped up.

The item ‘Bloody Hole’ has been absorbed by Familiar ‘Ly’ and has disappeared.

The item ‘Dark Hole’ has been absorbed by Familiar ‘Ly’ and has disappeared.

The item ‘Lunatic Hole’ has been absorbed by Familiar ‘Ly’ and has disappeared.

The three rays of light were sucked into Ly.

And finally, the whole field of vision turned white.

Chwaaak-!

The darkness that completely filled the area cleared, and Ian could see Ly's form, which was covered by the light and couldn't be seen properly.

The first thing that caught his eye was his straightened back in comparison to other Fenrir, the long and sharp claws that stuck out of his front feet, and lastly, the fact that his body burned without rest as if he was engulfed by flames.

And the flames weren't just a normal bright red light, but pure white in colour.

'He is standing on two feet, but to call him a werewolf... His face is also perfectly of a wolf's...'

While momentarily admiring Ly's form, which had evolved that imposingly, a new system message additionally popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

You have obtained a 'Completed Form' Familiar for the first



time.

You have obtained 100,000 Fame.

‘Huh? What is Completed Form?’

Orvil’s husky voice was heard through the ear of Ian, whose mind was all over the place because so many different events happened all at once.

Greetings, Lord.

As he was a ghost, the lower half of his body was missing so he couldn’t kneel, but Orvil courteously bowed his head and showed respect towards Ly.

And a message alerting Ian that he completed the quest popped up in front of his eyes.

Ring-.

You have completed the favour quest of Bloody Fenrir ‘Shallos’.

Clear Rank – S

You have obtained 28,978,900 EXP.

You have obtained 279,000 gold.

At the enormous reward for an S-rank quest, Ian felt as if he won the lottery.

This was because, although he needed to put in a lot of effort, the things that he received was immense in comparison.

Of course, he liked the EXP and the gold reward, but the biggest present to Ian was that Ly had evolved twice at super speed in one stretch.

Ian opened Ly’s stat window with a broad smile.

\*Ly (Sovereign Fenrir)

Level: 120

Classification: Predatory Animal

Rank: Legendary

Personality: Valiant

Completed Form

Offensive Power: 3660

Defensive Power: 1458

Agility: 2154

Intellect: 1214

Vitality: 51,022/51,022

Inherent Ability

\*Health Absorption

25% of the damage dealt on the opponent will be absorbed as his own health and if critical damage is dealt, 70% of that damage will be absorbed as his own health.

\*Rage of the Fenrir (Cooldown time 10 minutes)

Will go into an 'Enraged' state for 3 minutes, and all combat abilities will increase by 50% and critical attack chance will increase by 20%.

Whenever critical damage is dealt on an opponent by an attack, the cooldown time of the 'Rage of the Fenrir' goes down by 5 seconds.

\*Darkness Encroachment (Cooldown time 30 minutes)

Will go into a 'Darkness Encroachment' state for 3 minutes.

When in Darkness Encroachment state, all attacks will be applied as critical attacks, and 70% of all damage will be neutralized.

While Darkness Encroachment is maintained, all movement speed will increase by 50%. (Can only be invoked in darkness.)

\*Heir of the Moon (Passive)

If moonlight is received, all movement speed will increase by 30%, and 3% of maximum Vitality will be continuously recovered per second.

The Sovereign Fenrir is the ruler of all wolves and is the only Fenrir in the world.

'Wow...'

The outrageous abilities made him speechless, and of all the magnificent Inherent Abilities, none were wasteful.

‘Now I wonder if I should sleep during the day now and game at night.’

The Darkness Encroachment skill could only be used in darkness as well as the passive, Heir of the Moon, which was only invoked during the night.

Because these two Inherent Abilities were too great, Ian was seriously contemplating whether he should change the time he games.

‘Besides Health Absorption, all of the Inherent Abilities he had before evolving have disappeared. Still, well, since the most important one remained...’

The Health Absorption skill that revived part of the damage dealt as Vitality was an important skill that reinforced Ly’s biggest flaw, his weak Vitality.

His Vitality was now at 50 thousand, but it was hard to say it was enough if the fact that he was a Legendary-rank and lv 120 were considered, so the Health Absorption skill would cover this part enough.

And in order to figure out the meaning of the ‘Completed Form’, which he had been curious about, he opened the help tab.

‘What could Completed Form be? It probably isn’t a bad thing,

though.'

And 'Completed Form' was newly formed in the evolution-related help tab.

### \*Completed Form Familiar

All monsters have a final form.

When a monster is captured, the phrases 'Evolution Possible' or 'Evolution Impossible' are written in the information window, but if one of these two phrases are written, it means that there is a higher-ranking species that exists within same kind of species as the relevant monster.

In the case of 'Evolution Impossible', a higher-ranking species exists, but it means that the relevant individual cannot evolve to it, and in the case of 'Evolution Possible', it means that it can evolve into the higher-ranking species.

Lastly, in the case of 'Completed Form', it means that there is no other higher-ranking species within the relevant species that can be evolved to.

In other words, the meaning of the Completed Form monster is that it is the highest-ranking individual of the relevant species.

'So, it means that Ly has completely evolved into the highest stage that he can as a wolf!'

As his thoughts finished there, he developed a curiosity towards the ‘Mythological’-rank, which was a rank that was still completely covered in a veil in all aspects.

‘If Ly, a Legendary-rank, is the Completed Form, then within the wolf species, does that mean that there is no individual that can evolve into a Mythological-rank?’

Orvil approached Ian, who was swamped by different thoughts.

Then, I think my part is over up to here now, human Summoner.

At Orvil’s words, Ian nodded his head and responded.

“Alright, thanks.”

I’m the one that is thankful for receiving freedom as a gift.

As he spoke, Orvil’s ghost dispersed in the air.

After Orvil disappeared, Ian turned his head towards Ly again.

And Ian, who suddenly thought of something, opened his mouth towards Ly.

“But, Ly, can you talk now?”

Ian stared at Ly with eyes full of curiosity.

Ly satisfied his expectations.

That's right, owner.

Ly's expression and way of talking that somehow felt arrogant.

However, in the eyes of Ian, who had been through a lot with Ly since his younger days(?), he just looked cute.

Rub-rub-

Ian, who had petted Ly's head once, hurriedly used his return stone.

The place that he was headed for was Ollibus Village.

'Since there might be some crumbs that could fall from that elder Ikael, I should at least go and visit him.'

Truthfully, quest progress-wise, there was no reason for him to go and find Ikael again, but Ian's instinct was telling him to go and visit Ikael once for some odd reason.

The first thing that Ian, who had arrived at Ollibus Village, did was check the information of the village.

Ian hadn't forgotten about the operation to make the village Lotus'.

‘Hmm... Our Friendship is over 30% now.’

Since his Friendship when he first discovered it was at around 20%, it had increased by more than 10%.

In order to impute Ollibus Village as Lotus', he needed to raise it up to about 70% so it could look like it was still pretty far off, but Ian didn't think that was the case.

‘Since I've confirmed that the Friendship goes up quickly with quests, I should reveal the location of the village to the guild members and tell them to do quests over here.’

They probably wouldn't have as big of an influence on the Friendship as much as Ian, who had succeeded an S-rank quest, but if tons of guild members committed, then he felt they could fill up 70% quickly.

‘The military power requirement is now almost satisfied. The troops that are currently in training just needs to be formed.’



As a rough plan was made, Ian's mood went up and with light footsteps, he walked towards Ikael's house.

And Ikael, who met Ian, welcomed him incredibly warmly.

Ikael's first reaction was exactly this.

"Hu-hu, to handle the ruler of the Fenrir as your Familiar. Congratulations, Ian."

"Thank you. Thanks to Ly, I was also able to successfully complete the quest. In various ways, luck followed me a lot."

At Ian's humble words, Ikael shook his head and heartwarmingly smiled.

"Not at all. All of this was through your abilities. There's nothing that's given for free in the world."

And Ikael, who asked Ian this and that about the fight with Orvil, changed the topic.

"Ah, speaking of which, Ian."

"Yes?"

"From what I heard from Gripper, he said you're also an

aristocrat of Luspel Empire.... Is that right?”

Ian nodded his head and replied.

“That’s right. But what about it...?”

Instead of a reply, Ikael pulled out a scroll made of a red leather that was rolled up from his chest and handed it to Ian.

“This is a letter that I’m sending to His Majesty. By any chance, if you have a reason to go to the imperial palace, will you give this to him?”

Ian barely forced down the grin that formed by his mouth.

‘Huehue! As expected, I knew that there would be something that would appear!’

A letter being sent to the king.

Even at a glance, it gave off the smell of a new Empire Quest.

“Of course. I will go and see His Majesty at the quickest time possible and give him the letter.”

“Thank you, Ian. However, as it is an incredibly important letter, you must be the one that personally gives it to him.”

Ian nodded his head and took the letter.

“Understood.”

And just as Ian predicted, an Empire Quest window popped up in front of his eyes.

Ring.

**\*Ikael's Favour**

Ikael is appraising you incredibly high after winning against an awoken Orvil.

He has left a very important empire document with you.

Give this document to the king of the Luspel Empire.

Quest Difficulty Level: None

Quest Condition: A user that has received acknowledgement from Ikael

Time Limit: None

Reward: Unknown

‘I like the part that there's no time limit the most.’

Firstly, because there was something that Ian needed to do, he had no intentions of going to the imperial city right away.

The new capsule model began to waver in front of his eyes.

‘I should contact Fiolan.’

Ian’s footsteps were headed towards Forlan Basin.

## Chapter 121: Ly's Performance (2)

---

“Ian, you seem confident today.”

The two people that stood in front of the Forlan dungeon.

At Fiolan's words, Ian grinned.

“I have some back-up that I've formed.”

“Back-up?”

Because Fiolan had never seen Ian talk like this before, she wore a slightly surprised expression.

“Yes, hu-hu.”

“What is it?”

“That I will show you once we go in.”

Before Ian went into the dungeon, he checked the dungeon clear ranking list.

Because it had been a while since he had come to Forlan, he was curious of the records that were set during that time.

‘Let’s see, is there someone that has beaten my record?’

And Ian, who checked the record, wore a relaxed expression.

This was because the ranking window wasn’t completely filled with Ian’s name like before, but Ian and Fiolan’s names were still shining at 1st place.

‘There’s still almost a 3-minute difference with 2nd place. I should make a proper difference between us today.’

Ian turned his attention towards Fiolan.

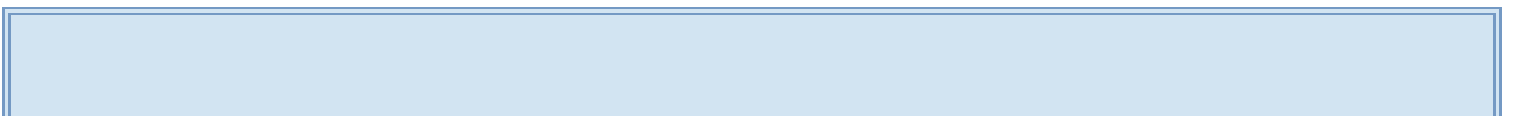
“You can do five rounds one after another today, right?”

At those words, Fiolan nodded her head as if she was waiting for it.

“Of course. If it’s not now, when will I be able to monopolize you all to myself?”

Fiolan winked as she spoke.

Ian grinned as he started walking. And a system message that alerted the two people of the entry popped up in front of their eyes.



You have entered the 'Grave of the Forlan Hero' dungeon.

\*

Ian and Fiolan hadn't just gone through the Forlan dungeon once or twice.

On top of that, the two people had hunted hundreds of times up until now and adjusted to each other through that.

As if they were proving that they were the party that currently held the highest record, Ian and Fiolan moved adeptly from the beginning.

As usual, Ian used Halli to quickly pierce through the canyon and get to the hole where the main phases progressed, while Fiolan used Spatial Movement and followed Ian.

Up to this point, it unfolded no differently from before.

However, as soon as Ian summoned all of his Familiars, Fiolan's eyes rounded.

Grr-.

She had discovered Ly, whose appearance had completely changed.

“Ian, Ly, did he evolve?”

Ian laughed as he nodded his head.

“Yes, he evolved after our recent quest. You can look forward to him.”

Ian turned his head towards Ly.

“Ly, let’s wipe them all.”

Understood, owner.

The first phase, which was the monsters of the canyon, Lake and Pin wiped them in an instant with their combined attack like before.

They had spotlessly cleaned the monsters that poured out of the narrow canyon by using their AoE attacks.

However, once they used all of their AoE skills like this before, their hunting speed couldn’t help but drop until the cooldown times were over, but Ian was planning on leaving this section with Ly.

Awhoo-!



Ly's howling rang out loudly.

Familiar 'Ly' has used Inherent Ability 'Rage of the Fenrir'.  
All combat abilities of Familiar 'Ly' has increased by 50%.  
The critical attack rate of Familiar 'Ly' has increased by 30%.

The white flames that flared out of Ly's body began to burn even stronger.

And as soon as the second phase began, Ly started to leap around.

"Ian, do I just need to protect the sanctum of the hero like before?"

At Fiolan's words, Ian shook his head.

"No, you just need to fight. Don't think about the sanctum and just deal damage. I think we can prevent them from even reaching here, anyways."

It was just like Ian said.

As if Ly was facing children, he faced the monsters that poured out from every direction.

“Then I’ll just use Glacial Curtain.”

“Okay!”

As all combat abilities of Ly, who already had incredible stats even without it, increased by 50%, he literally had monstrous fighting power.

Chwaak-!

Whenever Ly clawed down with his large front paws, monsters with weak Vitality like the Snow Gargoyles were killed instantly.

Familiar ‘Ly’ has dealt critical damage to the Snow Gargoyle.

The ‘Snow Gargoyle’s Vitality has been reduced by 20,795.

As Familiar ‘Ly’s attack has dealt critical damage to the opponent, the cooldown time of Inherent Ability, the ‘Rage of the Fenrir’, has been reduced by 5 seconds.

You have killed the ‘Snow Gargoyle’.

You have obtained 17,492 EXP.

The cooldown time of the Rage of the Fenrir skill was 10 minutes.

And the duration of it was 3 minutes.

Then that meant once it was over, it couldn't be used for 7 minutes, but thanks to the additional effect attached to the Rage of the Fenrir, '5 second cooldown time recovery whenever critical damage is dealt', he could recover almost all of the cooldown time in 3 minutes.

In the end, it meant that it was an ability that could be used unlimitedly.

"Ly, let's use Darkness Encroachment later when the boss comes out."

I will do that, owner.

Ly's performance was most remarkable, but Ian's other Familiars were also doing their part well.

Excluding Ly, the thing that stood out most amongst the Familiars was the fighting power of Pin, who had leveled up a lot and was close to lv 110.

As if Pin was proving that he was also a Legendary-rank Familiar, he was slaughtering the monsters that were pouring out without discriminating one.

'If this is the case, there's not even a reason to gather them before catching them.'

As if they were eating popcorn popped by lightning, Fiolan wore a dazed expression as she looked at Ian, who had organized even the second phase in an instant.

“I didn’t even cast three skills, but the second phase is already done.”

The second phase had ended before it was even 10 minutes.

Even Ian, who checked the record, wore a satisfied expression.

00:08:15

“Just the time that we’ve reduced here is over 3 minutes. Even if we just continue like we usually did, it should be enough to get an S-rank.”

It was just like Ian said.

If he thought of the record that was 13-minutes up to the second phase when he first challenged this with Fiolan, it was truly a tremendously fast speed.

“Hul... Are you sure we won’t hit 20-minutes like this?”

The time limit for an S-rank was 25 minutes.

However, if they continuously reduced the time with this force, they felt that it would be possible to clear under 20 minutes.

Ian grinned and got into stance again.

“Shall we try?”

And during the two people’s conversation, the third phase began.

The ‘Giants of Hatred’ have awoken from their sleep.

Ian organized his thoughts.

‘This was originally a phase that I relied on Halli’s infinite stun for, but now I should be able to melt them down one by one without doing that.’

It was a plan that was possible thanks to the Offensive Power of his Familiars that had gotten so strong.

As soon as the giants appeared, Ian began to attack the giant on the right, which had the weakest Vitality amongst the three.

“Ddukdae, tie down the other two with Abyss Hole for a moment!”

Deu-reu-reuk-!

At Ian's words, Ddukdae moved and used Abyss Hole, which he was saving up, and the two were sucked right into the range of Abyss Hole.

“Fiolan, the strongest single-target attack magic you have!”

“Alright!”

If it was a normal monster, then he would have been able to have them tied down for quite a long time, but because the three giants were semi-boss rank monsters, their resistance to status conditions were strong, so they would be released any minute.

Ian used all of the methods he could and poured out his attack.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

Evolved Ly, as well as Pin, who had leveled up a lot.

And as he had generally equipped Familiar-exclusive items, Ian's Familiars, whose fighting powers had rapidly increased, had eliminated one of the giants in an instant.

Thud-

You have killed ‘Giant of Hatred (Yakram)’.

Timed with that, Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole burst out, and Ian quickly changed his focus towards huge middle giant, which was the most threatening.

“Ian! To the side!”

At Fiolan’s words, he didn’t forget to move his body.

This was because even allies received quite a large amount of damage if they were improperly hit by AoE magic.

Ba-ba-bang-.

Fiolan’s ice magic directly hit the giants, and as the invoking of the magic was finished, Ly, who was closest to the front, lunged at the giant as if he was waiting.

Chwa-ra-rak-!

Ly, who closed the space between the giant and him that looked to be about 5 metres in an instant, pierced through the guard of the giant and dug in towards the inner part.

And as Ly's long claws lodged into the abdomen of the giant, the giant seemed to have been in pain as it let out a horrible shriek.

Keu-aah-!

And as Ly was exposed to the path of the giant's right hand, which came down in the next moment, Ian shouted with an urgent voice.

"Ly, to the right!"

Ian commanded with the meaning for Ly to avoid the attack, but for some odd reason, Ly had no intentions on avoiding the attack.

Instead, didn't he raise his right arm and blocked the attack of the giant?!

Familiar 'Ly' has been attacked by Giant of Hatred (Karahana) and has received critical damage.

Familiar 'Ly's Vitality has been reduced by 15,892.

He did block it, but Ly, whose Defensive Power itself wasn't that high to begin with, couldn't help but receive quite a bit of damage.

Ian was taken aback.



‘He could definitely avoid it, so why did he get hit?’

However, his questioning was only for a moment.

While looking at Ly’s next attack that continued, Ian couldn’t help but nod his head.

Ly had recovered all of the damage that he received in an instant through two or three linked attacks.

It was the power of his Inherent Ability ‘Health Absorption’.

‘I had forgotten about Health Absorption. But then again, in the case that happened just now, if he backed up, then there would have been quite a lot of damage that he would have lost. Ly’s decision was right.’

Like that, Ian and Fiolan’s party was even able to finish the third phase instantly.

You have killed all of the Giants of Hatred.

Along with the pop-up of the message, Fiolan and Ian turned their gaze in order to see the elapsed time.

Fiolan's jaw dropped.

“For such a nonsense record to have been possible...”

Now, it was a situation where S-rank wasn't even work.

They would for sure be able to see the 20-minute clear that they spoke of in a half-joking manner.

And lastly, the boss monster of the Forlan dungeon began to appear at the end of the dungeon.

Now the hero of Forlan is awakening.

\*

Deu-reu-reu-reu-reuk-

The practice room, where the sound of the dough machine noisily rang out.

In order to do her baking class assignment, Harin was diligently

kneading the dough.

In the practice room, Harin and her best friend, Yejung, were together.

“Harin, are you almost done?”

“Yeah. I just need to pour it into the pan and put it in the oven. What about you?”

Yejung lifted her arm straight up with a smile.

“I’m done!”

“Uhh, already?”

“Huh? What do you mean already, you’re just slow.”

Yejung, who pulled out her bread from the oven, approached Harin after packing hers to look nice.

And after looking at the muffins that were on top of Harin’s practice table, she was astonished.

“Yo, no wonder you’re so slow.”

“What.”

“You’ve made almost double the amount I did. Why did you make so many? Are you planning on giving it to someone?”

Yejung spoke without much thought, but as Harin hesitated, she wore a mischievous expression.

“What’s this, it seems like there’s actually someone you’re giving this to?”

Harin, who was flustered, quickly waved her hands and spoke.

“N, no, it’s not like that.”

“What do you mean it’s not like that. Just from looking, I can see that’s the case. When did this one get a boyfriend? Without even a word to me!”

While looking at Yejung, who snapped at her like rapid fire, Harin let out a deep sigh.

“Yejung, to be honest, I have a little problem.”

Yejung, who was slightly taken back at the unexpected development, hesitated as she pulled out a chair next to Harin and sat down.

“Problem? What’s the problem?”

And Harin, who momentarily hesitated, began to pour out her story.

Harin's problem was none other than her ambiguous relationship with Jinsung.

Yejung, who heard Harin's story for a long time, wore a dumbfounded expression as she opened her mouth.

“So, by Jinsung, you mean... That guy from the VR department that you ate lunch with before? You're dating him?”

At that, Harin wore a sullen face as she nodded her head.

“Yeah...”

At Harin's form, where there was no end to her cuteness, Yejung barely held back the laughter that almost burst out of her.

“Yo, you idiot. How is that dating? No matter how I see it, you two aren't dating yet.”

At those words, Harin wore an even more tearful face.

“Is... that so? Then what should I do?”

Yejung shook her head.

“Ugh, Harin really doesn’t live up to her looks. If I looked like you, I would have lived at least three times more dissipated, baby.”

At those words, Harin glared at Yejung.

“Stop talking nonsense. If you have a good idea then tell me quickly, Lee Yejung.”

To be honest, Yejung wasn’t ugly either.

No, rather, she had a pretty outer appearance to the point she didn’t fall far behind from Harin.

On top of that, different from Harin, who was close to a fool, she had dated quite a bit, so Harin was inwardly expecting Yejung to present a decent solution.

“Hmm... A good idea, huh...”

Yejung, who momentarily paused to take a breath, continued speaking.

“Ask him to hold your hand on your way home from school because you’re cold.”

“What? It’s October right now, though?”

“Is October such a big deal? I can do it even in the middle of the summer.”

“Not a chance. That.”

“Why?”

Harin’s face flushed.

“It’s... embarrassing.”

“...”

Yejung, who was speechless for a moment, made a different suggestion.

“Then how about this?”

“Tell me.”

“Go watch something like a horror movie, and when there’s a scary scene, just hug him.”

“That’s harder...”

Yejung, who gave different kinds of suggestions before becoming worn out, sighed deeply as she spoke.

“From what I’ve heard, that Jinsung dude. I’m positive he just got into university now and had never dated before.”

Harin nodded her head.

“That’s right. That’s probably the case.”

“On top of that, he definitely came out of an all-boys’ middle and high school, right?”

Harin’s eyes slightly grew.

“How, how did you know?”

There was something that she remembered hearing from Jinsung a long time ago.

Towards a flustered Harin, Yejung shrugged her shoulders as she continued speaking.

“That I can see with one glance. Anyways, if you don’t want to suffer anymore, you need to make the first move. If you just do as I told you, it will all work out!”



Yejung spoke with confidence.

On the other hand, Harin still had no assurance.

“Won’t I be dumped by doing that?”

At those words, Yejung wore a dumbfounded expression as she replied.

“What kind of man will say that he hates it when a girl as pretty as you makes the first move?”

“Still...”

“Unless he’s an eunuch, then you will succeed no matter what.”

Harin suddenly felt a cold sweat drip down her back.

‘By any chance, Jinsung... isn’t an eunuch, right?’

## Chapter 122: Ly's Performance (3)

---

Just like the word giant, the hero of Forlan had a body that boasted an incredible presence.

Violent in desperation, the last boss of the dungeon swung around his club.

Bang-Bang-!

However, because Pin, Ly and Halli, with Ian on his back, all had incredible Agility, the slow body of the giant couldn't help but continue to cut through the air.

“Fiolan, are you almost done casting?”

“Yes, 5 seconds!”

The moment that Fiolan's magic bursts out this time, Ian also planned on firing off all of the Inherent Abilities of his Familiars at once and finish the dungeon attack.

Ian counted to himself.

‘4... 3... 2...’

And as soon as both hands of Fiolan, who was casting magic, shone a bright blue, Ian jumped off from Halli's back and yelled.

“Attack!”

As he did so, the Familiars that were already prepared, altogether charged towards the giant.

Of course, the giant didn't stay still, and in order to counterattack, it twisted its body, and Ian's eyes shone sharply.

‘As expected, just as I predicted...!’

Ian quickly shouted towards Ddukdae.

“Ddukdae, take that one!”

Deu-reu-reuk-

Because he had Ddukdae stand in the back for a bit instead of tanking for this moment, Ddukdae's Vitality was completely full.

And no matter how strong the counterattack of the giant was, Ddukdae had enough endurance to withstand two to three hits.

While looking at the club of the giant that flew towards him, Ddukdae crossed his two arms and got into a defense stance.

And in order to not get pushed back, he spread one leg out

backwards.

Bang-!

An impact sound that was loud enough to make the whole dungeon vibrate rang out.

Familiar 'Ddukdae' has received critical damage.

Familiar 'Ddukdae's Vitality has been reduced by 19,789.

For a single blow that was dealt with all the strength of a dungeon boss, it wasn't a light amount of damage, but for Ian, who had experienced outrageous attacks during his fight with Orvil, it was laughable.

'What the hell, he could have fought him after taking a couple of hits before.'

Ian was diligently putting in each and every movement of the giant, as well as each and every attack pattern, into his head.

It was a process that was required in order to cut down the record time, but above all, it was a process that was absolutely necessary in order to write out a perfect attack for the Attack King event.

'That's right. In that situation a moment ago, if Ddukdae took

about two hits, we would have been able to deal a lot more damage. If we did that, then we would have cut down the time about 20 more seconds.'

As he checked the time thoroughly, Ian checked the Vitality gauge of the giant.

After using all of the magic that she could use, Fiolan, who was discharged, approached Ian.

"Whew, I've now done everything that I could. It should be over now, right?"

"Yes. Probably."

And just like the two people's conversation, the Vitality gauge of the giant was worn out and only a sliver remained.

It seemed that Ian's Familiars also noticed that, as they began to pour out attacks even more violently.

Ba-ba-bang-!

Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to the 'Forgotten Hero of Forlan'.

The 'Forgotten Hero of Forlan's Vitality has been reduced by 25,798.

---

With Ly's single blow, which lodged in properly, as the last, the Forlan giant's massive figure slowly began to collapse.

Thu-thu-thud-

You have killed the 'Forgotten Hero of Forlan'.

Ian and Fiolan quickly moved towards the elapsed time.

00:19:35

It was indeed a phenomenal record.

An exclamation flowed out of Fiolan's mouth.

"Kya! To have finished the Forlan dungeon in 20 minutes!"

Ian likewise was pleased.

"No kidding. I knew that we could cut down a lot of the time, but I had no idea that it was possible to cut down close to 30%."

Considering that the 2nd place record is about 30 minutes, it was easily recognizable how incredible the two people's record was.

Ian's gaze turned towards the collapsing giant.

Once that giant's body completely turned into powder and crumbled onto the floor, the dungeon clear result window would pop up now.

Ian and Fiolan had eyes full of anticipation.

This was because, although it was already certain that it was an S-clear rank, the better their results, the better the reward in proportion to it even if they received an S-rank.

And the information window that the two people waited for popped up along with a notification sound.

Ring-.

\*Grave of the Forlan Hero.

Time Limit – 00:50:00

Clear Time – 00:19:35

Clear Rank – SS

Obtained EXP – 20,112,000

Obtained Gold – 273,122 gold

Fiolan was an obvious, but a broad smile hung even from Ian's mouth.

“Wow... Wow...!”

As Fiolan was deeply moved to the point she became speechless, Ian grinned as he opened his mouth.

“S-rank is for sure different, don't you think?”

“That's right. The EXP for an A-rank was around 13-14 million, but for it to be over 20 million just from going up a rank... The gold reward jumped by double.”

Ian nodded his head.

“No kidding. I've also completed a Forlan chest piece. Hu-hu...”

At Ian's words, Fiolan, who also checked her inventory in case, wore a flustered expression.

“Huh? I've also completed one! What is this?”

And after checking the reward information window again, she



noded her head as she mumbled.

“Ah... There were 20 pieces.”

The number of pieces that were required for a complete product was a total of 40.

Since half the number of pieces that were required was given at once, they had unexpectedly completed it.

The corners of Fiolan’s mouth hung from either ear.

“Then, let’s try a little harder.”

At Ian’s words, Fiolan asked back as if she was wondering what he was talking about.

“Huh? Why try harder? It’s an S-rank.”

At that, Ian clicked his tongue and spoke jokingly.

“This, this, you’ve still got a long way to go, Fiolan.”

“For what?”

“Take a closer look at the reward window. Whether we are just an S-rank right now.”

And after checking the rank again, Fiolan's eyes widened.

“Huh? You're right. It wasn't an S but a double S. Was there even such a rank?”

Ian smirked as he replied.

“Why are you asking me that? When it's right in front of your eyes.”

“I see, that's why the rewards jumped this much. I thought the reward was too big for just a one-rank difference.”

Ian's words continued.

“So... The fact that there's a double S rank, shouldn't that mean that there's also a triple S rank?”

At Ian's unexpected words, she was astonished.

“No, is this record not even enough for you?”

At that, Ian wore a bashful expression as he replied.

“No, rather than it isn't enough, I feel like it's possible to cut down the time a little more...”

“Hmm, the cut for an S-rank was 25 minutes, and it seems the cut for a double S-rank is 20 minutes, then I think we need to clear in under 15 minutes in order to achieve triple S-rank...”

Fiolan’s gaze turned towards Ian.

“Will that be possible?”

“Well, I do see parts that we can cut down time for a little more... But we’ll need to try to know.”

For now, the two people, who finished organizing their rewards, came out of the dungeon.

And while checking their proud record that was engraved in the ranking list, they wore a satisfied expression.

However, just then.

Ian suddenly opened his mouth with a flustered voice.

“Ack, I didn’t even think of this... Fiolan, this is a serious matter!”

At Ian’s words, Fiolan, who was happily checking the rewards that came in once again, instinctively turned her head.

“Huh? What’s a serious matter?”

Ian’s words continued.

“It’s nothing else, but too much EXP came in from this...”

“Sorry?”

Fiolan, who didn’t understand what Ian was talking about, momentarily wore a confused expression.

However, she was soon able to figure out the meaning of Ian’s words as well.

“Ah... By any chance, is it because of your level?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Yes. I won’t level-up right away right now, but if we go for about three more rounds, I’ll be lv 121. It looks like I won’t be able to fill up all five times today...”

And Fiolan wore a taken aback expression.

This was because she totally wasn’t expecting for Ian’s level to already be that high.

“No, Ian, what have you done to be the same level as me already?”

“That, well, I’ve just gamed diligently...”

Ian shrugged his shoulders.

Fiolan shook her head as she opened her status window.

Because she was also lv 120, there was a need for her to check how much EXP she had left.

And shortly after, Fiolan, who checked her EXP, wore an even more sullen expression.

“Ian...”

“What’s wrong?”

“If I... do one more run, I’ll level-up...”

At those words, Ian smirked.

“Good work, Fiolan. It looks like our next try will be our last attack at Forlan dungeon.”

“Sniff...”

Fiolan, who blew away over half of this honey-like chance, let out a deep sigh.

While looking at her as she did so, Ian added on.

“Well, if you want to run it again, go level-down once and come back.”

He meant for her to purposely go and die once and go down a level before coming back.

Fiolan went into a fit of rage and glared at Ian.

“If I level-down and rest a day before coming back, you probably would have leveled-up and wouldn’t be able to go in.”

Ian knew that, but as if he hadn’t thought of that, he wore a spunky expression as he made fun of Fiolan.

“Ah, that’s also true.”

Fiolan gave a sidelong scowl as she mumbled.

“So mean, really...”

\*

After completing his maintenance before going back into the dungeon again, Ian thoroughly flipped back through his memory from just now and reflected on the battle.

‘If I do this at this part, then I feel like I’ll be able to reduce the time a little more... As for Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole, it would be better to use it beforehand here rather than saving it. Since I think in the third phase, it should be coverable to control the battlefield even without Abyss Hole, anyways.’

During that time, Fiolan returned to the Domain and brought back buff potions that could bump their stats up even by a little.

She also didn’t forget to visit Harin and bring back high-class dishes.

“Alright, everything’s ready. Ian. I think we’ve seriously done everything we can do to prepare.”

Ian nodded his head.

“Good work.”

“Speaking of which, it’s truly disappointing that we only have one chance.”

“It’s alright, since we just need to hit 15 minutes this time.”

The two people that went in for their last dungeon attack were resolutely determined that they would be able to obtain the result they wanted in the end.

The record that the two people gained was a truly close call.

00:14:58

With just 2 seconds remaining, they were able to achieve the 15-minute cut record that truly looked impossible.

And like the two people expected, on their rank, there was a triple S.

“Huff, huff, seriously good work, Fiolan.”

“Whew... No. What did I do... You did everything.”

As they were short on time at the end, in order to deal as much damage as they could no matter what, Ian and Fiolan attempted to personally attack the giant in a physical manner with the staffs that they were carrying.

The two people who both weren’t close-range classes from the



beginning, in order to cover the section where there was a deal loss whenever they were short on mana or had a cooldown time for their skill, they had even brought out ignorant methods.

However, as a reward big enough for how much they suffered had followed through, the two people's bodies were filled with satisfaction.

And they were also able to obtain an unexpected title.

Ring-.

You have set a phenomenal record in the 'Grave of the Forlan Hero' dungeon.

You have obtained the title, 'One That Challenges the Limits'.

Ian seemed be excited, as an exclamation popped out of his mouth automatically.

"Oh yeah!"

And he immediately checked the option that was attached to the nickname.

\*One That Challenges the Limits

## Rank – Heroic

The more you cut down your record in a Time Attack dungeon, the amount of EXP you additionally obtain will increase by 50%.

The Fame that you obtain as the ranking reward of a Time Attack dungeon will increase by 50%.

All class stats will increase by 15%.

And Ian liked the title that he obtained as a reward very much.

Fiolan, who checked the title, opened her mouth.

“It’s called the ‘One That Challenges the Limit’. I think it’s truly a title with a name that suits your challenging spirit.”

At those words, Ian grinned.

“You think so? Huehue...”

“I don’t know who made it, but they really made the name well. That’s that, but from looking at the fact that we even obtained this kind of nickname means that there’s no higher rank above triple S, right?”

Ian nodded his head.

“That’s probably right. If there is a higher-rank than this, we

would need to clear within 10 minutes, but maybe unless we can challenge it as a higher rank, I think it is impossible for a user below lv 120 to create a record higher than that.”

“Even 15 minutes right now was impossible enough, Ian...”

“Is, is that so?”

Ian wore an embarrassed expression as he scratched the back of his head.

Fiolan organized the rewards she obtained and asked Ian.

“Now you need to go do your remaining two runs, right, Ian?”

“I should.”

“Huehue, I should take a screenshot of this reward window and boast about it in the guild messenger chat room.”

At those words, Ian waved his hands as he stopped Fiolan.

“Don’t do that, please, Fiolan... Is there a reason for you to harass me so much again?”

“You’ll reach a level where you won’t be able to enter here after today anyways. It’s alright.”

“Ah... Still...”

After Ian, who had a comfortable tussle for a moment, sent Fiolan off, he called Herz.

And he momentarily logged out of Kailan and came out of the capsule.

‘Since what I need now is a detailed analysis for the attack.’

Now he had no lingering attachment towards the record.

If that was the case, even if it took a little longer to clear, it was more important to gather as much information as possible on the dungeon and analyze it.

Since that way he would be able to write a perfect attack.

“For now, shall we organize the information obtained from trying up until now.”

Ian’s eyes began to shine.

For some reason, Ian burned with an even stronger will than when he challenged for a 15-minute clear.

# Chapter 123: Unexpected Fame (1)

---

The Dungeon Attack event that was officially being held by LB Sports.

This event's rankings were decided based on the score calculation method chosen by LB Sports.

That standard was the same as the next part.

1. Total number of participating users. (300 points max.)

User group evaluation score. (100 points max.)

LB Sports judge panel score. (100 points max.)

With 500 points as the maximum score achievable, the rankings were based on the attacks with the highest scores, and there were a variety of standards of the user group evaluation and the judge panel that were applied for giving scores, such as the actual possibility of being able to use the attack, the amount of sincerity and effort that went into making it, the legibility of it, etc.

However, as expected, the most important part was the number of participating users, where the most points were assigned.

For the attack plan with the most participating players, the maximum was 300 points, and below that, depending on the number of participants in comparison to the first-place attack

plan, scores were given accordingly.

Mina, who recently had found entertainment in dungeon attacks during its peak point, was very interested in this Attack King event.

Of course, it was not an interest towards making an attack, but rather one on the information that popped up as attack plans.

“It would be nice if there was a lot of decent information...”

Mina, a 1st year student in the VR Department of Korea University, was quite a high-level user.

She was now in the early-lv 100s.

Much like the other users in the lv 100 range, her biggest interest lately was the Forlan dungeon.

As she had tried the Forlan dungeon for the first time now, she had failed all five of her attack chances with a deficient score that was nowhere close to the requirement.

Truthfully, there was some fault in her abilities and lack of experience for that, but as the partner whom she challenged with was at a level that wasn't much different from hers, it was a sequence that was already expected.

“I need to have experience clearing once at least in order to find a decent partner... There will probably be a lot of the Forlan dungeon attacks uploaded in the Attack King event, right? If I at least look at attacks, will it be a little better...”

Just in time, she had quite a lot of free time between her classes, so Mina opened up her laptop in the department room and began to scan through the attacks that were up on the event bulletin board.

“As expected, the dungeon with the most attack plans is the Forlan dungeon. This place is the hottest, though.”

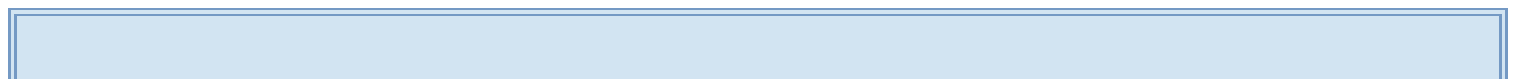
Because it was almost a year now since Kailan was released, there wasn't a small number of users that were around lv 100.

It was an obvious for the initial users, but even the hard users in the last runners were all over lv 100.

Because of that, the Forlan dungeon, which took responsibility for a considerable amount of the outrageous EXP that was required from lv 100-120, couldn't help but be the interest of many people.

“Shall we take a look?”

After glancing through the titles of the attacks like that, a title that was exceptionally catchy grabbed her attention.



Title – The Forlan dungeon was the easiest.

Subtitle – Everything about the Forlan dungeon as told by the first-place clearing ranker.

15-minute clear video attached.

“A 15-minute clear video?”

Both of Mina’s eyes rounded.

“Did a first-place ranker come and sweep through the dungeon? No, from what I know, this is a dungeon that you can’t enter once you’re lv 121.”

For her, who hadn’t even been able to see the third phase within the 50-minute time limit, the 15-minute record was too unrealistic.

Truthfully, from what she felt, a record of 15 minutes was even impossible for a first-place ranker.

Either way, in order to confirm the authenticity of it, Mina’s mouse moved towards the title of the bulletin board post.

Click-

And as soon as she went into the bulletin board post, she clicked on the ‘15-minute clear video’ that she was most curious about first.



“Shall we take a look?”

However, she couldn't help but be taken aback shortly after.

This was because she accidentally hadn't reduced the sound on her laptop and so an incredibly loud sound rang through the department room.

That was exactly...

You have entered the 'Grave of the Forlan Hero'.

As the main character of the video entered the dungeon, the system message that rang out had spread out just like that throughout the department room.

Mina was so flustered that she hurriedly lowered her volume, but it wasn't like she could pick up and store away the sound that had already rang out.

And embarrassment that swept over her.

‘Ah, this is really embarrassing.’

However, separate from her embarrassment, the many students

that were in the department room as it was time between their classes slowly approached Mina's seat after hearing that noise.

If you were a user that played Kailan, the Kailan's system message was very familiar.

"Yo, Lee Mina. You played Kailan as well?"

"Yeah, now that you mention it. Although, there aren't many people that don't play it in our department."

As her colleagues approached her while saying a word each, Mina wore a bashful expression as she scratched the back of her head.

"Yeah, I'm also playing Kailan."

"What's your class?"

"I'm a Magician."

"Oh, what about your level?"

"I hit three figures recently."

"Whoa!"

At Mina's level that was unexpectedly high, everybody had gazes

of surprise, but as users that were as high-level as that were quite common, their attention turned back to the video that was playing on the laptop.

“Yo, what is that video?”

“Ah, it’s a Forlan dungeon attack video that was uploaded for this Attack King event, but it seems the first-place ranker uploaded it. Apparently, it’s a 15-minute cut.”

At those words, Yoohyun’s jaw dropped, he being the only one amongst the people surrounding Mina that had gone into the Forlan dungeon before.

“What? 15 minutes?”

“Yeah?”

“That’s possible?”

“I don’t know either. We’ll find out if we keep watching this now.”

As there was no chance that their other friends would have experienced the Forlan dungeon, they had no idea what the two people were talking about, but they began to watch the video with excited expressions.

Everybody's gaze was fixated on Mina's laptop, and the video soon began.

"Huh? Yo guys, that person there, isn't that a face we've seen a lot before?"

"Who? The girl?"

"No, not that female Magician, but that male Summoner."

At those words, Mina's gaze turned towards the Summoner.

And shortly after, she was able to figure out where she had seen that face before.

"Isn't that Jinsung?"

"...!"

"That's right, Park Jinsung."

"That's the dude that always sits at the very back of the lecture room and sleeps, right?"

"Yeah, that's right."

Because the number of people in the VR department was a little

less than 50 per year, most of the colleagues were close with each other.

However, just as there was always an outsider in any group, one of the few outsiders of the VR department was Jinsung.

Besides a couple including Yoohyun, they didn't even know that Jinsung played Kailan.

Either way, as the main character of the video was revealed to be a student in the same major, their excitement increased even more.

And for the 15 minutes that the video played, they couldn't remove their eyes from the video even for a moment.

\*

“What the hell, you're going to go do another quest?”

“Yeah. I got caught with an Empire Quest.”

“...”

Herz, who was taking care of the neglected internal affairs of the domain with Ian, wore a flustered expression after hearing Ian's words, saying that he was going to go down to the southern continent because of an Empire Quest.

“Yo, you’re the Lord. I feel starting from some point, you’ve left all of the internal affairs to me...”

“Still, I bring anything that will be of help back to the domain, dude. That goes for Ollibus Village, too.”

At Ian’s words, where there was no part that was false, Herz wore a bitter expression as he licked his lips.

“That’s true, but...”

The more they looked at Ollibus Village, the hidden seaside town that Ian found while questing, the more precious it was.

The village’s rank was just a ‘Village’, but it was bigger than most decent territories, and it was a perfect place holding a value that even exceeded the Lotus domain when looking at several aspects, such as population, security, etc.

Because the Lotus guild members were greatly invested into the friendship process of Ollibus Village and the Lotus Domain, they would soon be able to merge together.

“Anyways, since I’m planning on immediately going down to the southern continent in a little bit, if there’s something that we need to discuss, let’s talk about everything now.”

“Well, there’s nothing like that right now...”

Herz, who mumbled his last words and was thinking of something, opened his mouth again as if he suddenly remembered something.

“Ah, come to think of it, today’s the start.”

“What is?”

“That Attack King event.”

At those words, Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah, that’s right. I uploaded a bulletin board post earlier right on time.”

Herz asked carefully.

“What do you think we’ll rank?”

And Ian smirked as he responded shortly.

“Why do you even ask? Of course, 1st place.”

\*

Whiiiiing-.

Jinsung, who finished getting ready for bed and had turned on his computer to check the bulletin board post that he uploaded for the Attack King event, wore a confused expression while looking at his smartphone that was suddenly ringing.

“Huh? There shouldn’t be anyone calling me... Who is it?”

Nowadays, Harin called occasionally, but checking the number, it was an unknown one.

Jinsung contemplated for a moment.

“A loan call, maybe? Should I not pick it up?”

However, because it would be somewhat disappointing to just ignore a welcoming(?) phone call when it had been a while, Jinsung picked up his smartphone and took the call.

‘I should bombard them with swear words if it’s a spam call.’

“Hello?”

And just as expected, he heard an incredibly graceful and beautiful voice of a female through the phone.



Yes, hello. Is this Park Jinsung?

Jinsung slightly frowned.

‘As expected, is this a spam call?’

“Yes, why?”

While Jinsung, who had decided that it was a spam call, was thinking about how he should swear, heard unexpected content.

Ah, so you are Jinsung. Then your Kailan player ID is ‘Ian’, right?

Jinsung wore a flustered expression.

‘What the hell? How does she know that?’

Jinsung cleared his throat before he replied.

“Ahem, yes. I am Ian, but what’s the matter?”

Then her words continued with a brighter voice.

Oh, I’ve found the right person. Nice to meet you, I am a named uploader of YouCast called Sojin.

“Sorry?”

Ah, do you not watch YouCast regularly?

He somewhat felt like he was getting entangled with a drug peddler-like person, but as conversation about Kailan came out, Jinsung decided to talk a little more with this person.

“Well, I do watch it occasionally, but I don’t enjoy watching it. But what business with me did you have...?”

It’s nothing else... But someone had taken a direct shot of the 1:30 territory war battle scene that you showed a couple weeks ago and uploaded it, and I reprocessed that and re-uploaded it.

At her words, Ian was absorbed in his thoughts.

‘By the 1:30 territory war... Does she mean the first match that we had with the Polaris Guild? Firstly, I should hear what the business is.’

Jinsung opened his mouth again.

“So?”

I have earned quite a big profit from that video, so I wanted to deposit some of it to you as well.

“Huh?”

And the explanation of the girl that introduced herself as Sojin momentarily continued.

It was quite a detailed explanation that lasted about 10 minutes, but if it was directly summarized, the content would go something like this.

Because she received everything from the shoot as well as copyright, there would be no problem even if she didn't give Jinsung a share, but because she wanted to continuously work with Jinsung, she ended up contacting him like this.

It was an offer asking him if he wouldn't mind signing an exclusive contract with her and continue working with her.

Jinsung wore a slightly bitter expression.

‘No, how many views did she get on the YouCast video for her to say that she gained quite a big profit?’

Because Jinsung knew nothing about the profit structure of YouCast, he asked Sojin again.

“So, how much money comes to me as my share from the earnings you made from this video?”

At Jinsung's words, Sojin, who seemed to be momentarily thinking as she was silent, carefully opened her mouth.

Around... A little less than 2 million Won will be deposited. It's around 10% of the total revenue.

“...?”

Jinsung, who suddenly wore a dumbfounded expression, couldn't say anything while he held the receiver.

‘What the hell, 2 million Won? If 10% is 2 million Won, she made a profit close to 20 million Won through one video?’

More specifically, the profit was about half of that at 10 million Won and that meant the revenue was 20 million Won, but even with that, Jinsung was stunned.

And as Jinsung was silent for a moment, Sojin's voice was heard again through the phone.

If by chance you think that 10% is too salty, it's an obvious. This time, because I didn't legally make a contract with you and worked, the distribution ratio is small, but if you begin to officially work with me, about 30% will return to you as your share. My share will be about 20%, and the rest goes to production costs and expenses taken by YouCast.

However, different from Sojin's worries, Jinsung was unable to say anything out of happiness at the unexpected profit.

This was because, to Jinsung, one of Kailan's highest-ranked players, 2 million Won was not a large sum, but he didn't expect for this much money to come in with just having one video uploaded.

Either way, he had just gamed, but hadn't 2 million Won of unexpected money just appear.

"Then, if I was to make a contract with you, then how will it proceed from now on?"

At Jinsung's positive reaction, Sojin quickly responded.

Whenever you play the game from now on, you always need to activate the player camera that is built into the capsule and just game. Every week, you just need to transfer the camera videos to me, and I will edit them and upload to YouCast. A YouCast page will also be set up with your name.

Jinsung's mind began to race.

'So, there's nothing for me to lose, no?'

To transfer files once a week was not a difficult task, and aside from that, he just needed to game diligently.

Sojin's words continued.

If you continuously upload videos regularly, I think you'll be able to take about 5 million Won every month. Of course, I'm also expecting this to be the minimum value. If you become an even more famous player in the future, there will definitely be room for your profit to increase.

Jinsung let out a shout of delight internally.

The reason for Jinsung's happiness was nothing else.

'With this, I could live while gaming for the rest of my life!'

Of course, even if he sold the items and goods he obtained within the game, it turned into quite a large sum of money.

However, within the game, Jinsung's expenses were quite big, and because he used all the money that he saved up to buy better equipment or use it for content within the game, an offer like this from Sojin couldn't help but feel incredibly charming.

Jinsung, who was about to immediately accept her offer, hesitated momentarily and calmed his excitement.

'But still, I can't decide everything just with this one phone call.'

Jinsung cleared his throat as he continued his words.

“Ahem-hem, sounds good. I can’t give you a definite answer right now, so then, I wish to meet you and talk more specifically about things like the contract conditions.”

And Sojin’s response returned immediately.

Alright! As a matter of fact, I wanted to ask you for a favour. What time is best for you, Jinsung?

## Chapter 124: Unexpected Fame (2)

---

Sunghoon, who was part of the planning team of LB Sports, was looking over user 'Ian's attack, which was showing the hottest response for this event.

To be honest, it seemed that the expression 'admiring' was more appropriate than 'looking over'.

Since for the whole time Sunghoon was reading through the attack, he was far from assessing it and was instead just admiring it.

“No, seriously, what does this guy do?”

The total aggregation period of the Attack King event was three days.

Starting from the results, right now, when two full days have passed by, Jinsung's attack was overwhelmingly taking 1st place.

After achieving a 15-minute clear record with Fiolan, Jinsung experimented with all of the components of the dungeon while using all 50 minutes every run.

He dug through the Forlan dungeon so thoroughly, it was close to obsession, doing things such as analyzing each and every stat of the monsters that appeared, the number of monsters that appeared according to the phase, the attack patterns, etc.



So, with the statistics that were made, Jinsung analyzed the minimum stats, etc. that were required for the dungeon attack for each class and organized it, and this part caused an explosive reaction from tons of users.

A countless number of attacks were uploaded onto the event bulletin board, but there was no attack as detailed, to the point it was almost perverted(?), as Jinsung's attack.

“There was a reason why it was claiming 1st place in recommendations so dominantly, really.”

In Jinsung's attack, there were a lot of factors for users that already had decent specs, but there was also quite a lot of information for beginner users whom have continuously failed the attack.

If it was a user that was interested in the Forlan dungeon, it was an attack that they couldn't help but read carefully.

“Didn't I tell you? That writer is really a pervert. There's no mistake.”

The current number of views was over 100 thousand for Jinsung's bulletin board post, and the recommendations were over 30 thousand.

Considering that the number of views for the 2nd place bulletin

board post was 70 thousand, and the recommendations for that were 8 thousand, it was a result that was truly dominant.

“Sunghoon, would there even be a meaning for us to even grade this? The recommendations of the 2nd place attack post is 23% of the 1st place one... If we wait until the last day like this, the amount of recommendation points that the 2nd place post can receive is only 70 points out of 300.”

Hyein, who was examining the other attack posts next to Sunghoon, grumbled.

This was because, just like she said, no matter how high of a score the other attack posts received from the LB Sports judge panel and the user group evaluation, it was no different from saying that 1st place was already decided.

Even if 2nd place was to receive a perfect 100 points in both of the group evaluations, their total score would only amount to 270 points, and there would be no way for them to beat the 300 recommendation points of 1st place.

“Still, well... For now, since work is work, we’ll need to do it.”

While looking at Sunghoon, who replied with a bitter smile, Hyein shook her head.

“That attack post, though, I also saw it earlier, but we wouldn’t be able to help but give it 100 points. Even if the planning team

that planned out the Forlan dungeon wrote an attack post, I doubt that they would be able to write one out better than that person.”

“... Agreed.”

Of course, the quality of the attack also accounted for a large part of the reason why Jinsung’s attack was dominating 1st place, but it was also because of the synergy of the provocative title that said 15-minute clear and the video that it was able to reach an even more explosive result.

“The guild of the user Ian was Lotus Guild, right?”

“Yes, Hyein.”

Hyein scratched the back of her head as she continued her words.

“Please at least find the contact information of the Lotus Guild’s Guild Master.”

“What for?”

“Because I think the 1st place reward will be sent over there anyways.”

Sunghoon grinned as he nodded his head.

“Ah, got it.”

\*

Meanwhile, Ian, who had logged onto Kailan, was headed towards the southern continent with a peaceful heart.

This was because, with just the result that he checked yesterday evening, he thought he was already so dominant that 1st place for the event was an established fact.

“I should have bought a return stone beforehand...”

Ian complained as he rummaged through his inventory.

As he had spent such a long time only in the northern continent, he didn't have one return stone for any place amongst the villages of the southern continent.

Celia, who followed behind him as he grumbled, smiled brightly as she opened her mouth.

“Ehh, Lord, still, since you're going with me, you're not bored, though, right?”

While looking at Celia, who trotted right up next to him and suddenly stuck out her face, Ian was taken back and stuttered.

“Uh... Su, sure, Celia. It definitely isn't boring.”

Amongst his retainers, Ian just brought Celia down with him to the southern continent.

The reason for that was because, amongst the five retainers, Celia was definitely the biggest help.

‘Since it's a little bothersome to go around dragging the other dudes around, too... And they're not that big of a help, either.’

Rather than her combat abilities, Celia's Inherent Ability, the Familiar Healing skill, was truly a big help when hunting.

‘I even regretted not bringing Celia with me when I went to go fight Orvil multiple times.’

The other retainers couldn't even demonstrate a fighting power equal to one of Ian's Familiars and died instantly when they met a decently strong opponent.

However, Celia was able to give a lot of help while taking on a support role.

If he just had Celia's Familiar Healing ability, there would have been no incident of Ddukdae dying either.

“But, Lord, where are we going right now?”

At Celia's question, Ian blinked and responded.

"Huh? Did I not tell you where we're going?"

"Nope!"

"... Then, you didn't even know where I was going, yet said you'd come along?"

"Yep! Since I'm good with wherever you go!"

"..."

While looking at Celia, who made a dangerous(?) statement with a bright expression, Ian shook his head.

'If Harin saw, it would have probably been hard for me to survive, right?'

Recently, Ian also began to realize that his relationship with Harin was no longer simply just one as 'friends'.

But it wasn't like he could define what kind of relationship it was more of...

"We're going to the Luspel Capital right now, Celia."

“The Luspel Capital? Wow, then, will we be able to see His Majesty, the king?”

Either way, at Celia’s cute form, Ian grinned and nodded his head.

“Yeah, that’s right. We’re going to go see His Majesty, the king.”

\*

“So, Emily, what you’re saying is that the central continent will open up this second large update?”

“That’s what I’m telling you. My source is definite, so you can trust the information.”

“No, but it can’t be that special of information if it’s just that the central continent is opening up. That can’t be it for the information you have for me, right? There’s nothing we can find out with just that.”

“Of course, there’s even more important content.”

The Domain ground of the Titan Guild, who were 2nd place in the Korean server’s guild rankings.

Ceilron, the Sub-Guild Master of the Titan Guild, and Emily, his

closest personal and one of the leading members, were having a conversation privately.

“What is the more important content that you’re talking about?”

Emily continued her words with a secretive tone.

“Firstly, you’ve probably already speculated that the central continent is also covered with bases that don’t have owners just like the northern continent.”

“That’s right.”

“Something that could probably be considered the biggest deal is...”

After momentarily taking a breath, her mouth slowly opened.

“That the central continent is a PK zone.”

“... A PK zone?”

“Yeah, a PK zone.”

It was silent for a moment.

The words PK zone were words that made one think that much.



It was the same for any game, but 'PK zones' were incredibly sensitive content.

Since if this content was poorly implemented, the balance of the game would crumble and there were also a lot of cases where games lost their users instantly.

“When you say PK zone, does that mean the Infamy penalty that you gain from killing a player completely disappears?”

“That’s right. However, that’s not all. If you succeed in killing a player in the central continent, then instead of gaining Infamy, your ‘Specialty’ points will go up. It seemed like you could change these Specialty points to Honour and exchange for items as well.”

Colonar Continent was currently majorly divided into two.

Kaimon Empire occupied the west side of the continent, while Luspel Empire occupied the east side.

The reason that there was no big dispute between the two enemy empires for this whole time was because the central continent, the blocked-off land behind the Wasteland which was not yet open, put a plug in that dispute.

As the northern continent opened up, a form of contact began to appear between the two empires, however, as the territory wars that still periodically appeared were ceasing, the fact that the

central continent was being opened up as a PK zone was no different than saying they were going to light a powder keg on fire.

“For them to not just remove the penalty, but to even give us a new reward as well, it’s definitely high-rank content, so it’s not like the rewards are going to be lame.”

“Correct. I wasn’t able to gain information on that, but from what I just heard by chance, there’s something called the ‘Imperial Seal’ as well.”

Emily’s tone slightly rose, and the face of Ceilron, who maintained his composure up until now, changed completely.

“Imperial Seal, eh? The Imperial Seal that’s required in order to be promoted to a Nation-rank?”

Emily nodded her head as she responded.

“That’s right. It’s that Imperial Seal. Specialty points are that necessary, and I have no idea what other requirement will also be attached, but anyways, that’s how it is.”

Ceilron’s mouth slowly began to open after he was silent for a moment.

“Ha, seems like it will get crazy. Imperial Seal, huh... As soon as the central continent is opened, we’ll need to seriously fight like no tomorrow. Looks like there won’t even be much time to go out and

hunt or such.”

“Probably. There probably won’t be a reason to go out hunting at all.”

“Why so?”

“It looked like you could obtain quite a lot of EXP even by killing a user or NPC that’s affiliated with an enemy empire.”

As much as the two people were both top-rankers, they immediately began to draw out how this update will influence the gaming direction of the future in their heads.

“Even if a war broke out, since the pre-existing continents will still maintain the No-PK setting anyways, the beginner zones won’t be in danger. In the end, in order to enter the west, they’ll need to get through the Wasteland and Shikar Desert, so unless a path is completely made, it will be a war between the top-rankers that are over lv 120.”

At Ceilron’s words, Emily nodded her head.

“That’s right.”

“Hmm... Amongst the guilds affiliated with Luspel Empire, are the guilds that will be somewhat of a burden just the Splendor Guild and the Oaklan Guild?”

Currently, amongst the top 5 guilds of the Korean server, the guilds quarreling over 1st place and 2nd place, the DarkRuna Guild and the Titan Guild, were both affiliated with Kaimon Empire.

However, the guilds occupying 3rd-5th place, the Splendor Guild and the Oaklan Guild, as well as the Valiant Guild, these three guilds were affiliated with Luspel Empire, so just based off the rankings, it summed up to a decent balance.

Ceilron stroked his greatsword, which shone a white light, as he mumbled.

“If we just grab this chance well, we may be able to create a foothold that will allow us to overtake the DarkRuna Guild.”

“Agreed. We need to secure at least three bases in the central continent and secure a couple strategic locations, and this time, we seriously need to beat the DarkRuna guild.”

To be honest, the guilds that were affiliated with the Luspel Empire weren't even in the two people's minds.

This was because, in comparison to the two guilds of Kaimon Empire that were quarreling over 1st and 2nd place, the guilds of Luspel Empire were lacking significantly in fighting power.

“We need to get a hold of the Imperial Seal first no matter what. It's still far off until we can immediately promote to the Nation-

rank, but whether we have that or not is a big factor.”

Ceilron and Emily basically saw Luspel Empire as just a foothold for the growth of their guild.

Their target was always the guild that was affiliated with the same empire as them, the DarkRuna Guild.

“Speaking of which, Emily, where has the Guild Master gone to the point that I haven’t seen them at all lately?”

Shyakran was the Guild Master of the Titan Guild as well as the one that was unmatched in the Korean server’s Warrior class, being 1st place in rankings.

He was the only user that Ceilron respected within Kailan.

“Shyakran has most likely gone to the Capital of Kaimon Empire.”

“The Capital? Why there?”

“Well, probably because of an Empire Quest.”

“I see. Do you know what kind of quest it is as well, by any chance?”

And Emily's words continued.

“Who knows. I'm not too sure, but maybe there could be a relation to this upcoming large update as well, no?”

# Chapter 125: Pascal Islands (1)

---

As he went to the Capital carrying the letter he received from Ikael, he was able to get in without much difficulty.

After checking Ikael's writing that was printed on the outside of the red letter, the palace guards immediately let Ian through.

'Ikael, Gripper, these twin magicians must have quite an influence on the Luspel imperial family.'

However, once inside, Celia was unable to continue, so Ian met the emperor alone.

And King Celas warmly greeted Ian.

"Sir Ian, it's been a while."

"Long time, no see, Your Majesty."

"Yes, so you brought a letter that Sir Ikael has sent?"

"That's right."

As Celas lifted his hand, Hellaim, who always stood guard next to him, approached Ian and took the letter.

And while looking at Celas, who spread the letter out and read it, Ian gulped.

‘What the hell, why is the king’s expression so serious again? What is he planning on making me do...’

He already assumed that the quest wouldn’t be an easy one, but seeing his serious expression, he felt even more nervous for nothing.

With a small voice, Celas mumbled.

“I see, so he’s in the Pascal Islands, you say...”

After reading through the whole letter, Celas turned his attention towards Ian.

“Sir Ian.”

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

“By any chance, do you know a place called the Pascal Islands that’s in the southwest?”

“Pascal Islands, huh....”

Ian racked through his brain and desperately tried to remember a



place with the name Pascal Islands.

‘An island? I don’t think it’s a famous place...’

However, no matter how much he went through his brain, he had never heard of a place with that name.

“I’m not too sure, Your Majesty.”

And Celas’ words continued.

“I see. But then again, no matter how outstanding of an adventurer you are, there’s no way you would have gone to an enemy country.

At those words, Ian sucked in a sharp breath of air unintentionally.

‘Enemy country? You’re telling me it’s part of an enemy country...? It’s not part of Kaimon Empire, is it?’

Ian hurriedly opened the continental map that was at the top of his interface.

And he was able to discover the name ‘Pascal Islands’ above an area of small islands gathered together towards the southwest coast of the continent, or in other words, in Kaimon Empire’s southernmost sea.

Ian began to grow more nervous.

This was because if his nationality was discovered while he was in an enemy country, he could be stabbed to death in an instant.

Celias' words continued.

“Pascal Islands is made up of a total of eighteen different islands. And Ikael is saying he has found out that amongst them, an island called ‘Pascal Prison’ is where Kaimon Empire’s jail is built.”

Ian, who couldn’t really think of how to respond, listened to his words quietly.

“And there are prisoners of the Calabius War from ten years ago that are locked up in that place by the Kaimon Empire’s men.”

The words Calabius War were incredibly unfamiliar, but either way, Ian had a hunch on what kind of quest he would receive.

‘Is the quest for me to go and save the war prisoners?’

Celias' words continued.

“An oracle that the pitch-black fog cast around the Calabius Canyon would clear soon has been made.”

“Calabius Canyon...?”

At Ian’s question, Celas nodded his head and explained.

“Calabius Canyon is a land of darkness that’s a little deeper past the Sky Highlands that you, Ian, went to in order to hatch the Griffin.”

As soon as Ian heard that, there was something that he remembered.

‘Ah, he must be talking about that long canyon that’s dividing the continent in half.’

But then a question formed.

‘The role of the pitch-black fog that is cast over Calabius Canyon is probably to block off the path that connects to the central area of the continent, which isn’t open yet... But that’s being lifted?’

Separate from Ian’s cluttered mind, Celas continued speaking.

“The moment the fog that’s cast over Calabius Canyon is lifted, we will probably have to go into war with Kaimon Empire again. Before then, we must retrieve the war prisoners no matter what.”

Hellaim, who had stood next to him without a word, added on.

“We especially need to save at least a warrior with the name ‘Kaizar’, Sir Ian. He is one of the strongest swordsman we have within our Luspel Empire. If Ikael’s information isn’t wrong, he will also be imprisoned there.”

Ian, who organized all of the information he heard from Celas and Hellaim inside of his head, slowly opened his mouth.

“By any chance, was the date the fog of Calabius Canyon would be cleared mentioned with the oracle?”

Ian asked without much expectation, but surprisingly, Celas nodded his head and responded.

“It has. Exactly two weeks from now, the oracle stated that the fog of Calabius Canyon would be cleared.”

For a moment, Ian felt the information that floated around in his head click together like a puzzle.

‘Two weeks from now...! That’s the date for the new update. For this large update, the central continent will be opened!’

Having found out unexpected information, Ian’s expression slightly glowed.

‘Once the central continent opens up, Kaimon Empire and Luspel

Empire will be connected... Then war will be inevitable.'

Ian, who had a feeling that he was going to be dealing with the central aspect of the large update, felt pleased.

“Anyways, Ian, I was hoping you’d go to Pascal Islands and rescue the prisoners. How about it, do you think you can do it?”

Along with Celas’ words, a quest window popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

Ring-.

Rescue the War Prisoners

Recently, King Celas of Luspel Empire had received an oracle that the ‘black fog of Calabius Canyon’ would be lifted.

The black fog was a restriction that was formed immediately after the Great War of Calabius about 10 years ago through a supernatural phenomenon.

If this restriction was cleared, a war will inevitably rise up between the two empires again, and Celas is expecting you to rescue the prisoners of Luspel Empire that are being held captive before then.

Amongst them, a swordsman with the name 'Kaizar' is especially important, as he is a required individual in order to lead the empire to victory.

Within two weeks, rescue the prisoners and return to the Capital safely.

Quest Difficulty Level: S

Quest Requirement: A user that is an aristocrat of Luspel Empire.

A user that has Affinity higher than 500 with the King.

Time Limit: 15 days (Time limit to rescue the prisoners)

Reward – Specialty Points 2000

Imperial Family Contributions (Depending on the clear rank, the amount will vary)

Fame (Depending on the clear rank, the amount will vary)

Ian, who read through all of the quest content, wore a puzzled expression after discovering a new word.

'Apart from the other stuff, what are Specialty Points?'

This was because he had never seen the words 'Specialty Points', which were written in the Reward tab.

However, whatever the reward, he was planning on proceeding with the quest no matter what, so Ian accepted the quest without hesitation.

And if it was an S-rank quest, as he had already cleared one before, he was confident enough.

“I will try, Your Majesty.”

And at Ian’s acceptance, Celas wore a satisfied expression as he nodded his head.

“As expected, if it’s you, Sir Ian, I thought that you wouldn’t fail to meet what I anticipated.”

Celas, who turned his head towards Hellaim, continued speaking.

“Hellaim, please provide three galleon ships for Sir Ian.”

‘Galleon’ ships were large ships with 3-4 levels of decks that stemmed from ‘galea’, which were active in the Mediterranean Sea in the medieval times.

And it was a warship that made up the main force of the Luspel Empire’s naval forces.

Hellaim responded with a voice showing discipline.

“Understood, Your Majesty.”

\*

“Come this way, Baron Ian.”

Isreun, Luspel Empire’s southernmost seaside town.

Ian, who arrived at this place instantly through a warp in the Capital, wore a puzzled expression.

‘What the hell, it was possible to move around like this as well?’

This was because the magicians of the imperial family used mass-teleportation and moved Ian immediately.

After hearing that he would need to go to the southernmost part of the continent in order to get on a boat, Ian, who thought that it would take quite a long time, wore a pleased expression.

‘The time that I would spend moving around was the most wasteful, but this is a relief.’

The guy that was guiding Ian was a high-ranking knight of the imperial family’s royal guards whom Hellaim provided.



His name was Paulean.

He was a whopping lv 170.

After checking his level, Ian freaked out.

‘I should get along with him...’

Using a bright(?) voice, Ian struck up a conversation with Paulean.

“So, there was a town like this as well. It’s my first time seeing it.”

At those words, Paulean wore a quizzical expression as he asked back.

“You’re saying this is your first time coming here? It’s one of the most famous towns in the southern part of the empire.”

Ian wore an embarrassed expression.

“Ah, it must be because I’m usually in the eastern or northern parts.”

Fortunately, the awkward(?) time between the two wasn’t that long.

This was because the harbour where the fleet of Luspel Empire were stationed wasn't far off from the place they were warped to.

It seemed the king had already contacted them, as the three ships that would be moving with Ian were on standby at the dock.

The captain, who discovered the party of Ian and Paulean, as well as Celia, approached them.

“Salute! You’ve arrived, Baron Ian.”

Ian, who became awkward at the respectful salute of the captain, slightly bowed his head before checking his information slyly.

‘This person that’s called the captain... No wonder he looked more amazing than Paulean.’

His basis for that was none other than his rugged physique and appearance.

He was the officer of Luspel Empire’s fleet, but his appearance almost outshone a pirate’s.

Laurent

Level: 195

Position: 3rd Captain of the Isreun fleet.

‘...’

And Ian had grown speechless.

As he checked his outrageous level of 195, his already tough-looking appearance looked almost brutal.

“Ni, nice to meet you. I’m Ian.”

Ian, who shook hands with the captain, moved his feet in order to get on the ship.

And Celia, who followed right beside him, whispered in Ian’s ear with a very quiet voice.

“Lord, that person is a little scary...”

As expected, Ian strongly agreed with her words.

“I think so, too...”

Like that, Ian loaded his body onto a ship for the first time while playing Kailan.

This was even Jinsung’s first voyage of his life.

\*

Keu-keu-keung-!

A basement prison where a dark and damp energy rose.

Iron gates opened sideways along with sound of metal that was uncomfortable to hear.

“Kaizar. Isn’t it time for you to give up now? Luspel has forgotten about you.”

Sitting in the middle of limestone was a man whose legs and arms were tied, and a man who had armed his whole body in silver armour approached him as he started a conversation.

The man in silver armour was named Lacromyu and he was the leader of Kaimon Empire’s knights.

“Funny. There’s no way that’s the case, but even if it was true, I don’t care.”

Kaizar replied with a husky voice while remaining seated, and Lacromyu sat down on the stone pedestal that was just lying around next to him.

“Ten years have passed. And not long ago, an oracle that the fog

of Calabius Canyon will be cleared was made.”

“...!”

At the word oracle, Kaizar, who hadn't even budged in a while, slightly lifted his head.

As his grey hair, which had grown long, covered his whole face, his expression wasn't properly visible, but a strange light shone from his eyes, which were visible between the strands of his hair.

“Will a bloody war be opening up again...”

Kaizar mumbled with a self-mocking voice.

Lacromyu opened his mouth again towards him.

“If you help us, you may even be able to unify the Colonar Continent through this opportunity, Kaizar.”

Lacromyu persuaded Kaizar with a passionate desire.

However, Kaizar just smirked.

“Don't make me laugh, Lacromyu. The battleground is not a place that can be controlled with the strength of just one or two people.”

And the corners of his mouth slightly rolled upwards.

“Even if Luspel doesn’t have me, they have Hellaim, as well as Gripper. It is not as easy of a place as you think it is.”

# Chapter 126: Pascal Islands (2)

---

Swaaah-.

The refreshing sound of water being cleaved through was heard.

The sea that connected with the south of Colonar Continent was called 'Collon Sea'.

And right now, in the middle of Collon Sea, three ships floated above the waters.

Originally, they were warships that had sails with the Luspel Empire's symbol drawn largely on it, but right now, the three galleon ships were camouflaging as merchant ships.

Amongst them, a man sat on the deck of the lead galleon ship with a drained, pale face.

“Euh... Euhh...”

It was none other than Ian.

Ian's face was completely drained of colour because of his extreme seasickness.

Bbookbbook, who approached his side, mocked Ian.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

“What, dude... Hyung doesn’t even have enough energy to get mad right now, so go away for now.”

As Ian waved his hand around as if he couldn’t be bothered, Bbookbbook wore a prim expression as he glared at Ian.

Bbook!

“You’re fine now because I just summoned you, but in a bit, you’ll probably feel seasick, too.”

Despite Ian’s curse, Bbookbbook wore an arrogant expression as if he was saying that there was no way he would feel seasick as a sea turtle.

Bboo-ook-!

While looking at Bbookbbook, who crawled around the deck here and there out of excitement, Ian let out a deep sigh.

‘No, why the hell does this crazy game even have seasickness implemented in it?’

Just in case, Ian called over a crewmember that was standing at the stern.



“Excuse me.”

“Yes, Baron.”

“By any chance, do you have something like medication for seasickness?”

Even as he asked, Ian didn't have high expectations.

‘There's no way that there would be such a thing.’

However, didn't the crewmember nod his head?

“Ah, yes, of course, we have some. Please give me one moment.”

“Th, thank you.”

Ian's complexion slightly brightened.

However, the moment he checked what the crewmember had brought back, the colour in his face couldn't help but turn blue again.

‘Isn't this... Ginger?’

Ginger was medication for seasickness that sailors traditionally used since long ago in order to avoid seasickness.

However, to Ian, who had the appetite of an elementary school student, ginger was no different from poison.

While looking at Ian, whose complexion had gotten worse, the crewmember asked with a worried expression.

“Baron, are you alright?”

“Do, don’t worry, and be off on your way.”

For now, he did receive the ginger, but as Ian wasn’t mentally prepared yet, he sent back the crewmember and fell into agony.

‘Should... I eat this, or not?’

However, just then.

Splash-!

A large wave crashed into the ship, and the ship sloshed around.

In an instant, Ian felt a vomit rise up from deep within his body.

‘I’m in trouble!’

Throwing up on the deck, especially as a baron, was something he couldn't do.

With all the strength he could muster, Ian ran to the washroom.

And after retching a little, he felt his seasickness calm down a bit.

'Whew, to have my first seasickness in Kailan, who would have thought...'

And as he came up to the deck, he saw the captain, Laurent, standing outside.

"Captain, how much longer do we have to go now?"

"Ah, Baron. We're almost there now. About half a day more, and we should be there."

At the words half a day, Ian despaired again.

'Do I... need to eat the ginger at least?'

In the end, Ian chewed on the ginger he received from the crewmember and sat around the middle of the hull of the ship, where it wobbled the least.

However, crawling over with a sallow face, Bbookbbook, who played on the deck excitedly earlier, caught Ian's eyes.

Ian smirked.

‘You did crawl around out of excitement...’

While looking at Bbookbbook, who approached Ian's side with a drained expression, for some odd reason, Ian grew energetic(?).

“Bbookbbook.”

Bbook...?

“Tired?”

Bbookbbook-.

“I'm also tired...”

\*

The three galleon ships were able to arrive in the vicinity of the Pascal Islands in half a day.

However, carrying onwards from his seasickness, a new difficulty found its way towards Ian.

“You’re telling me I have to go alone from here on out?”

“Not alone, as the maximum amount of people that can get on that infiltration transport ship is five, so you can take four more people.”

“...”

Ian grumbled to himself.

‘I was hoping I would get a bus just like the Griffin Hatching Quest...’

Remembering Hellaim’s Knights, who wiped monsters that were over lv 150 in the Wasteland, Ian licked his lips.

‘Firstly, I need to take Celia, so there are three remaining spots...’

Ian first picked Paulean.

This was because, excluding Captain Laurent, there was no crewmember aboard the ship that had a higher level than Paulean.

And Ian’s gaze turned towards Laurent, but Laurent shook his head.

“Not me, Baron. I have other work I need to do here.”

“Hmm...”

Excluding Laurent, as the rest of the crewmembers were around the lv 130-140 range, Ian selected two crewmembers that looked the most intimidating(?) amongst the members he could see and got into the infiltration transport ship.

‘There’s no way that they aren’t fighters when they look like that.’

That was Ian’s basis for selecting his crewmembers.

“Here, this is a map of the Pascal Islands.”

Laurent, who handed over the map, explained the Pascal Islands in detail.

And fortunately, the exact location of the Pascal Prison was marked on the map.

“But, Captain, what do I do after I save the prisoners? I won’t be able to bring back the prisoners in this small transport ship, no?”

Ian’s question was very reasonable.

Laurent nodded his head as he replied.

“Of course. After you’ve released as many of the prisoners that are locked away somewhere within the prison, you just need to shoot this flare up into the air.”

Ian received an item that looked like a small mechanical crossbow from Laurent.

You have obtained item ‘Laurent’s Flare’.

And Laurent’s words continued.

“Once the signal goes up, I will go to pick you up.”

“Ah, understood.”

Ian, who had an approximate idea of how this quest will proceed now, nodded his head and had the boat depart.

While looking at Ian, who grew farther away, Laurent slightly bowed his head.

“Then, I pray for your success in battle, Baron.”

“Yes, well...”

\*

Ian made the best use of his Familiars.

There were two Familiars that Ian could use on top of the ship as scouts.

One was Ian’s Familiar Pin, and the other was Celia’s Familiar, the Blue Wyvern.

“Pin, can you go higher up and guide us to a location that would be good enough to anchor the ship?”

At Ian’s command, Pin warbled before he flew up into the air.

And Paulean, who saw that, wore a surprised expression.

“No, Baron. By any chance, is that... The legendary Griffin?”

For an instant, Ian wore a stung expression as he nodded his head.

“Ah, yes, it is. I was able to obtain it by mere chance.”

At those words, Paulean nodded his head.



“As expected, so cool, the Griffin. I had the chance to see the Griffin that the King is raising from a distance, but that one wasn’t as big as that yet...”

Different from Ian’s Pin, the King’s Griffin was most likely raised sheltered within the comfortable environment of the imperial property.

Because of that, its growth would have been slowed.

Ian internally let out a sigh of relief.

‘If their sizes were even similar, I might have been misunderstood. I should be more careful of summoning Pin in front of NPCs that are affiliated with the empire.’

Either way, through the help of Pin and the Blue Wyvern, Ian’s party was able to arrive safely to the island that was marked on the map and anchor their ship.

The place that the party had landed was towards the back, on a shoreline with a dense forest.

“It must be over there, Lord.”

Celia, who had gotten off the boat first, spoke while pointing towards a large fortress that could be seen between the grass

thickets.

And Ian, who saw that, wore a slightly dumbfounded expression.

‘I thought that it would be hidden so that it was hard to find, but it’s just out in the open.’

Continuing, a feeling of nervousness swept over him.

‘When it’s this easy, there’s always some sort of trap...’

Paulean, who got off the boat next, opened his mouth.

“Baron, I think cutting across this forest and going in through the back should work.”

Paulean pointed towards a part of the map with his finger as he continued speaking.

“Based on how the contours overlap inversely, if we go up this way, I think we’ll be able to go up the rampart easily.”

Ian admired Paulean’s intelligent AI(?) as he led the party and began to go up the forest.

\*

The results of the Attack King event had come out.

And of course, the Lotus Guild overwhelmingly took 1st place.

The score for the Lotus Guild's attack was a whopping perfect 500 points, and the score for the 2nd place's attack was only about 260 points, so the score difference was almost double the amount.

Fiolan and Herz, who sat across from each other in the Domain Manor, received their prizes from the Attack King event with happy expressions.

This was because, of course, the capsules, which were the most important prizes of 1st place, were delivered directly to the addresses that were already received, but aside from that, the other prizes were sent to the manor of the relevant guild.

“Wow, 300 thousand Guild Fame and Mystery Boxes. This as well is quite terrific.”

At Fiolan's words, Herz nodded his head.

“No kidding, I thought that it was one Mystery Box per person, but they give out two.”

“Yes, but one is an item box, while the other is a gold box...”

Herz opened up the information of the Mystery Box.

### Magical Mystery Box (Gold)

A box that holds an amount of gold anywhere between 100 gold~5 million gold.

Amount is unknown until opened.

And his face wrinkled.

“This is too much, no? Between 100 gold and 5 million gold... Isn't this gap too big?”

At Herz's grumbling, Fiolan grinned as she answered.

“There's no way you'll get 100 gold, right?”

“No, still, though...”

“The item box is even more ridiculous than that. A while ago, it looked like Carwin received bread from opening this.”

“He already opened it?”

“Yes, it seemed he immediately opened it as soon as he received it. Still, because he received 1.3 million gold from the gold box, he was happy.”

Herz gulped.

‘1.3 million gold... If I also got around just that much, then I would have no other wish.’

Herz pulled out the gold box from his inventory first.

“Fiolan. I will open it up first.”

“Okay, I’ll open mine after seeing you open yours.”

And Herz placed his shaking hand on top of the Mystery Box.

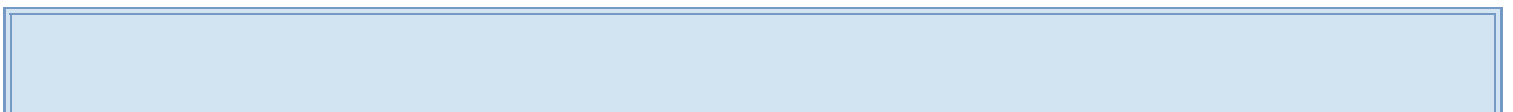
“Open!”

As he did so, a white light engulfed the Mystery Box and it floated into the air.

Fiolan and Herz’s eyes were fixated on the box.

And...

Ring-.



User 'Herz' has opened the 'Magical Mystery Box' and has obtained 1240 gold.

After seeing the system message, a horrible shriek popped out of Herz's mouth.

"Aaaah!"

Fiolan, who saw that, was nervous because it didn't seem like it was some other person's matter, but she still couldn't stop the laughter that continuously slipped out of her mouth.

"Pu-hu-hut, Herz, you seriously have no luck. 1200 gold. How, amongst all the numbers between 100 and 5 million, you got a thousand two hundred..."

And continued, Fiolan opened her box.

Herz couldn't help but despair even more.

User 'Fiolan' has opened the 'Magical Mystery Box' and has obtained 3,974,505 gold.

This was because the amount of gold Fiolan obtained was thousands of times more than Herz's at close to 4 million gold.

At the letdown, Herz collapsed onto the ground.

“Ha...”

And Fiolan reassured Herz.

“Cheer up, Herz...”

However, there was no way that the reassurance of Fiolan, who received 4 million gold, would have an effect.

“Damn it, they need to change the salary system for the LB Sports game planners.”

“Huh?”

“They need to make something like a Magical Kailan Salary Box and give their salary randomly.”

“...”

“Something like 20 thousand Won~10 million Won. They need to receive about 20 thousand Won as their salary in order to pull it together.

## Chapter 127: Pascal Islands (3)

---

The Pascal Prison had an incredibly complex structure.

At the three divided paths that appeared as soon as they snuck into the prison, Ian thought deeply for a moment before opening his mouth.

“Let’s try going through the right path.”

At those words, Paulean wore a confused expression as he asked.

“Baron, do you know the way?”

“No, of course not.”

“...?”

“If we go through each one, well, we’ll eventually find the right path.”

At Ian’s nonchalant words, the party shook their heads, but because it wasn’t like they really had a clever scheme, they moved according to Ian’s words for now.

However, soon, they were able to figure out that was the wrong choice.



“This... Isn’t even supposed to be a maze, so isn’t this a little too much?”

Ian’s mumbling spoke for everybody’s feelings.

Divided paths had continuously showed up one after another.

As there became too many possible cases, it had become a situation where it was impossible to check each and every one until they found the right path like Ian said.

“Let’s sit down for a moment and think about it a little.”

At Ian’s words, Paulean sighed deeply.

“Will something even come up if we think about it?”

“That I don’t know.”

Ian let down Bbookbbook, who was on his back.

And as soon as he saw Bbookbbook, Ian thought of something.

“Ah, if we need to find our way through with our instinct anyways, shall we try following Bbookbbook?”

This time, Celia, who had been silent, asked.

“Bbookbbook? Oh, that big-headed turtle!”

At Celia’s words, Bbookbbook, who poked his head out from his shell, glared at Celia.

Glare-.

However, Celia wasn’t the least bit fazed and opened her mouth again.

“But does this turtle usually find the right paths?”

“Hmm... He occasionally finds things like undiscovered dungeons unexpectedly.”

“Ah...”

Ian crouched down in front of Bbookbbook and opened his mouth.

“Bbookbbook.”

Bbook-.

“Hyung has lost his way right now.”

At the words that he was lost, Bbookbbook sneered at him.

Bboo-bbook-.

“Find me the right path, Bbookbbook. If you do a good job finding it, I’ll feed you as many meatballs as you want. How about it?”

At Ian’s blank cheque for meatballs, which he had never proposed before, both of Bbookbbook’s eyes rounded.

Bbookbbook-!

While seeing that form, Ian mumbled to himself.

‘If there were at least a pile of meatballs where the prisoners were confined, Bbookbbook would have smelled it and found them immediately.’

Just then, Paulean, who was much smarter than Celia in comparison, made an objection.

“But, will this turtle even know what he needs to find?”

“No, of course, he probably doesn’t know.”

“Then how...?”

“I have an idea.”

Ian turned his attention back towards Bbookbbook.

“Bbookbbook, find me a place where other people are besides us. You just need to find anybody.”

Bbook-.

Ian’s intentions couldn’t be understood, but either way, for now, the party that left Bbookbbook to lead them began to move.

Had about 10 minutes passed like that?

Whether it was through Bbookbbook’s ability or luck, a group of soldiers that were wearing armour with the Kaimon Empire’s symbol drawn on it appeared in front of them at a distance.

“He did end up finding some people, although he didn’t find the prisoners... By the looks of it, I think it will be hard to just pass by them quietly, Baron.”

At Paulean’s words, Ian nodded his head.

“It seems so.”

Ian's purpose for having Bbookbbook find someone, of course, the most ideal scenario was if he found the prisoners.

However, he didn't think that he would be able to find the prisoners from the start, and this was a development that Ian was predicting.

‘Alright, shall we get started then?’

The soldiers that were checked were above lv 130.

They were generally a higher level than the party, but because Paulean's level was so high, he decided that it would be worth fighting against them.

Since it was hard to say that Ian's fighting power was of a normal early-lv 120 player as well.

“Celia, don't join in on directly attacking, but prioritize healing the Familiars. Understood?”

Celia grinned as she nodded her head.

“Yes, Lord!”

And Ian spoke to the two crewmembers that had been quietly following up until now.

“Once the battle starts, there will definitely be one or two people that break away in order to alert others about our trespass. You two, please follow them.”

“We just need to make sure they don’t get away, right?”

At the words of one of the crewmembers, Ian shook his head.

“No, let them run away and please follow them while you leave markings as you go.”

This was exactly the plan that Ian was aiming for.

And this was a plan that Ian had thought of since they first infiltrated the prison.

He was planning on following the escaping soldiers and find the location where the prisoners were locked in.

As not even one NPC affiliated with Kaimon showed up until now, there was no way to use this method, which was why he told Bbookbbook to find anybody.

The two crewmembers, who immediately understood Ian’s words, nodded their head as they replied.

“Yes, Baron!”

Paulean, who finally understood Ian's thoughts, also nodded his head.

“As expected, there was a reason why you received His Majesty's trust. That's a good plan.”

And shortly after, the battle began.

Ian couldn't summon Ddukdae, who was large in size, as the space in the prison was too narrow, but after summoning the rest of his Familiars, he immediately charged towards the soldiers.

“Intruder!”

And the soldiers that discovered Ian's party attacked as well shortly after.

“Ly, Halli! Dig through them to the middle!”

Because he was certain that if the soldiers, who outnumbered them in comparison, got into formation, it would become a nuisance to face them, Ian thought that he needed to first make the battleground a dogfight.

Grr-!

As expected, amongst Ian's Familiars, the one that showed the

most outstanding presence was Ly.

- Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to the 'Pascal Prison Guard'.
- The 'Pascal Prison Guard's Vitality has been reduced by 15,640.

Ly stirred up the guards, who were a mess because of the sudden attack, to his heart's content.

Although Pin, who couldn't fly around as much as he wanted at the fault of the low ceiling, wasn't able to take such an active part as expected, but despite that, they were dominating the battle situation.

After pouring at all of his Spirit Magic towards the front, Ian's gaze turned towards Paulean.

'Shall we see how well a lv 170 royal guard fights?'

And the fighting power of Paulean that Ian checked was simply overwhelming.

At the greatness of the royal knight, who swung around a long lance and treated the lv 130 soldiers like he was dealing with kids, an exclamation automatically flowed out of Ian's mouth before he even realized.

"Whoa..."



‘If I could just have one NPC like that as a retainer...’

He wasn’t enough to be compared to Hellaim, but at the form of Paulean, who lived up to his level, Ian licked his lips.

However, just then.

The yellow light that was lodged in Paulean’s lance glowed largely and a large energy began to surge through.

“Hmph!”

And as Paulean smashed his lance against the ground, the golden energy flew out in all directions.

Baaang-!

A large boom followed by silence.

This was because all of the guards of Kaimon Empire that were hit by the AoE attack that spread out from the end of Paulean’s lance had turned into a grey light.

Of course, it was a situation where the battle had advanced quite a bit, so there was no soldier who had max Vitality, but to have annihilated all of them with one hit was enough of a surprising scene.

‘Isn’t... this a fraud?’

He couldn’t figure out exactly how much damage went through, but while Ian looked at a rough estimate of over 30 thousand Vitality of the soldiers being carved off, he was astonished.

And Paulean, who was the very person that made this incredible scene, approached Ian with a bashful expression.

“Uh... Baron. I killed all of them, so what should we do?”

At Paulean’s voice, Ian, who was in a daze, snapped back to reality.

And the two crewmembers that stood awkwardly caught his eyes.

“Baron, the guards that survived and ran away are gone!”

“ ... ”

Ian, who was momentarily taken aback at the unexpected situation, turned his head towards Bbookbbook.

And he let out a deep sigh.

“Whew... Bbookbbook, let’s look again.”

Bbookbbook-.

Bbookbbook took lead with an expression overflowing with confidence, and the party began to follow Bbookbbook as they moved again.

His plan was slightly thrown off, but still, having found out that Paulean's fighting power was more incredible than he expected, that comforted him quite a bit.

\*

Jinsung's house.

“Whoaa...!”

While looking at the new capsule model that came to his studio apartment, Jinsung wore an ecstatic expression.

“Are you that happy?”

Amongst the three capsules that were received as a reward for the Attack King event, the one that was delivered first obviously arrived at Jinsung's house.

Because the size and weight of the capsule was hard to move alone, Yoohyun had come with Jinsung to his house in order to

help him install it.

Harin was an addition, as she came along, saying she was curious of the new capsule model.

“Yeah, I’m happy, then should I not be? Be grateful to me, dude.”

“Of course. Thanks to you, I also get to obtain an ultra-luxurious capsule like this, Huehue.”

One of the two remaining capsules went to Yoohyun, the Guild Master, while the last one went to Fiolan, who contributed a large amount while running the dungeons with Ian.

Because of that, he spoke like this.

Harin also spoke with an envious expression.

“Lucky. I wish I could at least have the older model capsule...”

At those words, Yoohyun wore a puzzled expression.

“Huh? Harin, you don’t have a capsule?”

“Yeah, I don’t.”

“Then have you always been gaming at a capsule room?”

Jinsung wore quite a surprised expression as well.

This was because, considering she only played in a capsule room, it felt like Harin was an incredibly high level.

“Eh... Really? But it seemed like your login time was quite long considering you only play in a capsule room...”

At the two people’s words, Harin laughed as she shook her head.

“No, I didn’t just go to capsule rooms, but there are two capsules at my younger cousin’s place, so during the day, I usually go and use it. One of them is my aunt’s. During the day, my aunt has work, so she’s not home.”

As if they finally understood, Jinsung and Yoohyun nodded their heads.

“Then again... The rate for capsule rooms are very high. You might as well buy a capsule instead of paying that much money and using one in a capsule room. For heavy users like us, that is.”

And while looking at Harin, Jinsung opened his mouth.

“Harin, then, do you want the capsule I originally used?”

At Jinsung’s extreme offer, Harin and Yoohyun both wore

slightly surprised faces.

This was because, even though it was an older model, if Jinsung sold the capsule that he had been using as second-hand, he could still receive about 2-3 million Won.

However, to Jinsung, who was in an extremely happy mood because of the newer model capsule that was worth tens of millions of Won, the 2-3 million Won that he could gain from selling the second-hand capsule didn't feel like that big.

‘It will be more beneficial to hunt in the time spent snooping around to try and sell this at a second-hand marketplace.’

It was possible that the bothersome aspect of it was a bigger factor.

Meanwhile, Harin, who was momentarily flustered at the unexpected offer, asked back with a deeply moved expression.

“Really? Can I have this?”

For a moment, Jinsung contemplated the slightest bit, but he coolly nodded his head.

“Sure, you use it, Harin.”

As he did so, Yoohyun, who was standing next to him, made fun

of Jinsung with a mischievous expression.

“Oh, Park Jinsung! Are you looking out for her because she’s your girlfriend?”

Jinsung slightly flinched at the word girlfriend, but he covered up the awkwardness with an embarrassed laugh.

“Ha... Haha...”

However, just then, Harin said something unexpected.

“I’m grateful, but now that I think about it, I don’t think I’ll be able to accept this capsule.”

Jinsung and Yoohyun, who became flustered at that, asked at the same time.

“No, why?”

“Why?”

“Hmm, That... The reason why we don’t have a capsule in our home is because my father doesn’t like me gaming. Not because I don’t have enough money to buy one...”

“Ah...”

At Harin's pitiful words, Jinsung and Yoohyun nodded their heads out of sympathy.

Especially Jinsung deeply related as he nodded his head.

'I know that feeling well.'

In one perspective, the reason why Jinsung persistently studied to go to university was because he wanted to break free from his parents, who hated games, so Jinsung deeply sympathized with her.

"Then what to do... Do I need to sell this?"

Jinsung mumbled.

Just then, Harin slyly approached Jinsung's side and pulled his arm.

"No, don't sell it."

"Eh... Then?"

"Let's just leave both capsules in your room. The room is so big, so there's enough space."



“Hmm? What do I do with two? It’s not like I can run two characters alone.”

At his question, Harin sneakily hooked her arm with Jinsung’s and responded.

“So that I can come here to game from now on instead.”

Along with that, a voice filled with shock burst out.

“Aack!”

That was Yoohyun’s voice.

“No, Harin. S, so, you’re saying you’ll come to Jinsung’s house every day and game?”

Jinsung was just as taken aback.

“Yo, if you just come like... that to a house where a guy just lives on his own...”

However, in the next moment, the two couldn’t help but become speechless.

This was because Harin stood right in front of Jinsung’s nose and pushed her face forward.

“Why, so what if I do? Then are you going to pounce on me?”

# Chapter 128: Ian, As Well As The Supreme Beings (1)

---

The closer they got to the centre of Pascal Prison, the more guards there were, and stronger opponents began to be mixed in the middle as well.

Especially when chief guards or officer-rank NPCs appeared, there were quite a lot of cases where they had a harder time dealing with their opponents.

However, Ian was humming.

“The EXP is killer.”

For some odd reason, the NPCs in Pascal Prison didn't drop items or gold.

Instead, they poured out EXP that reached several times the amount that would have been received from common monsters that were the same level.

Thanks to that, Ian was lv 122 before he knew it.

Despite having repeatedly fought battle after battle and not yet reaching their goal, it was the reason for Ian's good mood.

‘On top of that, this new capsule model's assimilation rate is

definitely noticeable.'

The virtual reality assimilation rate for the new capsule model was known to be 2% higher than the older capsule model.

It may just be his imagination, but Ian could feel that his movements had definitely gotten lighter.

'Although I'm a little worried about Harin, who is probably gaming right next to me...'

After finishing the capsule set-up, Yoohyun returned home, while Harin, who said she would game on Jinsung's older capsule model for a bit before leaving, just logged onto the game.

It was an impossible act to just ignore Harin, who was with him in his house where he had always been alone.

'Still. For some reason, it feels better than when I was just alone. Should we eat dinner together later as well?'

Just when he was thinking of this and that, and was proceeding with the quest in a good mood due to a variety of reasons, Paulean stopped in his tracks as if he had discovered something.

"Baron, I think we've finally found it."

And as they turned the corner, the giant iron gate that was

blocking the entrance into the prison caught Ian's eyes as well.

The iron gate looked to be almost 10 metres high, and in front of it, there were NPCs wearing uniforms with Kaimon Empire's symbol drawn on them who were wandering around it.

“Three high-ranking guards, as well as two officers... The fighting power has definitely gotten stronger than before, Lord.”

At Celia's words, Ian nodded his head.

“That is true. But it doesn't matter.”

Ian grinned as he pointed to the ceiling.

“Since I can even summon Ddukdae now, and Pin will be able to fight properly as well.”

As they entered the middle of the prison, the space opened up.

The inner court wasn't just opened up, but rather, its structure was similar to a giant colosseum, so his Familiars would be able to demonstrate their own strengths.

Thanks to that, Ian was confident.

“Paulean, just like how we've fought up until now, please tie

down the strongest opponents down. Then I will take care of the remaining enemies as quickly as possible and then help you out.”

“Understood, Baron.”

As Ly’s force became overwhelmingly powerful, Ian’s fighting power in personal battles had become quite strong as well, however, still, Ian’s abilities shone even more when he fought against many opponents.

“And I think from now on, we’re probably going to have to dig through the front...”

At Ian’s words, Paulean nodded his head.

The minute a battle occurred in this open space, they wouldn’t be able to hide the fact they had broken into the prison from being known.

“By the looks of it, probably.”

“If that’s the case, an intensive surprise attack!”

Ian handed over the flare that he received from Laurent to the two crewmembers.

“The moment we pierce through here, I’m going to break into the inside and begin the operation of releasing the prisoners. Then

please shoot this flare up into the air.”

“Understood, Baron.”

Ian summoned all of his Familiars, excluding Halli.

He was planning on summoning Halli a little later, when he broke into the inside.

“Let’s go.”

Along with Ian’s short signal, the party got into their respective positions just like how they had done up until now and moved swiftly.

“Ly, get the guards first!”

- Understood, owner.

Lake’s Breath struck the opponents first, and Ly charged in afterwards and started to slaughter the guards, whose Vitalities had been greatly reduced.

Chwaaak-!

The leather armour that the guards were wearing was brutally torn by Ly’s sharp claws, and Paulean was doing a good job in

facing the officer-rank NPCs, whose fighting powers were stronger in comparison.

“Current Proliferation!”

As the opponents were a much higher level than Ian, the damage from Current Proliferation didn't get embedded in very effectively, but the 'paralyze' effect was still terrific.

- You have hit the target with 'Current Proliferation'. You have dealt 4172 damage to the 'Pascal Prison Guard'.
- The 'Pascal Prison Guard' has gone into 'paralyzed' state.
- The 'Pascal Prison Guard's movement speed has slowed by 30%, and they will receive an additional 50% damage from 'lightning' type attacks.
- The cooldown time for 'Current Proliferation' has been reset.

The Current Proliferation skill was invoked more effectively the higher the number of opponents because the number of additional occurrences went up.

With the guards' feet tied down from the activation of paralysis, the one-sided slaughter began.

'Should I push off completing the quest and just hunt more here?'



At the terrific EXP, it was to the point Ian even thought of pushing off the quest for a bit.

However, it wasn't like Ian was able to fight this easily from the beginning as well.

He got used to the movement pattern of the guards through repeated battles, and above all else, he balanced well with Paulean the more he progressed with him, and a synergy appeared from it.

On top of that...

- Familiar 'Ddukdae' has received critical damage.
- 'Ddukdae's Vitality has been reduced by 8764.

Whenever his Familiar's Vitality dropped because of a concentrated attack...

“Familiar Healing!”

‘Familiar Healing’, the Inherent Ability of Celia, who buffed and supported from the back, was invoked.

- Retainer 'Celia' has cast 'Familiar Healing'.

- Familiar 'Ddukdae's Vitality has been recovered by 60% (47,398).

Ddukdae's tanking, which felt like it lacked a little whenever they faced a high-level monster that was over lv 120, became significantly sturdier through Celia's healing.

Of course, there was a cooldown time of 5 minutes for Familiar Healing, but even with just that, it was an incredible help to the fighting power.

- You have killed the Pascal Prison Guard. You have obtained 134,215 EXP.
- You have killed the Pascal Prison Guard. You have obtained 321,132 EXP.

While looking at the opponents that were taken care of at the blink of an eye, Celia was astonished.

"It's definitely much easier with Pin and Ddukdae here."

Especially Ddukdae, whose Vitality was close to 80 thousand, by receiving Celia's healing and holding out, they could definitely notice that the battle had gotten easier.

"I told you so."

Ian wore a pleased expression as he nodded his head.

However, just then.

A loud sound of a drum began to ring out from within the prison.

Boom-Boom- Boom-.

At that, Paulean's complexion slightly hardened and he asked Ian.

“It seems that they've detected us from the inside. Baron, what should we do?”

“Hmm...”

Ian was momentarily trapped in his thoughts.

However, he wasn't flustered.

Since it would have been weirder if they didn't know from the inside when such a noisy battle happened this close.

‘It's a little early, but I should get through to the inside just like I planned.’

And Ian called over Pin and got on top of his back.

Seeing that, Celia's two eyes slightly grew.

“Lord, what are you planning on doing?”

“While you buy some time on this side, I’m going to go inside and rescue the prisoners. Since whenever a prisoner gets rescued, our fighting power will increase.”

Paulean nodded his head as he agreed.

“If it just goes as you say, Baron, then the work will definitely be resolved easier.”

Ian was planning on leaving Ly, Lake and Ddukdae.

This was because, although Paulean was strong, he was too worried to go inside with all of his Familiars.

‘It should be good enough with just Halli and Pin, as their Agilities are the highest. Since the goal is rescuing anyways.’

Ian, who roughly finished preparing, spoke to Paulean.

“Paulean, please try and grab as much of their attention as possible.”

“Understood, Baron. However, I don’t know how many troops there will be within... You must rescue the prisoners as fast as possible.”

“Yes, got it.”

And Paulean added on.

“As long as Kaizar is rescued, the situation will probably come to an end.”

Ian nodded his head.

“Kaizar, huh... I will try to remember.”

Ian, who was on top of Pin’s back, carefully flew up to the bottom of the prison’s fortress wall.

As he did so, Paulean yelled loudly.

“The royal guard Paulean of Luspel Empire has come to rescue the prisoners!”

Paulean’s roar loudly resonated throughout the whole prison.

In an instant, all of the attention of the soldiers poured onto Paulean.

‘Now!’

Ian, who checked to see that Ly, Lake and Ddukdae charged towards the front with Paulean, quickly flew into the inside of the prison while on Pin's back.

And while looking at the watch towers that were set up all over the prison, Ian let out a sigh of relief.

‘Whew, if we infiltrated through the air, it would have been like a beehive.’

When they first arrived at Pascal Islands, he seriously contemplated getting inside the prison through the air.

However, Pin wouldn't be able to carry all of them at once, and because there was too big of a risk for Ian to just go in by himself, so they didn't attempt it, but after coming inside and taking a look like this, he was able to realize how good of a choice that was.

“Pin, I think it's that way.”

Ian was now quite used to Pin's back.

Even though Pin's speed had quickened quite a bit, his form was quite stable.

Boom-Boom- Boom-Bbooo-!

It seemed that the battle now started from the front, as the loud

sound of a drum and bugle continuously rang out from within the prison.

As that happened, naturally, Ian and Pin were also exposed to the enemies.

“Pin, go as deep within as possible and drop me off!”

No matter if he was a Griffin, it was impossible for the Pin’s characteristic to fly vertically downhill when his structure was to fly straight using his wings.

But to slowly fly down diagonally right now, when their position was exposed, they would helplessly suffer an arrow baptism.

Kku-ruk-!

Pin cried with a worried expression, but Ian, who arrived at the location he wanted, jumped down from Pin’s back without hesitation.

And at the same time, he summoned Halli.

“Halli, Summon!”

Roar-!

Halli, who was summoned near the spot where Ian would fall to, quickly climbed the structures and caught Ian onto his back.

Puck-!

It wasn't like there was no impact, but Ian, who succeeded in getting on Halli's back in a quite steady position, wore a satisfied expression.

Since this was the reason why he didn't summon Halli up until now and saved him.

“Okay, good!”

Ian's gaze turned towards the front.

The deepest part of the dungeon.

He felt that if he just destroyed that stone gate, Kaizar would be there.

“Pin, block the soldiers so they can't get close to us!”

No matter how large of a number of soldiers there were, while Pin used his Crush skill, it would be hard for them to get close.

And right on cue, the shouts of the soldiers, who swarmed from



all directions, was heard.

“Intruder! The intruder is trying to get into Area A!”

At the right time, Pin’s Crush skill poured out onto the battlefield.

Kwaaah-!

Ian, who checked that the soldiers were unable to easily get close and were flinching, hurriedly shot his Magic Spheres onto the stone gate continuously.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

And with Halli’s continuous attacks as well, the giant stone gate began to crumble while letting out a boom.

Ku-reu-reung-Pu-ung-!

‘Alright, it’s not as thick as I thought.’

And as he broke through the stone gate, a giant circular stone chamber was revealed within, and an unidentifiable white-haired mystery man, whose legs and arms were tied down, sat right in the middle.

A background that felt as if a boss monster would appear and a strange atmosphere was created.

Ian, who saw that, was convinced.

‘That person is definitely Kaizar...!’

Ian hurriedly approached him.

He felt as if the end of the quest was right in front of his eyes.

‘If it’s just like the words of Hellaim, he said he was an incredibly strong swordsman, so if I just rescue this dude...!’

However, just then, a different voice rang close to Ian’s ear.

“Whoa, whoa. Wait a minute. This is somewhat interesting.”

And a figure walked out of the shadows.

Ian’s gaze naturally turned towards that direction.

Stomp-Stomp-.

Footsteps that rang through the silence.

As they had completely come out of the darkness, their figure was revealed, but their whole body was still covered with a dark red light.

Ian, who saw that, let out a deep sigh as he grumbled.

“Ha, I was wondering if it would end a little easy, but as expected, there’s no way that would be the case.”

Ian studied the man with a nervous gaze.

He was planning on immediately getting out of this place using Space Distortion if he felt it wouldn’t turn out well.

Since he wouldn’t be able to face the incredibly strong looking opponent in a situation where he only had Halli.

The guy, who had approached Ian and stood in front of him before he realized, unsheathed his sword from his waist and lifted it up.

Seu-reu-reung-.

And with a voice that gave the illusion like it was ringing, he asked Ian.

“What... the hell are you?”

## Chapter 129: Ian, As Well As The Supreme Beings (2)

---

The crewmember shot the flare that was received from Laurent into the air.

Peeew-Boom!

A baptism of fireworks embroidered the sky red.

After killing all of the enemies that charged towards him, Paulean's gaze slightly turned to the air.

“Hmm... It does seem like the Baron is a little late...”

It had been about 10 minutes since Ian had entered the inside while riding Pin.

Despite it being past the time that some sort of result should have come out, as no word came from within, Paulean wore a slightly worried expression.

“Don't worry, Sir Paulean. The Lord is probably doing well.”

At the words of Celia, who was diligently supporting from the back, Paulean smirked and replied.

“Well, I do hope that’s the case...”

His gaze turned towards the inside of the prison.

‘Either way, since the flare has been shot, the reinforcements will be here.’

If the reinforcements come, a conclusion will be made no matter what.

‘We’ll need to rescue as many prisoners as we can before then...’

While looking at the group of soldiers that charged towards him again, Paulean quickly swung his lance.

\*

“What... the hell are you?”

“What the hell are you to be like that?”

At the mystery man’s question, Ian replied with a curt tone.

Because, for an NPC, he was too arrogant, Ian became bitter.

To be honest, rather than his arrogance being the problem, the expression that he didn’t like that the opponent was raining down

on his parade was more fitting.

However, the moment he heard the mystery man's next words, Ian couldn't help but be a little taken back.

“How entertaining. Based off my observations so far, it seems that you're a user that's affiliated with Luspel Empire, but to have come all the way to Pascal Islands. Did you receive an Empire Quest from them?”

Firstly, the word user.

And the word quest.

If you were an NPC, these were two words that you never used.

For that reason, it meant that his opponent was a user.

‘Damn it, what the hell is this? Is it possible to get this complicated...?’

On top of that, it was obvious that he was user of the enemy empire, Kaimon Empire.

If the user from the opponent camp was planning on completely interfering, it would become a serious pain in the neck.

Firstly, in order to get a feeling of his opponent, Ian opened his mouth again.

“Then, you there, it seems that you’re a user affiliated with the Kaimon Empire... Is this an Empire Quest for you, too?”

One corner of the mystery man’s mouth curled upwards.

“And if so?”

Ian continued his words again carefully.

Firstly, it was most important that he safely completed the quest.

“Then, how about we go with a way that will be good for both sides? Even if we don’t fight, if we can just complete our quests, isn’t that good enough?”

Even while he spoke, Ian was nervous.

Since it was strongly possible that the opponent’s quest would be that he needed to end up blocking him.

However, the mystery man’s response was outside of Ian’s expectations.

“Well. To be honest, even if I just pass by right now, it won’t

affect my quest at all...”

The long great sword that he was holding in his hands pointed toward the middle of Ian’s forehead.

“But for some reason, I don’t want to do that.”

And a swear word automatically popped out of Ian’s mouth.

“Damn it, I’m telling you let’s go for a bit of a win-win situation.”

It seemed like they wouldn’t be able to avoid fighting now.

Ian got into a fighting stance and checked his opponent’s information.

However, it seemed that he put all of his information on private just like himself, he couldn’t even check his level or his name.

“It’s been a while, shall we have some fun?”

After he finished speaking, he charged towards Ian.

And Ian attacked him with Halli as well.

This was because his pride would be hurt for some reason to just run away immediately with Space Distortion.



‘It’s possible that he’s a weaker guy than I expected.’

However, Ian was well aware that the possibility of that was close to zero.

Clang-Cla-clang-!

As Ian’s staff and the opponent’s sword clashed with each other, a metallic sound rang out.

- You have been attacked by a user from Kaimon Empire (Unknown) and have received damage.
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 12,985.

And Ian, who succeeded in blocking one of the opponent’s attacks, quickly got on Halli’s back.

‘As expected, he’s a powerful enemy. By roughly looking, it seems he’s a Warrior-class... If that’s the case, the only way is to overpower him with Agility.’

“Halli, Guardian of the Wind!”

At Ian’s command, Halli cried out loudly.

Roar-.

- Familiar 'Halli' has used skill 'Guardian of the Wind'.
- Familiar 'Halli's Agility will increase as much as the total value of the rest of his combat stats.
- For 2 minutes, Familiar 'Halli's Agility will increase by 5725.

Thanks to having raised his level quite a bit, after using Guardian of the Wind, Halli's Agility was close to almost 8 thousand.

The eyes of the opponent shone once he saw the white energy of the wind that wrapped around all four of Halli's legs.

“Oh-ho, a Hallikan, huh. For there to be a Summoner that handles a Hallikan as their Familiar.”

As of now, the officially known level of a wild Hallikan was 150.

It was not unreasonable for him to be surprised.

This was because the current, officially known, highest-level user was at the edge of lv 140.

However, whether his opponent was surprised or not, Ian gave no attention at all.

“Current Proliferation!”

Ian began to fire Current Proliferation and Magic Spheres towards the mystery man.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

However, the mystery man easily avoided Ian’s attacks.

‘What the hell? It seems that even for a Warrior-class, his Agility stat is quite high...’

The opponent, who avoided the attacks, quickly rushed towards Ian.

“Hwanleenchamgyuk!”

The great sword of the mystery man shone red.

Ian instinctively felt that he shouldn’t get directly hit by it.

“Halli, dodge it!”

And Halli, who had fraudulent-like reflex abilities, was fortunately able to avoid that attack easily.

Baang-!

The red swords that rose from the mystery man's great sword were sprayed into the air in streams, and passed by while finely slicing the stone wall.

Jjuh-juh-juk-!

Ian, who saw the stone wall crumble to the ground in pieces as if they were pieces of tofu, was appalled.

‘Even if Breath or Crush exploded, it probably wouldn't have a destructive power like that...’

The duration that Halli's Guardian of the Wind lasted was 2 minutes.

Ian, who decided he needed to win within then no matter what, jumped down from Halli's back and immediately lunged towards the mystery man.

And Halli, who figured out Ian's intentions, quickly turned around towards the backside of the mystery man and swung his front paws.

Ian and Halli attacked quickly and cleanly on opposite sides of the man.

Pu-ung-!

- Familiar 'Halli' has dealt critical damage to 'Ghost of Emptiness'.
- 'Ghost of Emptiness's Vitality has been reduced by 9685.

Although it was only for a short duration, the mystery man was unable to avoid the attack of Halli, who obtained an incredibly high reflex stat to the point it almost didn't make sense, and from that one attack, he couldn't help but be thrown towards the wall.

And Ian wore a slightly confused expression.

'What the hell, Ghost of Emptiness? Why is the target subject's name coming up as something like that? Was he not a user?'

If he was a user, then a name, or if his information is put on private, then the words 'Unknown' would normally pop up, but as a strange name called Ghost of Emptiness popped up, he was taken aback.

And the fact that he was unexpectedly thrown towards a wall weakly at Halli's attack was a little questionable as well.

'If he was that strong of a master that he could apply that much Offensive Power earlier as a Warrior-class, then their physique shouldn't be this weak...'

The form of the mystery man, who was lodged into the wall after being thrown into it just now by Halli's attack, felt like the physique of a Black Magician, an Archer, or an Assassin.

Just when Ian was about to try to attack again, the mystery man, who dusted himself off and stood up, grinned as he mumbled.

“You're better than what I expected, I'll say. Even though it wasn't my main body, it has been a really long time since I was attacked this helplessly.”

However, Ian didn't have any time to respond to his words.

This was because he needed to deal as much damage as he could before Halli's Inherent Ability, 'Guardian of the Wind', was up.

“Acting composed, my ass!”

Projectiles shot out from Ian's staff again.

And that was an attack that was done after thoroughly calculating the mystery man's movement route.

Ta-tat-!

The mystery man, who moved his body to dodge the projectiles that flew towards him, had no choice but to bump into Halli head-on again.

Roar-!

Halli roared loudly as he struck with his front paws.

However, this time, the mystery man didn't get hit so easily either.

Chwaaak-!

Because Halli's Agility was so high, he wasn't able to completely avoid it, but it ended off with it just grazing his side.

On top of that, instead, the guy's weapon lodged into Halli's shoulder joint.

- Familiar 'Halli' was attacked by 'Ghost of Emptiness' and his Vitality has been reduced by 8982.
- Familiar 'Halli' has fallen into 'Bleeding State'.
- Familiar 'Halli's Vitality has been reduced by 2196.

The guy's counterattack continued like flowing water.

Ian, who checked that form, wore a greatly surprised expression.

‘His skills... are the real deal.’

He wasn’t surprised at the damage that Halli received.

Since an Offensive Power of about 9 thousand wasn’t that amazing in a sense.

However, the guy’s movements just now were truly like art.

He avoided the front paws of Halli, whose reflexes were close to 8 thousand, with the least amount of movements, and even succeeded in counterattacking.

‘However, unless his stats are at an overwhelming level, it’s definitely worth trying...!’

In Kailan, the strength of a user was decided with two elements.

One was obviously the huge amount of stats and special skills that was gained through an outrageous level and items with good performance.

And the other was the user’s fighting ability.

Ian was guessing that his opponent was a Warrior-class user that was a similar level as him, and invested a lot into his Offensive Power in comparison to his Health and Defensive Power.



‘If it’s control abilities, then I’m also confident enough to not fall behind.’

Rather, if it was a late-lv 130 user that placed as a two-figure number in the rankings, it would have been hard to face them even for Ian.

Since there was a limit to the stat difference that could be overcome by control.

However, after clashing with him once, Ian instead developed confidence.

“So annoying, because of you my quest is being delayed!”

Ian filled himself up with genuine rage(?) and charged towards his opponent again with Halli.

And seeing Ian’s movements that were filled with confidence in comparison to just earlier where he was a little passive, the guy smirked as he firmly grasped his sword.

“You’re not thinking that I’ve shown you everything just now, right?”

The mouth of the guy opened again.

“Chain Attack...!”

For an instant, Ian felt an illusion as if the image of the guy, who was right in front of his nose, stretched out on either side of him.

‘What, what the hell?’

And his sword attack continued.

Bang-Ba-ba-bang-!

As expected of a skill named Chain Attack, his attack didn’t deal a large amount of damage at once, but like Pin’s Crush skill, it came in as a DoT.

System messages began to roll in at an incredible speed.

- You have received critical damage from (Unknown).
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 1892.
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 1827.
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 2191.

Ian, who saw an outrageous amount of close to 20-30 thousand Vitality drop down in an instant, became flustered.

‘Whew, did I look down on him?’

However, it wasn’t like his movements froze just because he became flustered.

The control sense ingrained into his body, which was similar to his instincts, automatically controlled Halli and Ian.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

In return for allowing a skill to hit properly, Ian’s skills and Halli’s attacks hit the target perfectly as well.

- Familiar ‘Halli’s Inherent Ability, ‘Smash’, has been invoked.
- ‘Ghost of Emptiness’ has fallen into a ‘stunned’ state for 1 second.

And fortunately, Halli’s Inherent Ability, Smash, had been invoked.

And it wasn’t like Ian to lose this chance.

# Chapter 130: Ian, As Well As The Supreme Beings (3)

---

“Magic Spheres!”

Magic Spheres rode down Ian’s staff and continuously shot out.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

As Halli’s attack also went through on top of that, the guy’s Vitality also dropped over 20 thousand in an instant.

“Whew...”

Ian, who had poured out all of his Spirit Magic in an instant, took a step back.

Thanks to the Spirit Magic that was restored through Magic Spheres, his Spirit Magic filled up to about half shortly afterwards, but it was to prevent the opponent from counterattacking.

And the mystery man, who got out of the short stunned state of 1 second, glared at Ian with a sharp gaze.

“Surprising. Truly surprising.”

At those words, Ian curtly replied.

“What is?”

“The fact that a Summoner can be this strong.”

“ ... ”

The Summoner was a class that was created much later in comparison to the pre-existing classes.

To be honest, the fact that Ian had reached over lv 120 as a Summoner class itself was nonsensical, and because Ian’s fighting power was higher than a lv 120’s, the shock that the man felt was much bigger.

On top of that, wasn’t the Summoner the class that was the weakest in PvP even amongst the new classes?

“However, since I as well am not a case that grew from normal common sense... So, in that sense, do I need to think that it’s a possibility for a Summoner to show this much fighting power?”

Ian slightly frowned.

This was because, of course, he was strong, but he thought that it wasn’t to the point that he could praise himself like that.

‘For a guy who would have already experienced a game over if I

just had Ly and Pin has a lot to say... What? Not common sense?’

Ian got back into stance again.

His Vitality had dropped below half, so his gauge was blinking, but that was the same for the opponent as well.

“Get over yourself, and let’s finish this quickly. The path that this hyung has to go is a little busy.”

At those words, the mystery man burst out into laughter with a twisted expression.

“Huhu, get over myself, huh... It is you that seems to be misunderstanding something.”

“What?”

“The opponent that is in front of you right now. That is not me.”

At the unexpected words of the mystery man, Ian’s eyebrows knitted together.

“What are you talking about?”

And the mystery man’s words continued.

“The thing that you are facing is just my ghost.”

“...?!”

“Speaking of which, how unfortunate. I thought that I could easily take care of one laughable Summoner with just my ghost... It looks like this have to be the end for today. I have a quest that I was proceeding with as well, you see.”

It was only then that Ian felt something was weird.

“Come to think of it, the guy’s whole body was constantly shining a dark red light.’

At first, as he thought it was because of a skill or buff effect, so he didn’t pay much attention to it, but after hearing the words that it was a ghost and looking at it again, he started to see weird points.

At that point, the mystery man’s sword suddenly swung towards Ian.

Ba-ang-!

Swords were quickly shot out.

However, Ian, who remained alert, leisurely avoided the attack of the mystery man.

Ian frowned.

“Coward.”

At Ian’s accusation, he smirked.

“I would have been disappointed if you were hit.”

And the form of the mystery man began to grow more and more faint.

“It’s disappointing, but we’ll end it off here today.”

Ian’s expression wrinkled.

“He just does everything as he likes.”

Ian, who was planning on killing his opponent and pick up the dropped items since the situation was like this anyways, felt as if he wasted his time as he watched the disappearing ghost.

“Huhu... Thanks to you, it was fun. It looks like I’ll see you again soon.”

As the mystery man’s body was completely erased from the air, Ian wore a dejected expression.



“Argh, if this was going to happen, then you shouldn’t have come at me from the beginning!”

As he wasted his time and depleted his Vitality for nothing, it was obvious in Ian’s perspective, that he was annoyed.

However, on the other hand, there was also a curiosity towards the opponent.

‘But what exactly is that guy? Since I can’t tell how much fighting power of the main body the ghost has...’

If the main body is much stronger than the ghost, then he couldn’t exclude the chance that it was the top-ranker of Kaimon Empire.

Since the force of the mystery man’s skill was that amazing, and his fighting sense was exceptional.

Either way, Ian moved hurriedly and ran towards the place that Kaizar was tied down.

He did gain an unexpected interference, but the quest was his first priority.

“Hmm...”

However, just then, the white-haired man, who had raised his

head before Ian realized and was watching him, opened his mouth.

- The key is hanging behind that stone wall, kid.

And their gazes momentarily met.

At his piercing, blue eyes, Ian slightly flinched.

“A key?”

- That’s right. You’ll need that in order to release this.

As he spoke, the man shook the heavy lump of metal that handcuffed his hands.

- You’ll need to bring the key quickly. There’s no time.

Even if he didn’t say that, Ian was moving quickly.

This was because he already lost a lot of time with that guy whose identity was unknown and had no idea what was going on outside.

Click-.

And as the large lock was released using the key that he brought

over, the lump of metal dropped to the ground with a heavy sound.

Thud-.

The man repeatedly opened and closed both hands that had become free and mumbled with a low voice.

- Hmm... Has it been ten years...

Ian asked.

“Uhh, old man, how can I release the chain that’s tied around your waist?”

His two hands had become free, but there was still a metal chain wrapped around his waist.

After hearing Ian’s words, he smirked, and grasped the chain with both of his hands.

Ooh-deu-deuk-.

While looking at the man, who surprisingly crushed the chain with both hands and escaped out of it, Ian wore a flustered expression.

‘What, how can such a monster exist?’

The man, who approached a taken aback Ian, asked a question towards him.

- Kid, give me any weapon that you have. If it's a sword, that's the best.

Ian gulped loudly.

‘Isn’t this practically highway robbery?’

However, he couldn’t find the courage to talk back to the monster that crushed a metal chain with his bare hands.

“Just, just one second. I probably have one.”

He remembered the Legendary-rank greatsword that he obtained from Orvil a while ago, but not only would he have regretted giving it, it was an account-bound item anyways.

Ian pulled out a Unique-rank greatsword from his inventory that appeared while he was hunting recently, and handed it over to him.

- Quite a decent sword if it's like this.

And the man nodded his head before speaking to Ian.

- From hereon out, I will take care of it, so go out and rescue the other prisoners.

“Sorry, what...?”

Ian, who thought that he was going to be able to proceed with the quest a little easier now through to a strong NPC, wore a flustered expression as he stared at the man.

However, just then, an iron gate opposite to the stone wall that Ian came in from opened while making a loud noise.

Bang-!

And a man appeared.

He wore a fishy smile as he looked at the two people back and forth.

- Tsk, tsk. A rat snuck in.

Silver armour engraved with the symbol of Kaimon Empire.

And a greatsword that shone blue.

As the man wearing silver armour, Lacromyu, glared at Ian and

raised his sword, the man, who had been standing still up until now, pulled out the sword that he received from Ian and blocked Lacromyu's path.

- Your opponent is me, Lacromyu.

The man, Lacromyu, smirked at Kaizar's words, and responded.

- It would be different if it was ten years ago, but do you think you'll still be able to face me, Kaizar.
- Not ten, but even if a hundred years passed, you won't be able to beat me, Lacromyu.

Whoong-!

At the same time that the two people's conversation progressed, a large echo strong enough to make all of the stone prison vibrate spread out with the two people as the centre of it, and Ian made the most of that chance and quickly escaped to outside of the stone prison.

'I don't really know what it is, but first, let's rescue the rest of the prisoners and then think about it.'

And as Ian escaped to the outside of the stone prison, a system message alerting of the progress situation of the quest popped up.

Ring-.

- 'Rescue the War Prisoners' Quest
- Progress Rate – 1/77 (1.29%)
- Required Condition Achievement Rate – 1/2 (50.00%)

“Team Leader Lee, we need to start airing the trailer now, so get ready quickly!”

“Yes, we’re almost done setting up now. But, are we really going to send out what’s transferred from LB exactly as it is without any post-processing?”

“Where is the time to edit the video and stuff right now? Just send it out immediately as soon as it comes in. The viewers curious about the 2nd update will all gather at the channel that delivers it the quickest anyways.”

YTBC was the broadcasting company that had the highest stock price lately amongst the game-broadcasting channels.

This was the busiest day within the month for the staff in the broadcasting company.

This was because today was the day that they received the trailer from LB Sports for the 2nd large update of the game ‘Kailan’.

The interesting part was that usually in the case of trailer videos for games, it was normally that the cinematic video the game company personally produced was sent out, but the trailer video for this 2nd large update took a completely different method.

That method was that several different versions of videos filming the point of view of the NPCs within the game that were the centre of the 2nd update's scenario will be broadcasted.

The videos that LB Sports was sending out to each broadcasting company were each all points of views of different NPCs, and as this was the first time for a method like this, the economic operators of the broadcasting company were also flustered.

“We'll start sending it out in 20 seconds...!”

“Okay! Start the countdown!”

“13... 12... 11...”

\*

- To think that the first Empire War in ten years would start with a naval battle. Isn't your heart fluttering, Roster.
- It is, Admiral. I think the time has come for us to show our navy's potential, which we've been polishing up since.



What looked to be easily about a dozen battleships filled the sea with black. And on the anchors of those battleships, the symbol of Kaimon Empire was stamped on.

- Roster, how many Luspel battleships did you say were coming close to the Pascal Islands?
- Three galleon ships, Admiral.

The commanding ship boasted an imposing splendor in the middle of a fleet as it split the waters.

Swaaah-!

The two people who stood on its deck shared a conversation with relaxed expressions.

The one that stood a little back and was receiving the words was Roster, the captain of the 1st fleet of Kaimon Empire, and the black-haired man that stood in front of him was Harwin, the Navy Admiral of Kaimon.

- Three galleon ships, huh... The reason why the guys, who were silent up until now, are moving is obvious.
- It's most likely because of the oracle, no?

“Oooh...!”

It was a fiery Friday evening.

Hansoo, who came to a chicken restaurant to celebrate not working over time for the first time in a while, let out an exclamation as he watched the TV that hung on the restaurant’s wall.

“Isn’t that Kailan? What video is that?”

To the friend who asked while he sat next to him, sipping his beer, Hansoo quickly responded.

“That’s right, it’s a Kailan video. It’s the YTBC channel. Apparently, they were going to broadcast the trailer video for this 2nd large update, so I think it’s that?”

Mingyu, who sat on the opposite side of them, turned his head at the two people’s conversation and stared at the TV.

“Keu, this looks like some sort of movie scene. Looking at that flag, it must be Kaimon Empire warships.”

Battleships of majestic splendor.

And while looking at the high-quality video of Kailan that implemented each and every minor detail of the battleships

perfectly, they had completely forgotten to tear through their chicken and began to be immersed in the video.

“Are they planning on having a naval battle with Luspel Empire?”

“It looks like it... Err, I’m a Luspel citizen, but will that war outcome affect the normal users as well?”

“Probably not, no? If the balance is destroyed then the game will become boring... There’s no way that the game company would make it like that.”

The battleships within the screen gradually began to enter between the numerous islands, and soon after, they began to anchor down at one island.

And the battle that began.

Before they even realized, it wasn’t just them, but all of eyes of the people sitting in the chicken restaurant were glued to the TV.

# Chapter 131: Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar (1)

---

In an instant, the Pascal Islands became a madhouse.

Through the fight of Kaizar and Lacromyu, two Supreme Beings, that whole area was reduced to ashes.

Taking that chance, Ian was able to proceed with his quest easier.

Chul-kung-

“Alright, come out this way, everybody! If you go down towards the south, galleon ships should be anchored there!”

As Ian opened the door of the prison with the key that he obtained after catching the guard, the prisoners that were locked inside swarmed out.

- Ooh, thank you.
- His Majesty has not forgotten about us!

Ian, who was riding Halli, quickly went around to every corner of the prison as he rescued the prisoners of Luspel Empire.

In order to get to the centre of the prison, they needed to pass

through a path that was setup as complicated as a maze, but as the structure of the centre area was circular and simpler in comparison, so it didn't take that long to find the prisoners.

Ring-.

- 'Rescue the War Prisoners' Quest
- Progress Rate – 52/77 (67.53%)
- Required Condition Achievement Rate –  $\frac{1}{2}$  (50.00%)

While looking at the message that popped up, Ian mumbled internally.

‘For the Progress Rate, I knew that it was proportionate to the number of prisoners rescued... But what is the required condition? Is there something else besides rescuing Kaizar?’

Even while moving hurriedly, Ian continuously checked the war situation.

At first, because of their inferiority in numerical strength, the war situation looked unfavourable, but through the joining of the rescued prisoners and the three galleon ships, the tables were turning.

Pung-Pung-!

The sound of cannons burst from all directions.

“Charge! Shoot the dregs to death!”

“Waaa...!”

The supporting troops of Luspel Empire pushed into the prison like a flood, and thanks to that, even Ian, who was isolated position-wise, was able to breath easy.

‘Alright, did everybody succeed in breaking into the inner area?’

Ian turned his gaze and checked the faces of his Familiars, Celia, and Paulean.

And lastly, as he checked the face of Laurent, the Captain, Ian felt relieved for the first time.

‘Whew, is it almost over now?’

Ian, who was focused on rescuing the prisoners for a while, slightly checked his Progress Rate.

- Progress Rate – 72/77 (93.50%)

There were only five prisoners left now.

Just when Ian, who was able to relax a little now, was about to let out a sigh of relief, a system message that whipped(?) him popped up for the second time.

- Irregular event activation! A support fleet of Kaimon Empire is approaching Pascal Prison.
- The time remaining until the support fleet of Kaimon Empire arrives – 00:12:54
- Before Harwin, the Admiral of Kaimon Empire's Naval Forces, arrives at Pascal Prison, all prisoners must be aboard the galleon ship in order for all of the required conditions to be fulfilled.

The identity of the required condition Ian didn't know of that was needed in order to complete the quest was revealed.

“... A support fleet of Kaimon Empire? We didn't come here secretly?”

Ian grumbled ‘there's no way that it would have been this easy’ dozens of times to himself, as he immediately got on top of Halli's back and ran like crazy towards the last jail that could be seen at the end of the corridor.

‘Euaah, how do they expect me to board five people onto the ship within 12 minutes?!’

There would be no problem rescuing them.

The problem was, no matter how quickly he moved the prisoners from the jail to the southern seashore where the ship was anchored, it would take over 15 minutes.

However, it wasn't like there was no method.

Ian just needed to block the support fleet of Kaimon himself.

‘Will I be able to block them off...?’

If he was to block off the naval forces of Kaimon Empire from reaching the Pascal Prison for 5 minutes, the prisoners should be able to safely escape the prison and board the galleon ship that was anchored.

‘Since I have no idea how to big the size of the opponent's support fleet is.’

To be honest, it was possible that there wouldn't be a big meaning in knowing the size of the support fleet.

Since it would be impossible for Ian to buy enough time alone even if the fleet was just one or two ships anyways.

However, just then...



A good idea flashed through his mind.

\*

- You coward...!

Lacromyu's body slowly collapsed.

Ian, who stealthily approached Kaizar and Lacromyu's tight, close battle, infiltrated from the back and continuously shot out Magic Spheres.

And its effect was incredibly successful.

Because Kaizar and Lacromyu's fighting powers were at such a similar level, despite having tilted the weight with additions only slightly, the war situation was turned around in an instant.

Of course, the fact that Lacromyu's strength was quite drained due to the long battle was also one of the reasons why he collapsed this easily.

"Coward, my ass. You idiot, since when was there such a thing as being a coward in a war? As long as you win, that's the best thing."

After sneering at Lacromyu, who was dying, Ian urgently spoke to Kaizar.

“Kaizar, please help me a little.”

At Ian’s words, Kaizar asked with a puzzled expression.

It seemed he was disappointed that he couldn’t finish off with a win on a proper one-on-one battle, as his voice was low.

- What do you mean?

“My que... No, a Kaimon Empire fleet from the east is trying to land. We must block them until the prisoners get on the ship safely.”

At those words, both of Kaizar’s eyes slightly widened.

- No, how did Kaimon Empire know and already send reinforcements...?

“As the size is quite big, it’s impossible for me to take care of alone. I need your help, Kaizar.”

The plan that Ian was thinking of was exactly this.

If he could have Kaizar, who was so strong that his fighting power couldn’t be guessed, with him, he thought that there was a decent chance of winning.

Captain Laurent, and Royal Guard Paulean. And with the support troops as well, they should be able to buy enough time with their opponent as the Kaimon fleet.

Kaizar willingly nodded his head.

- Alright, I will go. By the way, by any chance, do you not have another sword besides this one?

“Sorry?”

Kaizar slightly lifted the Unique-rank sword that he received from Ian as he smiled embarrassedly.

- As you can see, it broke.

During the fierce battle with Lacromyu, the Durability of the item had completely depleted and had broken.

Ian wore a dumbfounded expression.

‘No, I didn’t repair it beforehand, so there wasn’t much Durability left... But it definitely wasn’t to the point that it would deplete this quickly...’

In Kailan, as long as the Durability of an item isn’t completely

depleted, it could be continuously repaired and used, but if it is completely depleted once, it became impossible to restore it.

In other words, it meant that the sword that was held in Kaizar's hands had become a completely useless lump of scrap metal now.

‘Euh... Still, if I put that up in the auction house, it was an item I could have received about 200 thousand gold for...’

A sigh automatically came out of the mouth of Ian, who suddenly wasted money.

“Whew...”

However, no matter how frustrated he was, the one that was disappointed now was not Kaizar, but Ian.

Ian began to thoroughly dig through his inventory.

‘Amongst the items leftover, was there a sword that useful enough?’

However, no matter how much he looked, the only greatsword he had amongst his items was the Legendary item that he received from his battle with Orvil, the ‘Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir’.

‘Eh, what the heck. Who knows, there might be some sort of method.’

As the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir was an account-bound item, Kaizar would definitely not be able to use it, but Ian first pulled out the item.

“I do happen to have this...”

Ian slurred the end of his sentence as he held up the greatsword.

And both eyes of Kaizar, who saw the Legendary-rank item that gushingly overflowed with glamour, shone.

- Ooh... It has truly been a while since I've seen a sword as good as this.

“But there's one problem.”

- Problem?

“This sword is an item that is bound to me. You probably won't be able to use it, Kaizar.”

Disappointment flashed through both of Kaizar's eyes.

- Hmm... Is there really no way? If it's that sword, it definitely won't lack in slaughtering the rookies of Kaimon...

Ian replied without much thought.

“There is a method.”

- What is it?

“You just need to come in as my retainer. Since retainers can also use the items that are bound to me.”

- Oh, really?

“...?”

Ian wore a dumbfounded expression.

‘Really? What, is he saying that he would be willing to come in as my retainer or what?’

Kaizar was an important NPC to the point that the leader of the royal guards, Hellaim, even said that he was someone that was absolutely necessary in order to win the war.

On top of that, he was an amazingly super strong being to the point that his fighting power examined with both eyes couldn’t even be estimated.

There was no way that he, who definitely had to be a high-rank aristocrat or a knight affiliated with the imperial family, could be Ian's retainer.

However, at that moment, a system message that Ian couldn't believe popped up right in front of his eyes.

- 'Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar' wishes to be your retainer.

“...?”

Ian turned his head towards Kaizar with a dazed expression.

Kaizar pressed Ian.

- What are you doing instead of accepting it? There's no time.

“Kaizar, you weren't an aristocrat?”

Ian thought that Kaizar would definitely be a higher-ranking aristocrat than him.

However, his response that followed was a highlight.

- I'm a commoner.

“...”

‘No, what kind of commoner speaks informally to an aristocrat so naturally?’

Ian grumbled to himself, but in order to accept Kaizar’s proposal quickly, he pulled out the Seal of the Lord.

“You can’t return it later.”

At Ian’s words, Kaizar answered with a disgruntled expression.

- That depends on how well you do.

“Ha...”

A sigh automatically escaped his mouth, but as he couldn’t kick away the chance to gain such an incredible retainer like him, he immediately proceeded with the contract.

Whoong-

A light shone from the seal that Ian held in his hand and seeped into Kaizar’s wrist.

- You have gained ‘Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar’ as a retainer.



- As retainer 'Kaizar's Talent Rank is 'Mythological'-rank, his current stats are 'Legendary'-rank.
- Current situation of 'Ian's retainers: 6/20

And Ian, who checked the system message, let out a shout of delight internally.

'My, Mythological-rank? This crazy...!'

As Celia's Talent Rank was Heroic-rank, he vaguely expected Kaizar's rank to be over a Legendary-rank, but after actually checking the words Mythological-rank, it didn't really hit him yet.

'How high are his stats exactly?'

The moment he was about to check Kaizar's stats with a fluttering heart, Kaizar immediately snatched the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir that was held in Ian's hands and threw his body outside of the prison.

- You have given the item, the 'Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir', to retainer 'Kaizar'.

At the following system message that popped up, Ian couldn't even be dumbfounded, and went to the point of dejection.

‘No, give to him, my ass! This is robbery, how could it be giving!’

However, right now, there was no time for Ian to even be mad.

And with one Legendary-rank item, he had obtained a Mythological-rank NPC, so to be honest, it wasn't a loss on his part.

- Lord guy, you said there was no time. Move quickly.

At Kaizar's scolding(?), Ian followed him with a flabbergasted expression.

‘No, in what country is a retainer like that?’

Ian followed Kaizar as he kept complaining to himself.

However, Ian, who belatedly checked Kaizar's level, couldn't help but follow behind him without a word.

- Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar, Lv 246

# Chapter 132: Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar

## (2)

---

“Hmm, look who it is, isn’t it Kaizar?”

Roster, the Captain of the 1st fleet of Kaimon Empire.

His two eyes slightly narrowed.

This was because he saw an unexpected face as soon as he landed on Pascal.

“Huhu, long time, no see, Roster.”

While staring at Roster’s dangling left arm, Kaizar grinned.

Roster, who became one-armed due to Kaizar’s sword ten years ago, loathed him incredibly.

“The fact that you are standing here... Must mean that we are one step too late.”

“That’s right, not just one step, but you’re very late.”

“Has the bladesmith died ...”

Roster spoke to himself.

The bladesmith he spoke of was referring to Lacromyu, who was killed by Kaizar.

And Ian, who belatedly arrived at the seashore behind Kaizar, came down from Halli's back.

Ian stopped by the battlefield on his way, and brought Pin and Ly with him as well.

“Hmm, who is that punk kid, Kaizar?”

At Roster's question, Kaizar smirked as he replied.

“He's our Lord guy.”

The face of Ian, who heard that from the back, wrinkled, but it wasn't like Kaizar to pay attention to such things.

“...?”

Roster stared at Ian with a quizzical expression.

Regardless of that, Kaizar unsheathed his sword and lifted it.

Seu-reu-reung-!

The black blade of the Legendary-rank greatsword began to shine white as the sunlight reflected on it.

Roster glared at Kaizar.

“Even if it is you, it will be too much for you to face this many troops...”

However, Kaizar didn’t show any interest and walked forward one step at a time.

Stomp-Stomp-.

And after raising his sword high, he swung it in the air with all of his strength.

Baang-!

A sound similar to that of an explosion followed after.

In the sandy beach in front of the Kaimon Empire fleet, a large furrow was dug deep laterally.

Kaizar grinned.

“If you cross over this, you’re going to die, Roster.”

While looking at that form, Ian, who stood towards the back, gulped instead.

‘Our retainer is bursting with energy...!’

However, just then, a man got off of a Kaimon Empire ship that anchored late.

Accordingly, Kaizar and Ian’s gaze naturally turned towards him.

This was because Kaizar knew him, while for Ian, it was because his appearance was so remarkable.

‘What the hell, that person is so cool!’

A bright-red navy uniform and white hair that grew stylishly, as well as a white mustache.

At the form of the man, whose aura could be felt even from a distance, Ian watched him with an interested expression.

The one who opened his mouth first within the silence was Kaizar.

And different from up until now, Kaizar’s expression looked quite serious.

“Harwin... Based on the fact that even you came, old man, this was intended.”

At Kaizar’s words, Roster bristled.

“Don’t talk so thoughtlessly, Kaizar. He is the admiral.”

“That, he’s your admiral, that has nothing to do with me.”

Harwin slowly walked out to the front.

Paulean, Celia, and so on, who lead the battle in the prison to victory during that time, as well as the support troops of Luspel Empire, gathered behind Ian one by one.

An explosive situation occurred.

Ian’s gaze turned towards the troops of Kaimon Empire, who roughly looked to be about an estimate of thousands.

‘They’re numerous indeed. It looks like they have about ten times our troops...’

The fortunate thing was that the path towards the prison from the seashore was not that wide, so there wouldn’t be a situation where a lot of troops clashed into each other at once.

It was a topography that couldn't help but be a disadvantage to the others.

In the middle of all this, Ian remembered Karceus' Egg, which he had kept in his inventory well.

'If all those troops are caught, then the God Dragon's egg could possibly hatch.'

And for the first time in a while, he checked the information of Karceus' Egg.

\*

Karceus' Egg

Level: 0

Classification: Egg

Rank: Legendary (Inherent)

Personality: Unknown

Hatching (28%)

The egg that Karceus, the God Dragon that existed in ancient legends, left behind.

Karceus' egg has begun to hatch.



For War Dragon Karceus to break out of the egg, it needs the strength of a powerful war.

Whenever the Summoner possessing the egg defeats a strong opponent, Karceus will gain a little bit of strength and eventually break out of the egg.

It's clearly stated that its with strong opponents, but the hatching rate definitely went up much higher when he won against human-like opponents rather than when he caught monsters.

This could be told just from looking at the hatching rate that went up over 5% when it was in its early 20% up until before the battle with the guards of the prison finished.

Ian developed a greed.

‘I feel like I just need to last 5 more minutes... It's such a waste to just leave...’

On the other hand, while Ian was thinking of this and that, Harwin, who walked out to the front, slowly opened his wrinkled mouth.

“Kaizar, today seems to be your memorial service day.”

“Huhu, I don’t know. We’ll have to see about that.”

Harwin’s mouth twitched.

“You, your lack of mannerisms hasn’t changed.”

“Then what about you, old man, based on the fact that you dragged your old bones and personally appeared, are you implying that you’ll carry out a full-out war?”

Rather than a response, Harwin raised his right hand straight up.

“Attack! Dispose of the dregs of Luspel without leaving a single one!”

“Aaah!”

A loud war cry.

Along with that, the fierce battle began.

As this was the first time Ian fought in such a large-sized battle, he also felt himself get a little excited.

“Ddukdae, tie down as many as you can with Abyss Hole!”

Deu-reuk- Deu-reu-reuk-.

Ddukdae, who nodded his head at Ian's command, slowly walked forward.

Thud-Thud-

And as soon as the opponent troops drew close, Ddukdae spread both of his arms forward with strength.

Kwaah-!

A whirlwind of abyss formed at the centre of the ends of both of Ddukdae's fists.

A rough estimate of what looked to be about dozens of soldiers got sucked into the current.

The average level of the soldiers was around 120-130, but it seemed that as their ranks were low, their resistance to status condition effects was incredibly low.

Ddukdae's Abyss Hole and Ian's continuous Current Proliferation was incredibly effective to the opponents like that.

Za-zap- Za-za-zap-!

The dozens of Kaimon Empire soldiers' feet were tied down in an instant.

Just like he always did, Ian tried to let out a command for Lake's Breath to be poured on top of that.

However, just then, a shadow, who was one step faster than Ian, jumped in from the air.

“Haaat!”

The identity of the shadow was Ian's retainer(?) Kaizar, and after jumping into the middle of the opponents, whose feet were tied down, he exploded darkness in every direction.

Baang-!

And Ian knew the identity of that skill very well.

‘That, that's the Inherent Ability attached to the sword I gave him!’

There was an additional effect called ‘Darkness Emission’ attached to the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir, the Legendary-rank weapon that Ian passed over to him.

When attacking with Darkness Emission, there was an additional effect with a 30% chance to emit darkness in all directions, and that effect was fearsome.

- Retainer 'Kaizar' has used 'Darkness Emission' and has dealt 27,598 damage to the 'Soldier of Kaimon Empire'.
- Due to the effect of 'Darkness Emission', the Defensive Power of the 'Soldier of Kaimon Empire' will decrease by 30% for 3 seconds.

Darkness Emission fundamentally gained damage of 250% of the caster's Offensive Power.

On top of that, as the additional effect of Defensive Power reduction also burst, the soldiers of Kaimon Empire began to melt down like butter on a hot pan.

Kaizar's additional attack followed.

Kaizar, who landed right in the middle of the enemy camp, held the greatsword with both hands and chanted lowly.

“Pok-ryong-cham-!”

Bang-Ba-ba-bang-!

Smoke from the bright-red sword spread out in all directions with Kaizar as the centre.

And at that moment...

The party of over a dozen Kaimon Empire soldiers turned into

black smoke and dispersed into the air.

Ian let out an exclamation before he even realized.

“Keuh...!”

The pleasant feeling when a countless number of system messages notifying him of his obtained EXP fill up all at once!

Kaizar’s words lodged into the ears of Ian, who was feeling happiness.

“Alright, our Lord, that was nice just now.”

Ian, whose fortune box was broken, replied bluntly.

“What was?”

“The thing that the lump of rock just used. What is that, you know, that Abyss whatever.”

“...”

Worst of all, Kaizar didn’t see his Current Proliferation, which hit artistically, and just praised Ddukdae’s Abyss Hole.

For a moment, Ian was almost offended, but while looking at the

EXP gauge bar that was still going up, he soothed his heart.

‘That’s right, still, at least he didn’t call me Lord guy.’

Following that, the streams of purple light that sucked into Ian’s inventory made him go into a happy mood again.

“Ly, Pin! That way for us!”

- Understood, Owner.

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

Even while Ian faced the empire soldiers, he glanced in Kaizar’s direction.

And every time he did, he needed to swallow his exclamations down.

‘There seriously is no other monster...’

Suh-guk-!

At one swing of Kaizar’s sword, the empire soldiers turned into a grey light and disappeared.

His fundamental attack itself was strong as well, but if Darkness Emission burst out two or three times one after another, the party was completely ruined in an instant.

‘I can’t just stay still as well.’

It was just because Kaizar’s active role was so amazing, but Ian was also quite splendidly distinguishing himself in the war with soldiers in the lv 130 range as his opponents.

“Familiar Healing!”

And along with Celia, who was magnificently supporting the Familiars from the back, and Paulean, who boasted incredible endurance expected of a knight from the imperial family’s knights and was blocking the opponents from the front, he smoothly faced the soldiers of Kaimon Empire.

However, it wasn’t like the whole war situation was good.

This was because the number of Kaimon Empire soldiers was so high.

As the troops of a numerical difference of over ten times endlessly pushed in, the soldiers of Luspel Empire eventually began to be pushed back little by little.

Ian slightly checked the quest time.



‘It should be time for the prisoners to have slowly arrived at the ship now...’

It seemed that Ian’s thoughts were read.

A system message that Ian was waiting for popped up in front of his eyes.

Ring-.

- You have completed the ‘Rescue the War Prisoners (1)’ Quest.
- Clear Rank – A
- You have obtained 2000 Specialty Points.
- You have obtained 24,859,000 EXP.
- You have obtained 15,000 Fame.
- You have leveled up. You have reached lv 124.

At the message that notified him of his level-up that came up along with the enormous amount of EXP, Ian wore a broad smile.

He had already leveled up 2 levels since coming to Pascal Islands.

“Huehue... Our retainer is a goose that lays golden eggs...!”

His sorrows towards the retainer who treated him roughly melted away and disappeared like snow, and he acted as if it never existed.

Ian needed to slip away from the enemies now and return to the ship, but as the EXP in front of his eyes felt wasted, he wasn't able to easily turn his feet.

‘Ah... I want to fight a little more, though...’

However, Ian's contemplation couldn't continue any further.

This was because a following quest popped up.

Ring-.

Rescue the War Prisoners (2)

Connected quest.

You have succeeded in safely boarding the war prisoners onto the ship.

However, a Kaimon Empire fleet unexpectedly appeared at Pascal Islands.

Slip away from them and safely return the prisoners to the Capital of Luspel.

Quest Difficulty Level: SS

Quest Requirement: A user that has successfully completed Rescue the War Prisoners (1) Quest.

Time Limit: 10 days

Reward – Specialty Points 2000

Imperial Family Contributions (Payment depending on the clear rank)

Fame (Payment depending on the clear rank)

# Chapter 133: Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar (3)

---

The trailer videos of the new update.

Those were driving a large effect.

This was because it wasn't just the five major game broadcasting companies, but LB Company had sent out trailer videos from the point of views of different NPCs each for even in places like small internet broadcasting companies.

Thanks to that, the users selected different channels as they watched, and they were able to experience entertainment in their own way for each one.

The excitement could be felt even from looking at the hundreds of chatting rooms that were being created in the official community.

- Wow, this is my first time seeing such a large-scale war like this. It's no joke.
- No kidding. The soldiers that seem to roughly look to be in the hundreds in numbers... However, I heard that the empire soldiers' levels are also really high, whether in Kaimon Empire or Luspel Empire, is that true?
- Yes, it's true. From what I know, the soldiers should all be at least over lv 120 as well. I'm carefully guessing that the officers or knights are probably even over lv 150...

- The words of the person above is right. I received an Empire Quest recently for the first time and carried it out, but the executive knight that gave me the Empire Quest then was about lv 170. Truly enormous.
- What, really? I'm really jealous of you, too. Empire Quest... I'm a loser that hasn't even been able to hit lv 80 yet...
- My level is also only two digits. Haha I was just able to receive the Empire Quest early because I was a little lucky. Anyways, it's tremendous. If a weak Warrior like me squeezed into there, it looks like I'll be able to meet the black screen right away.

For this 2nd large-scale update, it wasn't like the 1st large-scale update, where the method was to close the server at a specified time and proceed with it.

Along with the large-scale trailer videos, specific events will be invoked here and there, and while sending out those videos, Kailan as a whole will naturally go into its new state.

On top of that, it was a situation where the contents of the update weren't announced beforehand.

Content related to the new update could only be found out by watching the trailer videos, so to say almost all of the Kailan users' eyes were on the trailer videos wasn't an exaggeration.

However, it wasn't like the tons of videos that were recorded had evenly high views.

The videos where most of the users' interests were on could be summarized to about three of them.

The first was a video with the start being the fog of the central continent clearing up, and Luspel Empire and Kaimon Empire leading their own punitive forces and passing through Sky Highlands for the full-scale war.

The second was a video of a siege warfare between a large army of Luspel Empire that had advanced into Kaimon Empire through the northern continent and the Kaimon defending army that was protecting Fort Yokram against them.

The last was a video filled with the naval battle between the two Empires happening in the Collon Sea that was south of the continent.

Like this, the views of the three videos were overwhelmingly higher in comparison to the other videos.

Especially, without consideration of the camp, the video of the naval war of Collon Sea, which showed the most liveliness and the fresh beauty of the video could be appreciated, recorded the highest views even amongst the three videos.

- Keuh, for real, where could the limit of virtual reality be? Take a look at that splashing water against the sides of the boat.
- Is that really important right now? That soldier just jumped into the sea and is even swimming.

- Wait a minute, but guys, where did Ian, who was fighting at Pascal Islands just a moment ago, go? I suddenly don't see him in the video.
- You're right, even just a moment ago, he was riding his Griffin as he flew around.

And inevitably, Ian couldn't help but become a tremendous celebrity.

With the lv 50-range rookie league as the start, as his active role video in the territory war went public on YouCast, Ian, who began to quickly gain fame, completely became a celebrity with the Attack King event and the recent trailer videos.

Ian's fame had expanded to the point he was no less than the named users that were within the top 20 of the Korean server ranking before he even realized.

Especially, amongst the Summoner users that frequented the official community, it was to the point you were a secret agent if you didn't know about Ian.

- Where has our Ian's Pin and Ly gone? I want to see them... The NPC that YTBC channel 1 is showing seems to have suddenly gone far off, as Ian has disappeared.
- Hey, go to channel 3. It's practically a firsthand camera of Ian there.
- Hul, really? I should go there right away. Thank you.

Especially, because, in the opening part of this video, Ian's every movement was all shot, and even each scene where Ian managed his Familiars was all spread out, users even learned about the names of Ian's Familiars.

On top of that, Ly and Pin, who handled the lv 130-range soldiers almost like children as they showed their overwhelming fighting power, couldn't help but be a big topic in the conversations amongst the Summoner users.

- Guys, but, you know, Ly amongst Ian's Familiars. That's the Blood-red Maned Wolf that appeared in the rookie league a long time ago that has evolved, right?
- It seems that everybody is guessing that's the case... But we can't be sure. Firstly, I'm seeing it as a negative. There's no way that he could have evolved it into such a nonsensically strong Familiar from a normal wolf.
- I agree with the words of the person above. To be honest, I'm also raising a Blood-red Maned Wolf. I'm not boasting, but I raised to over lv 90 right now, and it's a Familiar that I'm pouring my affection towards, but it still has no intentions of evolving. For it to be a Rare-rank even up to lv 90... I wonder if it's really going to even evolve...
- Hul, your Blood-red Maned Wolf popped up as evolution possible? For me, as soon as I evolved it, it popped up as evolution impossible from a Rare-rank... TT
- Yes, it's at least popped up as evolution possible for me. Though, the problem is that it has absolutely no intentions of evolving... If it had popped up as evolution impossible like you instead, then I would have changed after using it a little, but this is basically just false hope.



- Speaking of which, what level exactly could Ian be? He definitely looks to be over lv 110... Could it be possible that he's close to lv 120?
- No-no, how could a Familiar already hit lv 120. No matter how high he is, wouldn't he be at about 115?
- No, then how do you explain that fighting power? It's to the point that it would be hard to believe even if you said a lv 130 was as strong as that.
- That... is true as well.

All sorts of assumptions towards Ian began to go rampant, and Ian, who was a deity in just the Summoner's bulletin board for a while, was slowly becoming a topic between the users of other classes.

The effect of the trailer videos was that enormous.

On the other hand, Ian, who had absolutely no idea on this situation, was showing a battle that was basically similar to balancing on a tightrope, and was sweating hard.

The battle itself being so numerically disadvantageous and being a dogfight on top of that played its part. However, above anything else, they were fighting without rest for about four hours because of that.

“Current Proliferation!”

Za-zap- Za-za-zap-!

Ian's Current Proliferation grazed by the soldiers of Kaimon Empire.

However, just then, an unexpected system message popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

- Intermediate-rank Lightning Spirit 'Jjaekee's Summoning Duration Time has completely been used up so it has been withdrawn.
- From now on, Lightning-type spirit skills cannot be used.

“Hul, what the hell, all 9 hours have already passed by?”

The Summoning Duration Time of Jjaekee, an Intermediate-rank spirit, was about 9 hours.

The fact that Jjaekee has been withdrawn meant that 9 hours of combat that started from the prison had passed.

‘Ha, this is annoying... Do I need to slowly learn another skill besides Current Proliferation now?’

There was a reason why Ian didn't learn a different attack skill besides Current Proliferation this whole time.

This was because he knew that he needed to use only one skill all the time to raise the skill's Proficiency quickly, and bring out even more efficient DPS (Damage Per Second).

The result of that was the level of Current Proliferation was in the early phase of lv 9 right now.

Because he just had 1 level remaining until he hit the max level, which was lv 10, he hadn't learned a different attack skill, but he felt that it was slowly getting to the point where he needed to consider a different attack skill.

‘But then again, its Proficiency is only going up as much as an eyelash now anyways... Since it's not like the destructive power between lv 9 and lv 10 have that big of a difference, so I should look for a different skill as well.’

Until lv 90, new skills were formed by units of 30 levels.

However, after lv 100, in order to obtain new skills, a special quest needed to be cleared or new skill books must be gained through monsters.

Or, there was also the method of raising contributions towards their specific class tower and purchase skills in the tower with contributions.

‘But, first, after I escape here...’

The following connected quest was incredibly hard befitting of a double S-rank Difficulty Level.

The content of the quest itself was quite simple, as he just needed to lead the three ships and return to Isreun Harbour, but if they accidentally got caught by the Kaimon Empire fleet, who were persistently following them and were continuously pouring out attacks, he wouldn't be able to help but fail the quest just like that.

“Baron, there's a Kaimon Empire flag to the front of the starboard!”

The shout of a crewmember from the deck could be heard.

Ian's face immediately contorted.

“Ahoo, I don't know about chasing us from the back, but how exactly did they appear from the front there? We headed out first.”

To Ian, who was grumbling to himself, Kaizar, who was next to him, scolded him.

“That, we went the wrong route as we continued to fight, while they cut across and came straight, so it makes sense.”

At those words, a sigh automatically escaped from Ian's mouth.

“Whew...”

Kaizar's last harsh criticism lodged into Ian's ear.

“Do some work, Lord guy!”

\*

A clear sky with not one cloud.

Along with the greeting of Fall, the season of “high sky and plump horses”, the festival at Korea University also began.

And today was the first day of the festival.

The students of the virtual reality department were moving busily.

“Yoohyun, there's a box of beer over there, right?”

“Yes, hyung!”

“Come over here carrying that!”

For the duration of the festival, the virtual reality department decided to leave the lecture room open as a bar.

The opening time of the bar was 6 o'clock in the evening.

Because of that, the department students were all moving busily during the day.

“Mina, did you buy all of the bar snacks that I told you to buy earlier?”

“Yes, oppa. I just took Sucheol and Miyoung with me and were just returning from the mart.”

“Good, good, alright!”

The one in charge of the VR department's bar was the eldest hyung Sewon.

After rallying the male students and setting up the table, as well as covering up messy areas with a white tent, the form of a quite plausible bar began to appear.

“Yo, Yoohyun.”

“Yes?”

“But why did this Jinsung say that he wasn't coming out to the festival at all?”

The department bar was an event that the whole department was participating in, but participation itself wasn't a requirement.

On top of that, because there were a lot of people that weren't participating even aside from Jinsung, there wouldn't really be a problem with him not coming out.

Since it was a system where the people who didn't participate couldn't receive their share of the profits earned from the bar, it wasn't unfair either.

However, the people that weren't participating were just not assisting with the bar preparations, but were already at the school and enjoying the festival, but as they saw nothing of Jinsung yet, Sewon had just asked.

“Hmm... I did already convince him, so he'll probably come out tomorrow...”

“Tomorrow? What is tomorrow's event again?”

“The E-sports competition against the departments. Amongst the game events there, from what I know, there's five that Jinsung dug through like a cripple alone.”

Sewon was delighted.

“Ah, really? Then, can our department aim for a box of hard liquor this time?”

Sewon, who remembered the hard liquor that was the comprehensive prize for the winners of the E-sports competition, licked his lips.

“Probably? If Jinsung just comes out...”

“Well, if he said he’d come, then he probably will. He’s not a guy that doesn’t keep his promises, no?”

“That’s true.”

“But, he should have come out to school on a day like this and have some fun, that Jinsung is quite a nasty cripple.”

At those words, Yoohyun smirked.

“Did you just find that out?”

“Well, not just now... But what is he doing lately in Kailan? He hasn’t even appeared in the Manor much.”

The moment that Yoohyun was about to respond, Mina, who abruptly appeared from the back, opened her mouth instead.

“Oppa, do you not watch game channels lately?”



“Huh? What game channel?”

“Just any game channel. Whether it’s YTBC or ATN or...”

“What about it?”

And unknown words continued from Mina’s mouth.

“Jinsung is enhancing our department’s prestige lately.”

“Enhancing our department’s prestige? What’s that? It’s not even enhancing national prestige...”

While hearing the two people’s conversation, laughter suddenly flowed from Yoohyun’s mouth.

He understood the meaning of Mina’s words.

“It’s exactly as I said, oppa. He is raising the status of our department, Lord Ian!”

# Chapter 134: Title Promotion (1)

---

In conclusion, Ian's quest finished successfully.

At the risky last moment, the naval forces of Luspel Empire that were stationed at Isreun came out to meet Ian's ship.

The navy of Kaimon, who persistently chased after Ian, chose to turn the bow of their ship for now, and immediately, Ian, who was worried that a full-scale war would occur, was able to let out a sigh of relief.

The reason that Ian was relieved was not because of the dangers that occurred through a full-scale war.

'Whew, if a full-scale war happened right away, how many more hours would I have had to game from now on?'

Ian's continuous game time was already passing 38 hours.

Even now, because of the surging fatigue he felt throughout his whole body, his eyes were half-closed.

More than anything else, Ian wanted to close his eyes for a bit after quickly returning to the Capital and completing the quest.

Swaah-.

With the galleon ship that Ian was on as the head, the fleet of Luspel Empire was able to safely arrive at the harbour of Isreun.

Clunk-.

The anchor of the ship, which docked at the harbour, went down, and Ian led his heavy body and walked out of it.

Paulean, who had gotten off first, wore a satisfied smile as he pulled Ian's hand.

“Good work, Baron. You've truly done a great job.”

At Paulean's words, Ian weakly nodded his head as he replied.

“Whew, great work as well, Paulean. We still somehow managed to return.”

At Ian's drooping words, Kaizar, who got off behind him, smirked.

“What, how much did you fight to have absolutely no energy, when I was that age, I was still lively even if I fought without resting for a couple days and nights.”

At Kaizar's scolding, Ian wore a dumbfounded expression.

‘No, how big of an age difference do we have for him to say that?’

This was because, from the outside, Kaizar only looked to be in his early 30s at most.

At their first encounter, he couldn’t guess his age because of his shaggy, tangled white hair, but right now, where he even had on proper attire, he looked to only be about the same age as Ian.

As even his white hair was straightened up well, rather even a mysterious aura was being displayed.

“Then, how old are you, retainer? It looks like you don’t have that much of a difference with me...”

At Ian’s grumbling, Kaizar replied with a poker-face.

“I’m 120 years old.”

“...?”

As Ian stared at Kaizar with an expression of disbelief, he smirked as he continued his words.

“Ah, there might be a 5-year margin of error. It’s already been over several decades since I’ve roughly counted my age.”

Ian couldn't help but accept it with a bitter expression.

“I, I see...”

And he mumbled internally.

‘Sure, well, it’s a game, so it’s possible...’

Catching a glimpse of his retainer, who was monster-like in many ways(?), Ian shook his head.

“Take good care of your retainer from now on, Lord guy.”

“...”

Paulean, who watched the two people bicker for a moment, laughed as he opened his mouth.

“Alright, either way, let’s go to the Capital right away. His Majesty is probably waiting.”

At Paulean’s words, the two people nodded and moved their feet.

“Yes, alright.”

“We’ll do that.”

\*

The Capital of Luspel Empire.

And in the very centre was the office of King Celas.

Celas greeted Ian, who returned, incredibly warmly.

“Oh! Good work, Sir Ian. I heard that you’ve carried out the duty brilliantly.”

“That’s right, Your Majesty. We’ve rescued all of the prisoners of Pascal and returned.”

It was the same as last time, but when it was time to report the results of an Empire Quest, Ian’s body moved on its own regardless of his will.

Chak-Cha-chak-!

While staring at his body that showed courteousness towards the King with disciplined actions, Ian, barely grasping onto his tired mind, waited for the quest to be completed.

‘Why is this imperial family’s etiquette so complicated? There’s no reason for such realism...’

When Ian played a game, he looked more at the general planning ability rather than the fine details.

Because of that, to him, small details like this were even to the point of being bothersome.

“In our plan to rescue the prisoners of Pascal Prison this time...”

He even began to report the content of the quest on his own now!

Ian was a little dumbfounded, but it seemed as his mind was blank, he couldn't even think of anything.

‘Still, since everything is being done for me, it is comfortable...’

However, it was something that wasn't much of a merit to just Ian, but to be honest, there were a lot of users that were enthusiastic about Kailan's perfect detail that was perverted-like.

“Remarkable, remarkable indeed. Good work. You've done much better than I expected. As expected of you, Sir Ian.”

“Thank you, Your Majesty.”

Celias, who heard all of Ian's report content, smiled brightly, and a notification alerting Ian of the completion of the quest popped up in front of his two eyes.

Ring-.

- You have completed the 'Rescue the War Prisoners (2)' Quest.
- You have succeeded all connected quests.
- Clear Rank – S
- You have obtained 5000 Specialty Points.
- You have obtained 42,349,000 EXP.
- You have obtained 25,000 Fame.
- You have leveled up. You have reached lv 126.
- You have successfully carried out your first connected Empire Quest.
- Your contributions towards the imperial family of Luspel Empire have increased by 1000.

Even for the two eyes of Ian, which were saturated with exhaustion, causing them to be sunken in, life returned to them whenever the reward list popped up.

‘It was tiring, but to have leveled up like crazy in the 120 level-



range... If it's this much, I think it's worth doing.'

A satisfied smile hung from his lips.

However, the two eyes of Ian, who had checked that everything including the quest reward came in, slowly started to close.

The fatigue that was being suppressed with his mental strength swarmed in an instant the moment he saw the words 'quest completed'.

'Ah... I need to go lie down in my bed...'

However, regardless of Ian's will, Ian slowly began to lose his hold on his mind.

- The analysis result of user 'Ian's body signal has been decided as 'Sleeping' state.
- Following the policy of the game service, user 'Ian' will be logged out.

And Ian could faintly hear Celas' voice.

"Listen, Sir Ian! Pull yourself together!"

\*

The front of Jinsung's studio apartment.

Harin carefully pressed the doorbell.

Ding-dong-!

However, even after quite some time, not even a trace could be felt from Ian's house.

‘Where has this dude gone... Is he asleep? There's no reason for him not be home at this time...’

Harin, who heard the word that a bar would open at the virtual reality department for the school festival, went to have fun with her friend.

However, after hearing that Jinsung didn't come to school today, she immediately got up from her spot and had come to Jinsung's house.

‘It's only 9 o'clock in the evening right now... Is he already asleep?’

Because it was set-up that even if he was gaming inside the capsule, if the doorbell was pressed, a notification would go in, but the fact that there wasn't an indication of a person's presence meant that Jinsung was actually not home or he was asleep.

As Jinsung was quite a light sleeper, Harin, who made the decision that he had gone out somewhere momentarily, opened the door lock and began to press the passcode.

Beep-Bee-beep-

After last time, where they decided to leave the extra capsule at Jinsung's place and have Harin use it, Jinsung told Harin the house passcode as well.

To be honest, she had just pressed the bell once 'out of courtesy'.

"He seems to have gone out for a moment... Should I at least make dinner?"

Harin somehow felt like she had become a wife, and while humming, she entered Jinsung's house.

Bee-reep- Bee-ree-reep-!

As Harin closed the door, the door lock automatically locked, and the sensor lights in the entrance turned on.

"From what I saw last time, for someone who lives alone, he seemed to have bought quite a lot of different things..."

Harin put her bag down off to one side of the room and headed to the kitchen.

However, the blue light of Ian's capsule that was turned on caught her eyes.

‘Huh...? That’s a light that turns on only if a person is sitting inside that capsule.’

Harin, who wore a slightly flustered expression, slowly approached Ian's capsule.

“It seems that the game is turned off... But why is he like this? Is the new capsule model already malfunctioning?”

Harin mumbled as she pressed the open button of the capsule.

As she did so, the capsule let out a hissing noise as its door tilted open upwards.

And shortly after, Harin swallowed a gulp of air before she even realized.

This was because Jinsung, who was in an unconscious(?) state inside the capsule, had his eyes closed while his body was stretched out.

“What, what the hell? Jinsung, why are you sleeping here like this?”

Harin shook Jinsung's shoulder to try and wake him up.

However, Jinsung didn't even move an inch.

Her large eyes grew even wider.

“Jinsung, are you unwell? Are you sure you haven't gotten sick from gaming for so long?”

As Jinsung didn't wake up no matter how much she shook him, a flustered Harin contemplated whether she needed to at least call the emergency room.

However, the moment she turned on her smartphone and was about to press the number...

Deu-reu-rung-Pheeew-.

Soon, the sound of Jinsung snoring could be heard, and while smirking, Harin put down her smartphone.

“Ha...”

Holding in her laughter, Harin wrapped Jinsung's neck with one of her arms in order to pull him out of the capsule.

“Jinsung, if you sleep here, you'll get an intervertebral disk... Get

up! You need to go sleep in your bed.”

With a heart of a mom seen when watching the TV who woke up a young, sleeping child that had fallen asleep on the couch, Harin strained to pull Jinsung out of the capsule.

However, there was no way that Harin, a female, would be able to easily pull out Jinsung’s body, which was stretched out limply.

‘Euh, he’s heavier than I thought.’

However, just then.

Jinsung’s arm, which was placed on the armrest, wrapped around Harin’s waist.

“Uh... Ohh!”

The Harin, who was leaning towards Jinsung, instantly lost her centre of gravity and her body collapsed forward.

Plop-.

Along with the sound of air escaping a cushion, Harin’s body slightly lied on top of Jinsung’s.

The pale face of a flustered Harin was tinged red like a beet.

‘What, what the hell? He wasn’t asleep?’

Shortly after slightly turning her bright red face and looking at Jinsung, she couldn’t help but smirk at Jinsung’s snoring that rang out again.

‘No, how long did he game for to sleep like a log?’

Because Harin also saw Jinsung appear on the YTBC channel, she knew that he was doing some sort of large-scale Empire Quest.

She just merely couldn’t even assume that he hadn’t logged off once for almost about 40 hours.

“Hmm, ahem.”

Harin, who cleared her throat lowly at the awkwardness, lifted one of her legs and slightly pushed her body into the capsule.

As she did so, the plush cushions of the capsule opened up and her body slipped in right next to Jinsung, and Harin, who nestled in Jinsung’s arms more stably(?) than before, smiled timidly.

“Hehe... Shall I stay here like this for a moment...?”

Harin was about to slightly press her lips to Jinsung’s cheek when she paused and turned her head, placing it on top of

Jinsung's chest.

She wanted to give Jinsung a chance(?).

‘Still, the guy should kiss first.’

Harin, who wore a satisfied smile, slightly closed her eyes.

Because she had already told her family that she would be a little late at it was a festival day, she still had about one hour left.

And...

Jinsung's new model capsule was even just as comfortable as a bed.



## Chapter 135: Title Promotion (2)

---

“For it to be a quest shared with the whole guild. This is my first time seeing something like this.”

“On top of that, it’s an Empire Quest. And the Difficulty Level is double S-rank.”

A large flag with the symbol of Kaimon Empire embroidered magnificently, and below it, the flag of Titan Guild flapping along with it.

And at the head of the flag, over two hundred members of the Titan Guild were headed towards somewhere.

“Get ready, Emily. We’re almost at Shikar Desert.”

“Yes, Shyakran.”

Dark blood-red armor, as well as two long greatswords that hung on either side of his waist.

Shyakran, who was famous as the number 1 ranker for the Warrior-class in the Korean server, entered Shikar Desert.

Shikar Desert, where the common monsters’ average levels were in the 130-range, was still considered a place of non-aggression for most of the users, but there was no hesitation in Shyakran’s

footsteps.

“Shyakran.”

“What.”

“I don’t know about Shikar Desert, but do you think that we will be able to pass through Sky Desert that will appear right after with this fighting power?”

At Ceilron’s question, Shyakran was momentarily submerged in his thoughts.

“Hmm.”

Sky Desert was an area that Ian broke through with the knights of the empire during his Griffin Hatching Quest.

Sky Desert was a wide desert area that surrounded Sky Highlands.

Compared to Sky Highlands, it was an area with a lower rank, but despite that, as it was a tremendously dangerous place where the average level was over 150, Ceilron’s worry wasn’t irrational.

Currently, the average level of the Titan Guild’s expedition was in the late 120s.

Shyakran, the Guild Master, was at an incredibly high level at over lv 140, and Ceilron, who was 2nd place in the Knight rankings, was also at an outrageous level that was in its late 130s, but still, Sky Highlands, where it was teeming with monsters ranging from lv 150, couldn't help but be menacing.

Shyakran, who finished thinking, slowly opened his mouth.

“Even if we detour slightly, we need to break through here. Since we need to pass through there in order to go to the central continent.”

Emily, who was next to them, spoke with a worried expression.

“I think that it may have been better to have just gone over the border through the northern continent instead. If that was the case, we may have been attacked by the Luspel Empire soldiers, but I think that they could be weaker than the mummies or monks that appear in the Sky Desert instead...”

At Emily's words, Shyakran shook his head.

“No, then it would be too late. And if we were to even get caught by a high-ranking guild of Luspel while moving, it will become troublesome.”

“That's true.”

While walking through the desert path, where his feet sunk

down to his ankles, Shyakran thought to himself.

‘The first guild that steps onto the land of the central continent will be the Titan Guild.’

Ever since the beginning when Kailan first opened, he had always dominated all of the content.

He wasn’t the first user to have class-changed to Warrior-class, but the one to have reached lv 50 and build the Warrior-class Tower was him, and he had even monopolized tons of fields and dungeons’ first discoverers’ rewards.

Shyakran was a user that knew better than anyone else how big ‘dominating’ as well as the effect of ‘good profit’ that came from it was in a game.

Because of that, this large update was another chance for him.

‘Thanks to the Empire Quest I completed a couple days ago, I even collected 2 thousand Specialty Points already. We need to dominate the central continent quickly and grab benefits for the guild’s level as well.’

And suddenly, a user popped up in his thoughts.

It was a Summoner user that recently was becoming an explosive topic of conversation within the community.

And although for just a moment, it was a user he had butted swords with when he stopped by at Pascal Islands because of a quest.

While thinking of Ian, the corners of Shyakran's mouth curled upwards.

‘Ian, huh, Ian... It would be nice if I could meet him again...’

Before he met him, Shyakran had thought that the ‘Summoner’-class alone was generally a useless PvE-exclusive class.

Since most of the Summoners he had met up until now were absolutely weak.

However, Ian was different.

Even though he had faced him with his clone that could only display half of his actual abilities, he still cornered him.

‘It would be nice if I could meet him in the central continent. Of course, if we were to properly fight, he wouldn't be a match for me.’

However, there was a part that Shyakran was thinking incorrectly on.

Since the Ian that Shyakran fought at that time was also not in his complete state.

At that spot, amongst Ian's Familiars, only Halli was in the battleground.

In a sense, that was a penalty that was no less than Shyakran, whose main body was missing.

While Shyakran was lost in his thoughts, the shout of someone in the rear-end of the guild party was heard.

“Enemies have appeared at the right!”

Shyakran's head instinctively turned.

And the thing that had caught his gaze was a group of monsters at around lv 140.

“We'll face them and then move. Everybody, get into combat formation!”

At Shyakran's words, the users of Titan Guild moved in perfect order.

And Shyakran's body shot forward quickly.

‘Let’s see, shall we warm up...?’

“Heu-aam...!”

Jinsung, who woke up from his sleep, was slightly taken aback at how incredibly dark it was.

This was because, no matter whether it was in the middle of the night, the lights of the streetlights should have at least leaked in, so it would be normal for him to see even a little bit in front of him, however, his view was completely pitch-black.

“Ah, did I fall asleep in the capsule yesterday?”

Jinsung, who had recognized that he was inside the capsule, felt around with his hand and after finding the button, he pressed it firmly as he mumbled.

“I do roughly remember... As soon as quest completed popped up, I think I lost consciousness right away...”

Jinsung, who came out of the capsule, spread both of his arms out and stretched.

“Euaah-But what time is it right now? Dawn?”

He checked the time to see it was 5 o’clock in the morning.

As he thought about the time that he fell asleep at yesterday, he even roughly understood.

“Still, I slept over 12 hours. No wonder I felt refreshed...”

Jinsung’s gaze momentarily turned towards the new capsule model.

The interior of the old capsule model was quite comfortable as well, but the new capsule model felt as refreshing as if he actually slept on his bed and woke up.

Jinsung turned his gaze towards his bed that was in one corner of his room, and mumbled to himself.

‘Should I... get rid of my bed?’

Jinsung seriously contemplated.

However, because he somehow felt that if he did that, he would become an undo-able(?) cripple, he decided to hold back.

Jinsung, who instinctively wanted to check the rewards of the succeeded quest, was about to go back into his capsule again but stopped and stood.

This was because his stomach rumbled.



“Ah... It’s even been over two days since I’ve eaten...”

Jinsung closed the capsule again and headed towards the kitchen.

The moment he realized his hunger, an emptiness in his belly that couldn’t be held back descended upon him.

‘Hmm, but what is this smell?’

Jinsung, who looked into a questionable shopping bag that was on top of the table, was momentarily flustered.

This was because it contained a lunchbox that still had a slight bit of heat to it.

And on top of it, there was also a memo with lovely handwriting on a small post-it note.

- The soup in the flask can just be eaten, while for the fried rice, heat it up for about 3 minutes in the microwave and then eat it!

“ ... ”

Jinsung, who read the memo, was flustered.

‘Is it mom? No, there’s no way that mom would have come and gone... But if she did come and go, there’s no way that I would still

be alive...’

And soon, he was able to remember Harin.

‘It seems like Harin came and left. Did she game a little before she left?’

Come to think of it, he felt like he could slightly smell Harin’s perfume inside the house.

Creak-.

Jinsung, who pulled out a chair and sat down, opened the lunchbox and began to eat.

On the note, it said to heat it up before eating, but Harin’s fried rice was delicious enough even to eat on its own.

“Wow... This is really delicious!”

The meal that he ate for the first time in 48 hours was simply delicious, and after finishing the lunchbox in the blink of an eye, Jinsung wore a satisfied smile as he lied down on his bed.

Jinsung, who grabbed his smartphone that was just thrown on the head of his bed, sent a message to Harin.

- Harin, I ate well! Seriously thank you... T T I'll see you later at school!

And before Ian even put down his smartphone.

Harin's response arrived right away.

- I expect you to come and get me in front of the station by 3:30 in the afternoon!

“ ... ”

Jinsung, who saw the message, was taken aback, but he then smirked as he nodded his head.

“Sure, well... I even got such a delicious meal like this, so why couldn't I even do that much?”

Jinsung, whose mood brightened as much as possible, went into the capsule with light footsteps.

There was still close to 9 hours left until it was 3:30 in the afternoon.

\*

- Welcome to the world of Kailan.

Ian, who listened to the familiar login notification as he logged onto the game, looked around.

‘It’s the personal bedroom of the Lord. Since I was forcibly logged out, it looks like I was moved over here.’

Ian, who got up, opened his information window first of all and began to check the rewards.

The first thing that caught his eye was his Fame.

‘Keu, my Fame is now over 7 digits now.’

His fame that he had accumulated up until now was at 1.2 million.

Ian wore a pleased expression.

‘If it’s this much, shouldn’t it be alright to promote up to a viscount now?’

The amount of Fame that was consumed when a baron promoted to a viscount was 800 thousand.

However, to promote himself when he had exactly about 800 thousand Fame was not a good choice.

This was because if the Fame that the Lord had was low, the Loyalty of the retainers would drop, and their public sentiment value would decrease.

Before he did this Empire Quest, Ian's Fame was nothing more than 850 thousand.

However, because he still had 200 thousand Fame remaining even after promoting right now where he had over 1 million Fame, he felt there wouldn't be a big problem.

Ian opened his information window and went into the title promotion tab.

‘Yeah, let's promote.’

Either way, the viscount title was mandatory even for the promotion to Large Domain, which was the next level after Domain-rank.

Ian pressed the promotion button without hesitation.

Along with that, a system message popped up.

As he saw that it popped up as a green message, it looked as if it was one that was sent to all of his guild members.

- User ‘Lord’ Ian's title has been promoted from ‘Baron’ to ‘Viscount’.

- As the title of the Lord has been promoted a level higher, the guild's Fame has increased by 10 thousand.
- As the title of the Lord has increased, the Territory's public sentiment has increased by 5.

The system messages were listed all at once.

And as the green messages ended, white messages that appeared only for Ian popped up.

- As your title has been promoted, the maximum number of NPCs you can register as your retainers has increased by 5.
- As your title has increased, the Loyalty of your retainers has increased by 5.

Ian, who read through the messages, suddenly became curious about something after seeing the content that the Loyalty of his retainers had increased.

‘What were the Loyalties of my retainers originally at?’

Ian opened the information window that was in his retainer list, and began to check each Loyalty.

- Retainer List (Loyalty)

The maximum for Loyalty is 100.

- Celia

Level: 110 Class: Summoner Rank: Heroic

Loyalty: 98

- Mallaim

Level: 107 Class: Warrior Rank: Rare

Loyalty: 85

- Tenpus

Level: 114 Class: Priest Rank: Common

Loyalty: 82

- Cerius

Level: 109 Class: Magician Rank: Unique

Loyalty: 90

- Loreuten

Level: 110 Class: Warrior Rank: Rare

Loyalty: 85

- Kaizar

Level: 246 Class: Warrior Rank: Mythological

Loyalty: 5

‘As expected, the more you pay attention to them, the higher the Loyalty...’

The retainer that Ian paid most attention to before he appointed Kaizar was Celia, who had the highest rank.

And as expected, Cerius, who was the next highest rank, had the highest Loyalty after Celia.

Ian, who saw that, was stung internally.



‘Was I a little materialistic?’

While slightly self-reflecting(?), the expression of Ian, who checked the last of the retainer list, couldn't help but wrinkle immediately.

“... As expected, he wasn't just calling me Lord guy without a reason.”

The Loyalty of his new retainer, Kaizar, was at 5.

Even this was Loyalty that formed because Ian was just promoted to Viscount, so his original Loyalty was at 0.

Ian suddenly became nervous.

‘What should I do if Kaizar even wreaks havoc by chance?’

If his Loyalty was at about 5, it was a value low enough that it wouldn't be weird if he was to strike a blow onto the back of Ian's head in the middle of hunting.

For a moment, a cold sweat dripped down Ian's spine.

‘If Kaizar was to strike a blow onto the back of my head, it will probably be game over for me right away...’

Kaizar, the retainer that was more fearful than smallpox!

Ian shook his head as he moved his feet in order to leave the room of the Lord.

Creak-.

And the moment he opened the bedroom door.

“Viscount, are you feeling alright?”

Ian heard a familiar voice, and Ian’s gaze naturally turned towards the direction it came from.

“Hmm?”

The person that called Ian was none other than Paulean.

‘No, why is Paulean here?’

Wearing a puzzled expression, Ian asked Paulean.

“No, Sir Paulean, why are you here...?”

At Ian’s question, Paulean lightly showed his manners as he courteously held out a scroll made with red fabric towards Ian.

“This is a letter that His Majesty said to give to you once you woke up.”

And as Ian took it, Paulean’s words continued again.

“And His Majesty has commanded for me to serve you from now on.”

Chuk-.

Paulean showed his manners again with a disciplined motion.

Following that, a system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

Ring-.

- ‘Thunder and Lightning Knight Paulean’ wishes to become your retainer.

# Chapter 136: Title Promotion (3)

---

Wiiing-.

Jinsung, who roughly dried his hair with a blow-dryer, quickly changed his clothes and left the house in order to meet with Harin.

‘As expected, I think it was a blessing to have been born a guy.’

The time it took for Jinsung to get ready to go out including his shower was a short time of a little less than 15 minutes.

If he was a girl, it was a short time where he wouldn’t have even been able to wash out all the shampoo bubbles in his hair.

If that was the case, Jinsung may have not even moved a foot from inside the capsule at all.

‘It looked like the weather has gotten quite chilly...’

Jinsung, who rummaged through his closet and threw on the department jacket he was pressured to buy in the beginning of the year, walked towards the station with light footsteps.

There was still quite a bit of time left until the time he was supposed to meet with Harin.

“Shall I buy some custard cream buns on my way there?”

Suddenly remembering the custard cream buns that Harin liked, he went into a bakery that was at the entrance of an alleyway before he arrived at the station.

Ding-ding-.

However, at that place, Jinsung was able to meet an unexpected person.

“Caught you!”

It was no other than Yoohyun.

He had run into Yoohyun, who happened to stop by the bakery on his way to school.

“What? What do you mean you caught me? What are you talking about?”

While glaring at Jinsung, who asked with a flustered expression, Yoohyun’s words continued.

“I’m going to kidnap you to school no matter what today. Don’t even think about going back home again.”

At Yoohyun’s determined words, Jinsung smirked.

“Don’t worry, dude. I came out to go to school anyways.”

However, Yoohyun’s doubt didn’t disappear so easily.

“Don’t make me laugh. Do you think I don’t know? Based on the fact that you came to the bakery, you’ve run out of bread. You got hungry while gaming.”

Yoohyun’s reasoning was quite sharp, but Jinsung was really dejected.

“Ah, no. I’m telling you, I’m supposed to meet with Harin at the station. I’m going to school with Harin. Don’t worry.”

Yoohyun’s two eyes, which were bleary, immediately rounded.

“Huh? You’re meeting up with Harin?”

And the corners of Yoohyun’s mouth slyly turned upwards.

“This, this. So you came out to pick up Harin?”

Jinsung responded with a bitter expression.

“That, that’s right.”

“Ooh...”

Yoohyun carefully approached Jinsung’s ear and asked carefully.

“Are you guys dating now?”

“Hmm... That...”

Jinsung wore an embarrassed expression.

At that, Yoohyun shook his head and clucked his tongue.

“Tsk, tsk, be honest now.”

“What?”

“You’re... an eunuch, right?”

At Yoohyun’s attack that was sharp enough to go to the heart, Jinsung became as dumb as an oyster.

“How can you say such...!”

“You can’t deny it.”

“No, it’s because I’m so dumbfounded. Why are you making a

normal person an eunuch?”

“No, if you’re not an eunuch, then why are you still not able to confess when a girl as pretty as Harin treats you so well?”

For a moment, Jinsung wasn’t able to find the words to retort back.

“Ha, what to do with this stifling dude.”

While looking at Yoohyun, who sighed as if it was his job as they left the bakery, Jinsung flew into a rage.

“Yo, then what about you? On the topic of you, a solo as well. Solos shouldn’t be like that to each other.”

At Jinsung’s words full of depression, Yoohyun wore a smile of satisfaction.

“What? Who did you say was a solo?”

“You. I’m talking about you.”

“Hoo-hoot.”

Yoohyun, who wore the smile of a winner, took the lead as he walked and laughed at Jinsung.



“Hyung is no longer a solo now, dude.”

“...!”

Those were indeed words that was the same as a bolt out of the blue.

However, it was then.

From far away, he saw a somehow familiar-looking silhouette headed towards them.

“Yoohyun!”

A voice dripping with honey.

Jinsung, who checked the main character of the voice was shocked.

“No... No way?”

“Huhu, I’ve been dating Mina since a couple of days ago, Jinsung.”

For a moment, at the sense of loss that surged forward like a tsunami, Jinsung dropped the bread bag that he was holding onto

the ground.

Plop-

Mina, who was a colleague in the same VR Department, and Yoohyun, who he thought was in the same solo unit as him, weren't satisfied with just being a couple, and had become a department [CC](#).

“ ... ”

To Jinsung, who stood with a dazed expression, Yoohyun distanced himself after leaving one last word.

“Hyung's going to go ahead first, dude. You need to come to school holding Harin's hand! You can't go back home!”

Yoohyun didn't forget his request until the end.

Jinsung mumbled with a dispirited expression.

“For Yoohyun to have left...”

\*

The two eyes of Carwin, who was in charge(?) of greeting for the Lotus Guild, had become sunken in from checking all of the

application for admission, which were piled high,

“Wow, the influence of the trailer videos was seriously big. No matter how many I see, there’s no end.”

The Lotus Guild, which had gotten to quite a high rank now, usually had gotten an endless amounts of applications for admission.

However, just from the last couple of days, they had received 2 thousand applications for admission.

The fact that they went as far as raising the level restriction to 90, which was quite high, was even more surprising.

“Should I just raise the level restriction to about 110?”

First cutting off all users that were below lv 100, Carwin sighed continuously while staring at the applications for admission mails, which there were still hundreds of remaining.

However, because Carwin himself, who was in the executive team, was in the lv 110-range, that would be unfair.

“Let’s see here, the number of remaining spots in the guild now is...”

- The total number of people in Lotus Guild (225/250)

Before the territory system opened up, unrelated to whether a guild's rank was high or low, a guild's total number of people was limited to 200 people no matter what.

However, with the creation of the base system, whenever there was an additional base possessed by a guild, the maximum number of guild members that could be accepted expanded.

Of course, the maximum number of guild members expandable wasn't just with the number of bases owned, but also applied with the rank.

Currently, the Lotus Guild's base was one place, the Lotus Domain, at a 'Domain'-rank.

A base at a Domain-rank increased the maximum number of guild members by 50, and because of that, the maximum number of guild members that could be recruited into Lotus Guild right now was 250 people.

“Since we'll be able to merge Ollibus Village tomorrow or the day after as well...”

If Ollibus Village, which was a Village-rank, became a base belonging to the guild, the maximum number of people would increase by 25 more people, and if that was the case, then there would be quite a bit of leeway.

Carwin rubbed his bleary eyes as he began to thoroughly read through each and every mail.

“Whew... I should ask Fiolan to help with interviews.”

Once they filtered through for the last time, the majority remaining would be users in the lv 100-110 range, and with a level difference like that, it was more important to figure out whether they were a user that would fit with the guild well rather than if they were one or two more levels higher.

Because of that, an interview was essential.

Carwin, who became even more exhausted at the thought of interviews, let out a deep sigh as he mumbled.

“This break, I’m going to go up to Seoul and get the hyungs to buy me food no matter what.”

“Park Jinsung, Park Jinsung!”

“Whoaa, it’s Ian! Ian went to our school!”

The auditorium of Korea University.

And in that large auditorium, ten VR capsules were arranged in the middle.

That incredible cheer poured out to Jinsung, who went in and was preparing for the game.

“No, how do they know my ID?”

To Jinsung, who still didn’t know the fact that his face was prominently sold to the game broadcast, it was a flustering enough situation.

“Ha, because it’s so loud, I wonder if I’ll even be able to focus on the game.”

Jinsung grumbled as he closed the lid of the capsule.

Whooo-!

The incredible excitement could be felt even inside the sealed capsule.

Of course, it wasn’t like the excitement of the E-sports competition against the departments was this incredible.

Someone began to recognize Jinsung’s expanded face that popped on the main screen of the auditorium, and with that as the beginning, the atmosphere began to bubble up.

The VR Department students, who were sitting on one side of the auditorium, wore pleased expressions as they began to watch the

match.

“Yo, Yoohyun, what number is this match?”

“Right now... Since we’ve beat the Physical Education Department and the Business Administration Department, it’s the third one.”

“Then if we just win this one, is it the semi-finals?”

“Yes. I think so.”

“Keu...”

Sewon’s gaze turned towards the box of spirits that were piled on one side of the auditorium.

“Then we can have a hearty drink, right, Yoohyun?”

Yoohyun nodded his head as he clenched his fist tightly.

“Of course. From what I see, Jinsung, that dude, he hasn’t even warmed up.”

“What? Really?”

Right now, the game that Jinsung was out playing as a

representative of the VR Department was an [AOS](#) genre game that was an incredible sensation for a while.

The first AOS game that had VR systems grafted into it, League of Chaos.

AOS games were games that proceeded with the method of five users on each team, ending up with a total of ten users, and they had to attack their opponents camp within a fixed map, but the AOS genre in VR had a different feeling from when it was the pre-existing PC AOS game.

When AOS games were PC games, there was a limit when a user controlled a character.

No matter how exceptional of a user they were, it seemed like they were gaming while using a mouse and keyboard, and unrelated to the user's abilities, it was a structure where if they used the same skill, it couldn't help but deal the same amount of damage.

However, AOSs in VR weren't like that.

With combat in VR, depending on the development of one powerful person's control, the 'control' element acted that importantly that they could even win matches 5:1.

Even if they were to use the same attack skill, depending on where they hit and how exactly they timed it, the damage dealt



varied incredibly.

And in the last two matches that were just held, Jinsung showed his simply overwhelming abilities.

He was literally carrying a game that involved 5 people with just his own strength.

However, at Yoohyun's words, who thought that he was still not completely warmed up even now, Sewon turned his gaze towards the screen with an expression full of anticipation.

“Alright, show them what you've got this time as well, Jinsung!”

Their opponent this time was the Computer Science Department, who were known as quite a strong team.

However, thanks to Jinsung, who showed the difference with his overwhelming abilities in the last two matches, no one in the VR Department was thinking of losing.

“I was a little anxious because Seungchan is a hole, but Jinsung even covers that hole and more.”

At Sewon's excited words, Yoohyun nodded his head.

“You bet. He's a dude that even received an offer to play pro in high school. Of course, his mother flatly cut him off...”

“ ... ”

While the two people talked, the game started, and the atmosphere of the auditorium began to burn up even more.

Jinsung's position in the AOS game was mid.

As he was the core attacker of the team, who could move up or down whenever he wanted while he cared for the team, it was the position that shown the most in the AOS game.

And as if he was trying to meet the expectations of the VR Department's students, within just 3 minutes of the game starting, Jinsung grabbed the first kill point.

- Perfect blood! User 'Jinsung' of the Undead Team has gotten the first kill point!

Along with that, Jinsung's face showed up on the screen for a moment, and cheering voices burst out from all directions!

However, that was just the beginning.

“What, what the hell? How are such movements possible there?”

“No, how can someone's reflexive speed be like that? Is that a human?”

Exclamations full of astonishment popped up from here and there.

Jinsung easily showed plays that were only theoretically possible as if he was eating a meal as he began to oppress the opponent team.

- Triple kill! User 'Jinsung' is running amuck!

The hero that Jinsung was playing was one that had a skill format with a feeling similar to a mixture of a Magician and Assassin if compared to classes of an RPG game.

With a teleportation skill with a comparably short cooldown time, as well as a time restoring skill that could make a ton of variables.

However, as its Vitality was incredibly low, if there was even a slight control miss, it was also a weak character that could die just like that.

‘However, if I don’t get hit, that’s all.’

While remembering the words that Jinsung lived off of while they played League of Chaos, Yoohyun smirked.

“Woow, he climbed that wall and went over there!”

“No, how did he know that they were there and shoot a prediction shot? Are you sure he’s not map-hacking?”

Jinsung stirred the battlefield like a fish that met water.

The game was entering the middle phase before they realized, and through the kill points that he collected so far, Jinsung had become an incredibly strong person to the point he was untouchable.

- Double kill! Triple kill-!

Whenever Jinsung’s skill shot out, the Computer Science Department’s players turned into a grey light without doubt.

- Quadra kill!

As the ‘Quadra kill’ message, which appeared when four out of the five opponent heroes were killed one after another, popped up, the students of the VR Department’s students stood up simultaneously.

Yoohyun shouted out of excitement.

“Let’s go, Penta kill!”

And the white ray of light that shot out from both of Jinsung's hands penetrated through the back of the neck of the last remaining Computer Science Department's player before it passed by.

- Penta kill! 'Jinsung', he is a legend.

CC = "Campus Couple"

AOS = Aeon of Strife. The more well-known acronym/definition would be MOBA (Multiplayer Online Battle Arena), which is a game genre including DOTA, League of Legends, etc. I wasn't sure how many people would know, as I definitely didn't, so I thought I would just include it here even though it kind of gives an explanation in the chapter. 😊

# Chapter 137: Large Ferocious Battle (1)

---

Kaizar and Paulean's existences were merits that were close to a 'cheat key' in a package game given to Ian.

However, it wasn't like there were no problems either.

"Retainer, we need to go do a defensive territory battle... Can you not help us?"

"I don't want to. It's too bothersome."

Kaizar lied on the pavilion in the backyard of the Domain Manor and was taking a nap.

In order to persuade him, Ian spread out his logic diligently.

"No, if we get our territory taken from us, you can't even lie down there. Mustn't we defend it?"

However, it was inadequate in moving Kaizar.

"Go, Lord guy. Go quickly, and protect my sleeping spot."

"..."

Like a plaster cast that was displayed in a museum, he didn't

even budge an inch from his original posture as he remained lying down.

In the end, Ian couldn't help but give up and leave for the defensive territory battle.

“Preparations are complete, Lord.”

Still, while looking at Paulean, who faithfully completed his commands, Ian was comforted.

‘That’s right, At least I have Paulean. Even if just Paulean helped, there probably won’t be a case where we lose in a territory war.’

Ian, who was buoyant with the dream that he would sweep up territory wars with the central continent’s bases accompanied by Kaizar, nodded his head with a disappointed expression.

“Alright, Paulean, let’s go.”

\*

It was the first defensive territory war in a while.

Without having to drag it on long, the Lotus Guild succeeded in defending their territory within just three matches.

Their opponent guild was a guild that was even weaker than the Polaris Guild from a while ago, and the Lotus Guild, who had gathered up a lot of strength in the meantime, had succeeded in defending without even getting the chance to use all of their fighting power.

On top of that, the day that the defensive territory war ended, the requirements for Ollibus Village were met and the merge happened together as well.

- You have succeeded in absorbing Ollibus Village (Rank: Village) as a territory of the Lotus Guild.
- You can decide the name of the base. (If you do not decide a name, the name 'Ollibus' will automatically be kept.)

Ian momentarily thought about what to name it.

Herz, who saw that, fired a needle.

“Yo, don’t. The name Ollibus is fine, so why are you trying to make a new name for it? You trying to give it a name like Bbookbbook?”

At Herz’s words, Bbookbbook, who was lying down like a bump on a log, turned his gaze.

Glare-.



However, Herz wasn't fazed, and Ian frankly agreed as he nodded his head.

“Alright. Then we'll leave the name as is, I guess.”

As he confirmed the name as Ollibus, system messages continuously popped up.

- A leader of 'Ollibus' Village is required.
- Please select a user amongst your guild members who will become the leader of Ollibus Village.

Ian turned his head to look at Herz.

“Yo, do you want to do it?”

At those words, Herz shook his head as he replied.

“No, let's give it to Kroban [hyung](#). It's still going to take me a little bit to get a title. Since Kroban hyung is the only one with a title right now, if we appoint that hyung as leader, then we'll be able to raise Ollibus to a Domain-rank soon as well.”

“Oh, you haven't received a title yet?”

“Yeah. I think it will most likely happen within the next few weeks.”

After completing a couple more smaller settings outside of that, along with Kroban’s appointment as Ollibus’ village head, reward messages popped up.

- As the Lotus Guild’s base size has expanded, the guild’s Fame has increased by 10 thousand.
- As there are two bases that belong to Lotus Guild, the Lotus Domain has been designated as the ‘core base’.
- The trade between Lotus Domain and Ollibus Village has been invigorated.
- Culture Points have increased by 15.
- Economy Points have increased by 15.

While looking at the variety of supplementary productivity improvements that additionally continued, Ian wore a pleased expression.

‘Shall we check the requirements needed in order to promote to a Large Domain?’

And as he opened the information tab, the promotion requirements in order to become a Large Domain popped up.

[Box] Requirements for the Promotion to ‘Large Domain’ status

The level of the core base’s leader user must be 130 or higher.

The title of the core base’s leader user must be ‘Viscount’ or higher.

There must be 3 or more bases affiliated with the guild.

All of the bases affiliated with the guild must be ‘Domain’-rank or higher.

The guild Fame must be 500 thousand or higher.

Herz, who checked the promotion requirements with Ian, examined them one by one.

“How picky. Firstly, the first requirement is...”

Herz turned his gaze towards Ian.

“That you need to be lv 130 or higher, so what level are you at right now?”

“127. I think I’ll most likely reach 128 soon.”

“...?”

Herz, who was about to appeal that they weren't even close with the first requirement yet, wore a flustered expression.

“Yo, it hasn't even been that long since you hit lv 120, so how are you already lv 127? How exactly do you level up?”

And Ian responded with an expression as if it was no big deal.

“I rolled around a little doing an Empire Quest... Anyways, I just need to hit lv 130 soon, so let's think about the other requirements instead.”

Herz momentarily wore a dumbfounded expression.

“Sure, well, it isn't the first or second time that I've been thrown off because of you, anyways...”

However, shortly after, he accepted the situation and continued his words.

“Since you're a Viscount, we've satisfied the second requirement.”

“That's right.”

“Hmm... If we combine the third and fourth requirements, we need to have three bases that are all Domain-rank or higher, so if we just expand with one more place, then this one's all set. Since Ollibus will become a Domain-rank soon.”

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“That's right. The most urgent thing right now is increasing our bases by one more, and the second thing that we need to do is raise our guild Fame. What is our guild Fame at right now?”

“It's at 420 thousand.”

“For about 80 thousand, will doing about 20 guild wars be enough...?”

While looking at Ian, who spoke as if it was insignificant, Herz wore a dumbfounded expression.

“Yo, it's not if we do it 20 times, but could you correct it to that we need to win 20 times consecutively?”

However, there was no change in Ian's expression.

“That, well... We just need to win.”

“...”

“And I also have another method of raising our guild Fame.”

“What kind of method...?”

Ian grinned as he opened his mouth.

“Advancement into the central continent.”

“What...? You need to be able to get through the Wasteland and Shikar Desert in order to get there.”

At Herz’s counter-question, Ian rummaged through his inventory as he pulled something out.

And the thing in his hand was a luxurious scroll that was made with red cloth.

As he opened it up, Ian added on.

“If it’s with the royal guards of the empire, then it’s possible.”

\*

“Lord, the Guild Master is calling for you.”

The Oaklan Guild, who were fiercely competing with the Splendor Guild for 3rd and 4th place in the Korean server’s guild

rankings.

Because the DarkRuna Guild and the Titan Guild, who held 1st and 2nd place, were affiliated with the Kaimon Empire, in reality, the Oaklan Guild was no different from being the strongest guild amongst the guilds affiliated with the Luspel Empire.

And ‘Limlong’, the one in 1st place in the Assassin user rankings, was in the executive team of this Oaklan Guild.

As he was only in the early lv 120s, he was over 10 levels lower in comparison to the top users in the Oaklan Guild, but thanks to the fact that he was 1st place in the rankings for one whole class, and he was born with a combat sense, Limlong took position as a user that was quite influential even within the Oaklan Guild.

“Understood. I will go immediately.”

‘Samuel Jin’, the Guild Master of the Oaklan Guild, was a high-level user that shone as 1st place in the Archer-class rankings.

If the style of Shyakran, the Master of Titan Guild and 1st place in the Warrior-class rankings, was leading the guild with his natural-born combat sense and charisma, then Samuel Jin was a person that was almost opposite that.

It didn’t mean that he had a lower combat sense, but rather than internal gaming abilities, Samuel Jin’s abilities made him a leader that lead his guild using his insight and intelligence, as well as his

strategies.

And Limlong had received high praise from Samuel Jin, who was like this, and was being taken in.

This was a part that could be realized just from seeing the fact that he gave a leadership position for one of the five bases that were affiliated with Oaklan Guild to Limlong.

“Jin, I heard you were looking for me.”

After discovering Limlong, who had entered the manor, Samuel Jin greeted him with a welcoming expression.

“Oh, Limlong, you’ve come.”

“Didn’t you say that the departure for the expedition is two hours from now? Did something happen...”

At Limlong’s words, Samuel Jin shook his head as he spoke.

“It’s not like there is something going on. I just obtained some information.

“What kind...?”

“It’s the information that the expeditions of DarkRuna Guild and



Titan Guild have already approached the central continent.”

“...!”

In order to enter the central continent, they needed to get through Shikar Desert and Sky Highlands.

That was no different for the guilds affiliated with Kaimon Empire entering from the east, or the guilds affiliated with Luspel Empire that were entering from the west.

Since the desert spread out endlessly on either side of the central continent.

“How were they able to get through in such a short time?”

“It looks like they entered by force even if they had to put up with some damage. No matter how strong their fighting power is, I believe that they would have received quite a bit of damage.”

The Oaklan Guild had proceeded to thoroughly prepare earlier in order to enter the central continent.

They had prepared enough food for all of the guild members to withstand over a month, and in the meantime, they released all of the goods that they had stocked up and set up all of the equipment of their guild members to the highest level.

On the other hand, the Titan or DarkRuna Guild most likely entered immediately after the Large Update finished.

“Hmm... For preoccupancy, it seems they put up with the risks.”

Samuel Jin nodded his head.

“That’s right. Their choice was also quite a good choice, but if looked at in the long run, they will regret it.”

Limlong asked with a puzzled expression.

“Why’s that? Firstly, if they have at least penetrated into the central continent, couldn’t they preoccupy the bases in the central continent and just allocate resources including food there?”

Samuel Jin grinned as he shook his head.

“No, they will probably not be able to do that.”

“...?”

“The ground in the central continent is incredibly barren. In order to allocate resources there, it will at least take a couple months.”

However, even despite that explanation, Limlong still had

questions.

“The northern continent was cold and barren at first. However, I remember it being able to supply and demand quite a bit of resources in its own way...”

Samuel Jin shook his head.

“The northern and central continents are different.”

“...?”

“It’s similar in infertility, but in the northern continent, there were NPCs that resided there originally, while on the other hand, in the central continent, there’s absolutely nothing.”

Limlong, who was finally convinced by his words completely, nodded his head.

“Ah-ha... In that case, there will definitely be a problem.”

“Most likely, both the Titan guys and the DarkRuna guys. They will suffer a little, huhu.”

“Then, how do you plan on moving now?”

Samuel Jin’s words continued.

“We will move much later than our plan. To be honest, I called you over in order to say this.”

Limlong wore a confused expression again.

Samuel Jin’s words continued.

“Why’s that?”

“This is because other guilds in the Luspel camp have begun to quickly move after hearing the information that the Kaimon Empire camp has arrived first.”

After taking a moment to breath, his words continued.

“We will follow right behind the path that the other guilds have created, and minimize the damage received as much as possible, while entering the central continent. This is because no matter how quickly we move at this point, we won’t be able to arrive quicker than the DarkRuna guys or the Titans anyways.”

Simply put, he was saying that in a situation where first profit was impossible that they shouldn’t overdo it and go with a method where they could be more relaxed and minimize the damage.

However, there were two variables that Samuel Jin didn’t think of.

The first was the existence of the new commodity called 'Specialty Points'.

The second was the fact that there could even be a user that arrived in the central continent before the Titan Guild and the DarkRuna Guild.

Hyung = what a younger male calls a related or close, older male.

## Chapter 138: Large Ferocious Battle (2)

---

Inside the imperial estate of Luspel Empire, the imperial family's magic tower that the imperial family's magicians resided in existed.

And right in front of that magical tower, there was a large empty lot, and this spot was the location where the imperial family's magicians tested large-scale magic as well as the place where they cased AoE Teleport magic.

And currently at this spot, including Ian and the Lotus Guild members, hundreds of royal knights of the imperial family stood there.

“So, you're saying only a total of 100 people can be moved, right?”

“That's right, Viscount Ian.”

“That's a little iffy...”

AoE Teleport was high-rank magic that could teleport several people to a designated coordinate all at once.

The fact that it needed an enormous amount of mana was an obvious, and because whenever the number of people that needed to be moved increased or if the distance grew further, the required mana increased exponentially, so it was also restrictive magic.

“Still, I think it was a great idea that we found out the coordinates of Sky Highlands that time.”

At Hellaim’s words, Ian nodded his head.

“No kidding. Since it is an advantage that we can even move to Sky Highlands all at once.”

After promoting to a Viscount, even Hellaim, the leader of the royal knights of the imperial family, he treated Ian like an aristocrat.

That was quite satisfying.

Ian turned and looked at Herz.

“Yoohyun, by the looks of it, I think it would be best to just stick in about 10 people from our guild.”

“Hmm... Then do the rest of the people need to join with the empire expedition and come as the second party?”

If there was a limit of 100 people for moving, then it was definite that it should be formed with the strongest fighting power.

Since they have no idea what kind of dangers will lurk in the central continent.

The guild members of the Lotus Guild that applied for the expedition were mostly over lv 110, but by the look of it, compared to the lv 150-range royal knights of the imperial family, it was the truth that they were weak.

Ian was planning on taking a couple executives including Herz and Fiolan that were close to or over lv 120.

‘If I join the advance party this time and go over, then I’ll be able to obtain a huge amount of EXP... But since there’s no meaning if I just grow alone now.’

Ian and Herz carefully selected the ten people that would join the advance party in the AoE Teleport.

This was because if all of the executives just joined, then there would be no one to lead the second party.

“Let’s have Kroban [hyung](#) and Carwin lead the second party then.”

At Ian’s words, Kroban nodded his head.

“Okay, we’ll do that.”

“And drag over all the soldiers that are over lv 100 amongst the soldiers in Ollibus Domain and Lotus Domain as well.”



At those words, Kroban asked back with a slightly worried expression.

“Then wouldn’t it be a little dangerous for the domains?”

“No. Since there isn’t a single domain affiliated with Kaimon Empire around us anymore now anyways, and even so, the Defensive Power of the domain isn’t weak enough to suffer from a weak guild that doesn’t even have a territory.”

When the northern continent first opened up, because guilds affiliated with either empire took over bases all at the same time, a couple of territories affiliated with Kaimon Empire existed even around the Lotus Domain.

However, as time passed, eventually all of the territories closely located with Luspel Empire were taken over at last by high-rank guilds affiliated with Luspel Empire or the Luspel Empire’s expedition and had found stability.

You could say that something like an empire border had formed even in the northern continent.

In a situation like this, the territory wars that Lotus Guild needed to be careful of were challenges from guilds that were affiliated with Luspel Empire as well who didn’t have territories yet, but the Defensive Power of the Lotus Domain had gotten to a point that it could block off a challenge like that without much difficulty.

At Ian's words, Kroban nodded his head as he replied.

"Alright. Then, take care, Viscount Ian."

Kroban grinned as he responded, and the slightly untidy premises were organized quickly and accurately.

"Alright, then shall we go now?"

As about 100 people were evenly lined up in the vacant lot, Ian sent a signal to the chief magician, and along with that, a large magic square began to be drawn.

Whoong-.

Because it was a marvelous scene that the Lotus Guild members, excluding Ian, were seeing for the first time, all of their eyes rounded.

"Ooh, this is cool."

At Herz's words, Ian burst out into laughter.

"It won't be that cool in a moment."

"What do...?"

However, before he could finish speaking, Herz was able to find out what Ian's words meant.

Piiing-!

Their sight was engulfed in a white flash of light as it began to spin.

In the middle of the dizziness that hit him without a forewarning, Herz cried.

“Argh, you should have told me sooner!”

And shortly after.

The advance party of 100 people that were lined up in the wide, open space disappeared from the spot like a mirage.

\*

The place that the advance party had teleported to was the Sky Altar that the Griffins were hatched at.

The advance party of 100 people began to appear one by one on top of the altar, and the ones that arrived first were Ian and Kaizar.

“It feels so new. To think that I would step foot on this land again.”

To Kaizar, who was looking around his surroundings and mumbling in a low voice, Ian asked with a puzzled voice.

“Retainer, it seems you’ve come here before.”

Ian’s words had grown slightly shorter and shorter.

Ian, who was slightly nervous even after speaking, examined Kaizar’s reaction, but it looked as if he didn’t care much.

“10 years ago. Before the judgment of the Kailan Goddess was made, this place was hell.”

“Hmm...?”

“Each and every day was a series of war, and Luspel and Kaimon struggled in order to swallow each other up. The result of that, there was even a time their Capitals were in danger as well.”

Ian had asked without much thought, but after hearing Kaizar’s story, he was moved by interest.

“But retainer, didn’t you say you were a commoner? How did you end up fighting for Luspel Empire’s side?”

After Kaizar unsheathed his sword and held it up, he moved forward with big strides as he answered.

“I was a mercenary.”

“I see.”

However, at that moment, while looking at Kaizar who was about to jump down out of the altar, Ian was taken aback.

“No, retainer! How can you just move alone like that? I’m telling you, this is Sky Highlands.”

Ian had already experienced the fears of Sky Highlands.

Ian, who remembered the Pachyao, the lv 180-range giant desert tiger, and the Teranodon, the lizard that was close to lv 200, stopped Kaizar, but Kaizar wasn’t fazed.

“Lord guy, do you know?”

“What?”

“That the meat of the Pachyao is that delicious. I’ll grill it for you a little later.”

“ ... ”

With a whoosh, Kaizar jumped down outside of the altar, which was about 3-4 floors high of a building.

Ian shook his head, and during that time, all of the people arrived at the altar.

Hellaim approached Ian as he asked.

“Viscount, where did Kaizar go?”

At that, Ian let out a deep sigh.

“He says that he wants to eat Pachyao meat.”

“...”

Kaizar wasn't someone that Ian could control anyways, and as Hellaim also knew that well, he didn't say anything else.

“But, Sir Hellaim.”

“Please ask, Viscount.”

“Kaizar... It wouldn't be dangerous for him to go out alone, right?”

Ian speculated that Kaizar and Hellaim's forces were similar.

As he wasn't able to check Hellaim's level yet, it wasn't accurate, but based on the two people's relationship and circumstances, he was able to speculate like that.

However, from what Ian remembered, even Hellaim moved carefully in this Sky Highlands, he had asked.

Hellaim, who figured out Ian's mind, laughed as he replied.

"There probably will not be an existence that is dangerous enough for Kaizar or me in Sky Highlands at the least. Relax. Last time, I needed to protect the Griffin egg, so I just moved carefully."

"Ah-ha..."

And Hellaim, who had turned around, let out a command to the knights that were lined up before they realized.

"We will enter the central continent as fast as possible."

\*

"Huhuhut, Euhahahat!"

A black robe that was long enough to drag along the ground, as

well as a staff with a dark light at the end that let off a dark energy.

Kanjihoonie, who calls himself the strongest Black Magician, wore a nervous expression as he stepped foot into the Sky Desert that was in front of his eyes.

‘The first one to have discovered Sky Desert is probably me, right? Keuheuheu... I wonder what will come up as the reward for the field’s first discoverer.’

Kanjihoonie, who was way ahead of himself, calmed his pounding heart and checked the message window.

And a system message popped up.

However...

- You have entered Sky Desert.
- Due to the hot and dry climate of the desert, your movements have been slowed by 1%.

Hoonie wore a flustered expression.

“I’m... Not the first?”

In an instant, a sense of loss flooded in.



“No, I even timed it with the update and received a hidden quest like this, but how could there be someone that has come here before me?”

However, just then, a dark shadow slithered and appeared next to a complaining Hoonie.

- What are you doing, Hoonie? The master of darkness is waiting. There is no time.

“Understood. Don’t rush me, Ballam.”

Surprisingly, the thing that appeared next to Hoonie was an undead of a Black Magician’s dreams, one that took on the form of a Death Knight.

However, a slightly different point was that the normal Death Knight’s body was a dark light, whereas the shadow that appeared next to Hoonie was one that was equipped with dark and gold light at the same time.

“I just need to find the ancient grave of Shikar, right?”

At Hoonie’s words, Death Knight ‘Ballam’ nodded his head.

- That’s right.

“What about the location?”

- The ancient ruins of Shikar. You need to enter the central continent.

Hoonie nodded his head.

“Understood. Let’s go quickly.”

However, Ballam, who was about to move forward, suddenly stopped in his tracks.

- Hoonie, enemies have appeared at the front.

“No kidding. They’re monks.”

Exactly like their name, monks were monsters that took on the form of a Buddhist monk.

But that didn’t mean they were actual Buddhist monks, or in other words, human-like monsters, but rather monsters that had the appearance of a mummy.

Seu-seuk- Seu-seu-seuk-

Tons of monks shot up from within the desert sand.

The monks were strong monsters that started from lv 130 and were as high of a level as the latter half of the lv 140s, but Hoonie didn't look like he was even the least bit intimidated.

While fidgeting with the black bracelet that was on his wrist, he shouted out the starting words.

“Revengeful spirits of the resentful deceased... Beg for the strength of the desert and dedicate yourself!”

As he did so, as if they had become living organisms, the sand of the desert rose up into the air and began to take shape.

And that became the form of a ton of skull soldiers and they began to fill up the desert.

“Keuheuheut, as expected. The power of the Immortal is great.”

While looking at the hundreds of desert skull warriors that charged towards the monks, Hoonie laughed darkly.

A fixed play that felt so cringeworthy.

However, Death Knight Ballam, brilliantly did his part in Hoonie's such fixed play.

- That's right. The strength of the Immortal is great. Hoonie, I believe that you will build the empire of darkness up again.

Hoonie nodded with a determined expression.

“Of course, Ballam. I, Hoonie, will continue the maintenance of the Immortal and tinge this ground with darkness.”

While the two master and servant(?) seriously held a theatre of situations, the skull soldiers of the desert that were summoned with the power of the Immortal were magnificently facing the monks.

Hoonie watched that scene with a pleased expression as he began to move his feet.

And behind him, Death Knight Ballam followed him quietly.

However, they didn't know.

That soon, an incredible disaster(?) named 'Ian' would approach them...

hyung = what a younger male calls a close and/or related, older male

# Chapter 139: Large Ferocious Battle (3)

---

Compared to when they came as an expedition with Ian for the Griffin Egg hatching, Hellaim and the knights had become even stronger.

And that was the same for Ian as well.

He was still no match against the Pachyao, which was over lv 180, and the Teranodon, which was close to lv 200, but he had gotten to a point where he could do the work of one of their arms.

On top of that, with Kaizar, who was a strong person to the point it was hard to differentiate who was superior between Hellaim and him, joining them, the terrifying hunting ground, Sky Highlands, transformed into a honey-like bonus dungeon.

“Wow... Ian, you’ve been hunting in an environment like this all the time?”

Along with admiration, Fiolan sent him a look of jealousy.

Ian scratched the back of his head.

“No, it’s also been a while for me...”

However, Ian’s excuse(?) was dismissed by Herz’s words that followed.

“This dude. To have been sucking on honey like this alone... No wonder you level up so fast.”

Fiolan also nodded her head while agreeing.

“I agree. Ian, this is too much. Please look after your guild members a little as well, please.”

“That’s right, that’s right!”

All of a sudden, Ian had become a selfish Lord that doesn’t take care of his guild members.

“ ... ”

Either way, through their smooth hunting, Ian’s party had made their way through Sky Highlands in an instant and were approaching the central continent.

And shortly after, a white curtain appeared in front of the party.

That was a dimensional border that could be seen whenever a field was crossed.

It was proof that they had arrived at the central continent.

Fiolan, who had moved to stand right in front of it, asked Ian with a fluttering expression.

“Could it be that we’re the first, Ian?”

“Who knows. If the giant guilds have moved quickly, then it’s possible that they arrived first...”

And the one that answered the two people’s conversation was Kaizar, who appeared from behind.

“We are probably the first. Since there isn’t anybody that knows the geography of this place better than me.”

At those words, Ian nodded his head internally.

‘Definitely... We did arrive incredibly quickly.’

The section from Sky Desert to Sky Altar was a desert so desolate the horizon could be seen.

However, once they passed the Sky Altar and got closer to the central continent, boulder canyons lined up closely together, and for sure, if it wasn’t for Kaizar, they would have wasted a lot of time trying to find the right path.

“Then... Let’s go in and see.”

With a fluttering expression, Ian moved his feet with big strides.

Because the first discoverer's reward was shared with all party members that were in the same area, it didn't matter who went in first.

And as soon as Ian passed through the current of light, system messages popped up in front of all of the Lotus Guild's members.

Ring-.

- You are the first discoverer of the central continent, 'Shikar'.
- Your Fame has increased by 100 thousand.
- The reward obtained from all monsters in Shikar continent will increase by double (If you are the first discoverer of a dungeon, then the EXP reward obtained will overlap).
- The Guild Fame of the Lotus Guild has increased by 100 thousand.

At the system messages that poured out, all of the guild members, including Ian, were all smiles.

“Keu, we even filled up the Guild Fame by 100 thousand! We've also met the requirements for promotion all of a sudden.”

At Herz's words, Ian nodded his head.



“No kidding. It looks like we won’t have to go around doing territory wars so annoyingly.”

And the sentence that caught Ian’s eyes first was, as expected, the increased reward obtained for hunting.

On top of that, at the friendly explanation that the dungeon first discoverer’s buff would even overlap, Ian’s eyes shone.

‘Let’s go, lv 130! If I just find one dungeon, I’ll hit it immediately!’

Ian’s gaze naturally turned to Kaizar, the excellent [bus driver](#), and Kaizar, who met eyes with Ian, gruffly opened his mouth.

“Why are you giving me such a greasy look, Lord guy.”

Ian seemed to be in a good mood even at the words Lord guy, as he responded while snickering.

“You don’t need to know, heuheu.”

And Ian pulled out the Royal letter that he received from the king and read it again.

It was just called a Royal letter, but in Ian’s case, it was similar to instructions where the quest content was just explained kindly.

- Exploration of the Historical Site of Shikar

In the historical site of Shikar, 'Holdream's Holy Grail' is hidden there.

The holy water that is inside Holdream's Holy Grail makes the growth of the bases of the central continent two times faster, and it reduces the time that it takes to occupy a base by half.

Let's put our hands in Holdream's Holy Grail before Kaimon Empire does and use it as a foothold to occupy more bases.

Quest Difficulty Level: SS

Quest Condition: Unknown

Time Limit: None.

\*If a user of Kaimon Empire obtains the Holy Grail first, the quest is failed.

'Holdream's Holy Grail, huh... It says there's no time limit, but it's a structure where we can't help but move as quickly as possible.'

Ian asked Kaizar.

“Retainer, do you know where the historical site of Shikar is?”

At Ian’s question, Kaizar nodded his head without delay.

“Of course. The historical site of Shikar is right in the core of the central continent.”

“Then what about Holdream’s Holy Grail?”

Kaizar’s expression slightly showed change.

“Hmm? Holdream’s Holy Grail, huh... I do know of Holdream, but this is my first time hearing the name Holdream’s Holy Grail.”

Ian was a little disappointed, but he nodded his head.

Since even just the fact that he knew the location of the historical site was a big help.

“Understood.”

Kaizar opened his mouth with a curious expression.

“The item called Holdream’s Holy Grail, is it an incredible artifact?”

Kaizar's two eyes shone.

At his gaze, which was similar to when he wanted the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir, Ian was startled as he waved his hands.

“It, it’s nothing like that. It’s an item that His Majesty has told me to find.”

“Ah... I see.”

Only then did Kaizar turn his interest away.

While looking at that form, Ian mumbled to himself.

‘By any chance, could it be that if I find a good item and give it to Kaizar, I could raise his Loyalty?’

Ian somehow strongly felt that it was possible.

\*

“The fact that the first discoverer’s reward didn’t pop up means that someone has already stepped foot into the central continent first.”

At Shyakran’s words, Ceilron, who was following behind, nodded

his head.

“That’s right, master. I have no idea how they were able to arrive quicker than us... But it seems that there are users who have arrived first.”

And Emily, who followed them, added on.

“Isn’t the chance that it was the DarkRuna Guild the highest?”

Just like the Titan Guild, the DarkRuna Guild dispatched an expedition to the central continent as soon as the large update finished.

True to their name of being the number 1 guild, Emily’s thoughts were obvious in a way.

“Hmm... Were we one step late this time as well...”

Shyakran’s expression slightly wrinkled.

He had rushed that much in order to step foot onto the central continent first before the DarkRuna Guild, but having to think that he was late in the end made him a little angry.

“What will we do now? It would be best for us to first find a base and occupy it, no?”

At Ceilron's words, Shyakran shook his head.

“No, there's something we must do before then.”

The corners of Shyakran's mouth curled upwards.

‘We may have lost the continent's first discoverer buff to the DarkRuna Guild, but we should be able to receive the Holy Grail first.’

The reason why Shyakran was sure was simple.

This was because the one who received the Holdream's Holy Grail Obtaining Quest was him.

Empire Quests were different from normal quests, so the same quest wasn't given to multiple users.

And it was rare for a quest that already occurred to happen again.

In other words, it meant that the DarkRuna Guild didn't even know of the existence of the Holdream's Holy Grail.

‘As long as we just have the Holy Grail, then we can turn around the loss for not having received the first discoverer's reward.’

On top of that, soon, the Kaimon Empire Knights who were sent

to support them by the Kaimon king would arrive at the central continent soon.

Shyakran turned around as he opened his mouth towards Ceilron and Emily.

“We will move to the core of the central continent.”

At that, Emily asked back with a flustered voice.

“Huh? Then what about the abundance of bases that are lying around?”

Ceilron also stared at Shyakran with a puzzled expression, and Shyakran’s mouth opened again.

“As long as we just find the Holdream’s Holy Grail in the historical site first, rehabilitating bases won’t even be a task.”

It seemed the guilds of the enemy country Luspel Empire weren’t even on Shyakran’s mind.

\*

Bang-Ba-bang-!

Along with the Abyss Hole that exploded out of both of

Ddukdae's arms, Lake's Breath ferociously covered on top of it.

And at Pin's Crush that followed after, the tons of monsters turned into a sandstorm and dispersed.

- You have killed the Revengeful Spirit of the Desert War. You have obtained 128,910 EXP.
- You have obtained 5 Specialty Points.

The monsters that appeared after they entered the central continent were instead much weaker than the Pachyao and Teranodon that appeared in the Sky Highlands.

The monsters that usually appeared were called the 'Revengeful Spirits of the Desert War', and their appearances were of gladiators made of sand.

The level of the monsters was in the early 150s.

They were monsters that were in the similar level range as the Prison Officers that Ian fought in the Pascal Islands too many times.

'As expected, roundup hunting is the best!'

They were lower-level monsters than the Pachyao and the Teranodon, but as their numbers were higher, if comparing the



difficulty level, there wasn't that big of a difference.

However, as Ian was originally specialized in hunting with many as his opponents, he stirred up the battleground like a fish that met water.

“Celia, please heal Ddukdae!”

“Yes, Lord!”

And thanks to Kaizar, who without a doubt appeared whenever it seemed like it was becoming too difficult and cleared up the situation before disappearing again, Ian's party was able to advance without a hitch.

‘But what could Specialty Points be? I've collected little by little ever since the completion of the last quest, and now I'm almost at about 20 thousand now.’

Specialty Points were a new commodity that began to gather at the top of his inventory.

At the moment, he had no idea where this commodity could be used yet, but he was sure that it would play an important role in the future.

‘Speaking of which, even though I'm fighting with Pin out, there's not much word on it.’

Ian glanced slightly at Hellaim.

When he first summoned Pin, he pulled him out without much thought, but while hunting, he remembered the existence of Hellaim and the Empire knights.

‘Was I just too worried? But then again... Who would think that there were twins in that egg?’

While Ian was thinking of this and that, a gang of monsters appeared again in front of him.

And the monsters looked like nothing more than lumps of EXP in Ian’s eyes.

“Paulean, please buy some time from the front!”

“Yes, Lord!”

After becoming a retainer, Paulean’s title for Ian also changed.

From the title ‘Viscount’ to the title ‘Lord’.

His Loyalty was also so high to the point it couldn’t even be compared with Kaizar’s, as it had already gone up to about 80.

On the other hand, Kaizar's Loyalty had dropped by 1 in the meantime and had become 4.

A deep sigh escaped from Ian's mouth again.

'It would be great if I could even just move Kaizar as I wish...'

Because Kaizar really moved as he pleased as he poked around the map here and there, Ian somehow felt like he was losing EXP.

This was because even if it was someone in the same party or a retainer, if they hunted in a place that was a certain distance apart, they couldn't share the EXP.

And whenever they were almost done with the monsters that appeared, as if he had read Ian's mind, Kaizar suddenly appeared within his sight.

"I think I've found it, Lord."

"Hmm...? You've found the ruins?"

"That's right."

And as he followed behind Kaizar, giant architecture that spread below a steep, high canyon appeared.

And that was a grand stone building that was reminiscent of pyramids.

A slightly different point from pyramids was that there were several small peaks surrounding a giant peak.

Ian's expression brightened.

"Alright, then let's go over there quickly."

The other party members that had killed the remaining monsters behind before he realized and approached them were also looking down at the historical site.

However, just then, unexpected words flowed from Kaizar's mouth.

"However, there's a problem, Lord."

"What is it?"

Kaizar pointed towards somewhere as his words continued.

"Over there is the entrance to the grave, but I saw someone go inside there first."

"...?"

For a moment, Ian felt like his whole world was collapsing.

‘What the hell? How could there be someone that has arrived here faster than us?’

Rather than the sense of crisis that someone could claim the Holy Grail first, the rage(?) that he lost the dungeon’s first discoverer’s reward washed over him.

Towards Hellaim, who approached Ian’s side late, Ian turned his gaze as he opened his mouth.

“Let’s move quickly. We cannot lose the Holy Grail.”

bus driver = carry

# Chapter 140: Scramble for the Holy Grail (1)

---

“We’ve arrived at the correct place, right, Ballam?”

At Hoonie’s words, Death Knight Ballam slowly nodded his head.

- That’s right. This gloomy atmosphere, and the bleak tremors. This is definitely the place I was looking for.

The one that had arrived at the historical grave site dungeon first was not Ian nor Shyakran, but instead Kanjihoonie.

Hoonie was the last at entering the central continent, but the Power of the Immortal and Ballam, who knew of the exact location, had made that possible. If the Power of the Immortal was used, it was possible to move three times faster on sand.

‘It was the Crown of Holdream, right?’

However, the thing that Hoonie was looking for was a different item from the one Ian and Shyakran were after.

Hoonie’s goal was to complete his hidden quest.

And in order to do so, he needed the ‘Crown of Holdream’.

However, just then, Ballam stepped forward as he warned

Hoonie.

- There's an enemy, Hoonie. Prepare yourself.

As soon as those words ended, monsters appeared along with a strange sound in front of them.

They were monsters that looked like mummies wrapped in a black smoke.

Hoonie wore a determined expression as he spread his staff forward.

“The puppet of the Forgotten Holdream, huh... Are you unable to recognize your new owner of darkness?”

No matter what kind of situation it was, Hoonie never left out his immersion in his role.

And Ballam stared at that Hoonie with a satisfied expression.

This was because from his perspective, it was a magnificent speech.

Hoonie's words continued.

“The strength of darkness, and the Power of the Immortal...

Show yourself!”

As Hoonie, who diligently let out the starting words from his mouth that weren’t really necessary, swung his staff around, tons of skeleton warriors appeared from the ground.

Cre-creak- Cre-cre-creak-!

Keu-haeel-.

Along with a rough estimate of a dozen-looking Skeleton Warriors, and about half of that number of Skeleton Mages.

On top of that, Kanjihoonie, who had summoned two more Death Knights that were over lv 130, spread his staff towards the front with a smug expression.

“Punish all of the arrogant heretics!”

And like that, the battle began.

The levels of the monsters called the ‘Puppet of the Forgotten Holdream’ were over 150 and there were over ten of them.

However, Hoonie’s army of darkness was strong, and he was able to catch all of the monsters without taking a lot of damage.



Hoonie slightly stared at the Power of the Immortal item as he ignited his will again.

‘I must succeed in finishing this quest. If I want to make the power solely mine...’

Hoonie was currently at lv 129.

Even considering the fact that Black Magicians had a fast leveling-up rate, he was a high level that could be argued as the server’s first or second place amongst the Black Magicians.

However, despite that, the scale of the undead that Hoonie summoned was a level that a Black Magician at that level could never summon.

Especially the fact that he could summon two Death Knights was thanks to the Power of the Immortal that continuously charged his dark magic.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

And Death Knight Ballam looked completely different from the two Death Knights that Hoonie summoned.

Ballam, who was close to a whopping lv 170, easily faced the monsters inside the dungeon.

“It seems like we’re finished.”

- That’s right, Hoonie.

“Then shall we go inside?”

However, just then, Ballam blocked off Hoonie, who finished speaking and walked towards the inside.

- Someone came into the dungeon, Hoonie.

“Hmm...?”

At the unexpected situation, Hoonie contemplated for a moment.

‘There are probably a ton of artifacts aside from the Crown of Holdream inside the ruins...’

He had no idea exactly what kind of items would be there, but it was a definite mentality of a human to not want to share even one artifact.

‘And they said that there was no PK Penalty in the central continent, right?’

On top of that, if it was a situation where it wouldn’t matter at all

if that 'someone' that came into the dungeon was a user or an NPC...

The corners of Hoonie's mouth rolled upwards.

"Ballam."

- Why are you calling me, Hoonie?

"We have no choice. It hurts my heart, but if it's for the greater deed, then it looks like we'll have to murder them."

Hoonie became serious as he turned around, and at his words, Ballam nodded his head as he agreed.

- Good idea. As expected of the heir of darkness.

Hoonie turned around as he prepared to face the unwelcome guest, and Ballam pulled out his sword and got into a fighting stance as well.

And shortly after, Hoonie, who encountered a familiar face, wore a flustered expression.

"You, you're...?"

Of course, that ‘familiar face’ was Ian.

“Oh my, who is this, hey kid, long time, no see?”

For a moment, Hoonie, who remembered the nightmare at the arena rookie league, clenched his fist tightly.

It was an unexpected encounter, but Hoonie was yelling in delight instead.

‘This is a chance given by God to take revenge for that time! To meet this dude in a PK zone!’

“This is great, Ian! I had no idea I would have met you here, but since the situation is like this anyways, I will pay back the humiliation from last time!”

“ ... ”

At Hoonie’s lengthy words, Ian was momentarily speechless.

And Kaizar, who entered late, asked Ian.

“That weird kid, is it someone you know?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah, it is someone I know, but...”

Ian took a step forward as he opened his mouth towards Hoonie.

“How come there’s nothing that’s changed about you?”

Hoonie was not outdone and came with a comeback.

“You coward! I’m not as bad as you!”

Following that, Hoonie raised his staff as he shouted.

“Exterminate them all!”

Ian didn’t think that Hoonie would risk attacking without reason, but despite that, it wasn’t like him to just stand there and get hit.

Ian quickly fell back as he put Ddukdae in the front and began his counterattack.

“Ddukdae, Abyss Hole!”

Kuoooh-!

The spiral air currents that rode down Ddukdae’s crossed arms and poured out.

And Ian momentarily stopped Kaizar, who was about to charge towards Hoonie.

“Kaizar, one second.”

“Why?”

“Hoonie, don’t kill that guy.”

“...?”

Ian grinned.

“There’s stuff that I need to get out of him.”

\*

15 minutes later.

“Hoonie, boy. I understand that you’re happy to see me after so long, but why did you mess around with [hyung](#)?”

Ian walked up with big strides to Hoonie, who was wearing a resentful expression as he was surrounded by the empire knights and Ian’s Familiars.

“Don, don’t come any closer!”

“What if I don’t want to?”

Ian, who approached Hoonie with a sly expression, suddenly held out his staff.

“You, I think if you get hit just once more, then you’ll die.”

While looking at Ian, who openly threatened him, both of Hoonie’s pupils shook.

“Ah, no... Don’t be like that!”

There was a separate reason why Hoonie convulsed(?) to this point.

This was because the moment Hoonie died while proceeding with the hidden quest, he would have to return as a fail.

Of course, the penalty for dying itself was quite big, but if it was a situation where it would end just with death, he wouldn’t have been this afraid.

‘It’s a quest I worked so hard to obtain!’

To be honest, Hoonie didn’t even imagine in his dreams that he

would be overpowered this easily by Ian.

Ian himself was stronger than he expected, but that white-haired swordsman holding the black greatsword was truly a catastrophe.

Even Ballam, who he was trusting in, helplessly suffered by that white-haired swordsman.

‘For Ballam, who is over lv 170, to have suffered in an instant...’

Collapsed onto the floor, Hoonie let out a deep sigh as he looked at his Vitality gauge bar that was blinking.

“Whew...”

And secretly seeing that Hoonie wore a resigned expression, Ian secretly started.

“Yo, should I let you live?”

“...!”

At Ian’s tempting proposal, Hoonie momentarily flinched.

‘Should I let you live, he says... How humiliating!’

However, there was too much for him to lose through death right



now to stand on pride.

Hoonie was a little sad, but he set aside his pride a little and asked Ian.

“There are conditions, right?”

At his counter-question, Ian grinned as he nodded his head.

“Man, you’re smart. Of course, there are conditions.”

Ian, who took a moment to breath, continued his words.

“Firstly, you need to come into our party.”

If he joined the party, the dungeon’s first discoverer’s reward would become shared.

Because Hoonie also knew what Ian’s condition meant, he meekly nodded his head.

Up to this point, there wasn’t much for him to lose.

“And?”

Ian’s words continued.

“All artifacts that appear in the dungeon, including the Holdream’s Holy Grail, are mine.”

At those words, Hoonie slightly flinched.

“I can’t do that.”

This was because, if he couldn’t obtain the Crown of Holdream, there was no point in surviving and helping them with the dungeon.

Ian wore a puzzled expression.

“Why? On top of you not dying, you’ll even gain an incredible amount of EXP if you party hunt with us, but you can’t even do that much?”

Hoonie continued his words with a timid expression.

“The Crown of Holdream. Just give me that.”

At Hoonie’s words, Ian’s two eyes shone.

While looking at Hoonie, who pointed out a particular artifact that he didn’t even know existed, Ian nodded his head.

‘As expected, this guy, it’s positive that he knows information about this dungeon.’

Ian, who thought that he did a good job letting Hoonie survive, opened his two eyes blearily.

“Why do you need that?”

Hoonie spoke honestly.

“I need it for my quest. If you just give me that, I’ll give up all of the rest.”

Ian who answered with an apathetic expression.

“How can I believe you?”

However, as even Hoonie couldn’t give up any more than that, he replied without losing.

“If I’m greedier than that, then you can just kill me, no? Are you going to just stand there when I’ve taken an item and was carrying it around?”

“That’s not true...”

Ian, who thought momentarily, finally nodded his head.

“Alright. Then, in return, find us Holdream’s Holy Grail first. And cooperate in finding the other artifacts excluding the crown. Then I will also help you find your crown.”

Because there was no other choice no matter how much he scratched his head, Hoonie let out a deep sigh as he slowly nodded his head.

“Whew... Alright, understood.”

\*

Meanwhile, the eastern part of the central continent.

The Titan Guild expedition, who had succeeded in killing the flooding monsters at a fast speed and making it to the central continent, were having trouble finding the historical site easily.

“No, where exactly is the historical site?”

Ceilron, who had killed the charging monks and mummies one after another, complained towards Emily, who was casting magic next to him.

“If I knew that, do you think I would be like this?”

In a sense, because they had entered the central continent blindly

without any thorough preparations, no matter if the Titan Guild boasted the strongest fighting power, their health was depleting over time.

The only consolation was probably the large amount of EXP that couldn't even be compared with any other hunting ground.

And the commodity, 'Specialty Points', which they didn't know about yet, also comforted them.

"It should be around here somewhere. Everyone, stay strong just a little bit more."

Shyakran, who encouraged his guild members, began to slaughter the monsters in the front line.

Bang-ba-ba-bang-!

The large explosive sound made from three clones crossing mid-air was heard.

And the incredible wave of energy that arose for a moment scattered the front.

Chwa-ra-rak-.

Emily, who saw that, shook her head.

“Shyakran seems to have gotten stronger again.”

Ceilron nodded his head as well.

“I think he’s definitely gotten stronger than before. Has he gotten a new item or something?”

While sharing a conversation on this and that, it was right then while they were facing monsters.

A Titan Guild member that was in the back of the line yelled towards Ceilron.

“Ceilron, there’s something over there!”

At that sound, the eyes of all of the people, including Ceilron, turned towards the direction that they pointed at.

And Emily, who saw that, shouted with a happy voice.

“Shyakran, it seems we’ve found the ruins!”

A tall spire that shot up in the middle of the desert, as well as glittering structures that wrapped around it...

However, Shyakran, who saw that, shook his head.

“No, Emily. That is not the historical site.”

“Huh?”

However, different from Emily’s expression of disappointment, Shyakran wore an excited expression.

‘If the information I have is right, then that is the Tower of War. Since the situation is like this anyways, instead of the Holy Grail...!’

Hyung = what a younger male calls a close and/or related, older male

# Chapter 141: Scramble for the Holy Grail (2)

---

The exact name of the ancient historical site's dungeon was the 'Grave of Holdream'.

When they first entered the dungeon, the name of the dungeon that popped up as the 'Grave of ???' changed as they went into the middle and the event was activated.

Ian and Hoonie, as well as their party, were standing in front of the giant spirit of Holdream.

Holdream's roar started.

- Foolish people that are greedy for the treasures...

Kuoooh-!

Holdream was an ancient king that ruled this central continent.

And his revengeful spirit remained and guarded the grave.

Hellaim shouted.

"Knights, forward!"



Chuk-Chu-chuk-!

With perfect movements, the royal knights fully guarded the party.

And shortly after, the sandstorm that spurted from around Holdream raided the party, and a strong DoT dealing over 2 thousand damage per second began to come through.

“Healers, please heal!”

At Ian’s words, the healers of Lotus Guild that were on standby in the back quickly came forward and cast heals.

‘Should I have mainly brought healers...’

Amongst the 10 Lotus Guild users that were included in the party, there were just four healers.

He even thought that he had brought enough, but he definitely felt that the healing amount was lacking as they went on.

This was because there were only the most minimum healers within the royal knights.

On top of that, because those healers weren’t Priests, but Paladins, a healer-slash-tank, it couldn’t help but be difficult to care for everybody in a group of close to 100 people.

- I shall see if you have the right to enter this place!

Along with Holdream's furious shout, a shock wave shot out in all directions, and an incredible amount of damage blasted out at the same time.

- The 'King of the Desert Holdream' has used the 'King's roar'.
- You have received critical damage!
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 29,845.

To call it an AoE attack, its Offensive Power was too enormous.

Fortunately, no one had died, but most of the gauge bars of the party, where everybody's Vitality was at the maximum, were blinking.

And the users of the Lotus Guild, whom were at a comparably lower level, were in a critical condition.

- Keuhahahat! If you pass my test, then we should be able to meet again shortly.

After letting out a crazy sound for the last time, the spirit of Holdream disappeared into the air, and a bleak energy began to linger in the air.

- The 'King of the Desert Holdream's test has begun.
- The 'Descendants of the Desert', who were asleep in the basement, have begun to awaken.

Thu-thud- Thu-thu-thud-.

As if boulders were rolling around, the whole dungeon began to vibrate along with clamorous noises.

“That’s so scary...”

Herz held up his sword and shield as he stared at the front, and Fiolan also finished preparations so that she could cast her magic whenever necessary with a nervous expression.

“It’s seriously tremendous. I almost met a black screen with just one hit from that AoE skill just a moment ago.”

At Fiolan’s words, Ian smirked as he nodded his head.

“From now on, if you think that a slightly big-looking skill is about to explode, use your shield first. Since it’s not like we’re lacking damage right now, your survival is more important, Fiolan.”

“Okay, I will do that.”

While the two spoke with each other, the centre of the grave, which was similar to a vacant ground that had nothing, cracked open laterally as a new space was revealed.

Below, there were tons of golden coffins that were laid out.

The bleak, yellow energies of light that remained in the spot that Holdream disappeared from were sucked in through the cracks in the ground as if they were being absorbed, and along with that, the lids of the coffins began to move.

Keu-reuk- Keu-keu-keuk-!

Along with a fricative sound that was hard to listen to, the coffin lids began to open up one by one.

Hoonie, who just hunted without a word, opened his mouth towards Ian.

“You’ll need to be careful.”

At those words, Ian’s gaze automatically turned to Hoonie.

“What?”

At Ian's cross-question, Death Knight Ballam, who stood next to him, responded instead.

- The Descendants of the Desert are strong. And they each have their own characteristics.

Hoonie knew of them.

This was because, although it was his first time coming into the central continent, he had hunted them until he was sick and tired of them while progressing through a preceding quest in Shikar Desert.

Of course, the descendants of Holdream in Shikar Desert were much weaker than these ones.

Ian asked.

“How do you deal with it?”

Hoonie wore a sour expression, but he still explained with quite a bit of detail.

“The ones holding axes share their Vitality. It's best to catch them with an AoE attack.”

“They share their Vitality?”

“Yeah. So, no matter how much you beat up one of them to a pulp, the Vitality of the others will come in and fill up that spot. So, you need to catch them all at once with an AoE attack.”

If it was an AoE attack, it was an area that Ian was most confident in.

Ian nodded his head.

“Alright, and what about that one?”

There was an interesting-looking warrior, holding a spear and a sword in each hand, opening the coffin and coming out where Ian was pointing to.

“That one is an ignorant one that shoots that spear its holding by pulling it against a bowstring. Getting hit by one spear doesn’t hurt that much, but the more it overlaps, the more the damage is amplified.”

Ian, who heard a couple more tips from Hoonie aside from those ones, approached Hellaim.

“Leader, please entrust the authority to command for a moment just in here.”

“Hmm...?”

“I just heard how we can deal with those, but to explain it right now...”

Hellaim, who momentarily contemplated at those words, nodded his head.

“I will do so, then. I will try and trust you this time, Viscount.”

Because Hellaim had never seen Ian command a battleground yet, he wore a slightly doubtful expression, but still, thanks to the faith Ian had piled up until now, he did hand over the authority to command.

Ian, who received the authority to command, moved quickly.

“Let’s drive into the left quickly! Attack the ones holding bows first!”

“Yes, sir-!”

At any rate, because he did receive Hellaim’s authority to command exactly as it was, the royal knights quickly moved according to Ian’s order.

“Kaizar!”

At Ian’s calling, Kaizar replied with a brusque expression.

“Why are you calling me?”

“You see that one wearing the gold lion mask in the back there, right?”

Kaizar nodded his head.

“Please catch that one, retainer.”

Because Kaizar had followed his words well up until now without refusing, he spoke without much thought this time as well, but he shook his head.

“I don’t want to, it’s too bothersome.”

At that, Ian couldn’t help but be thrown aback.

‘Kaizar or Hellaim need to take care of that one, though...’

It was an epic monster wearing a gold lion mask and holding two swords.

Because its level was close to a whopping 190, Ian couldn’t even conceive the idea of coming forward himself.

‘It seems that Hellaim needs to move with the royal knights in



order for his fighting power to increase more... What to do.'

In the end, there was no alternative that popped up who could take care of that monster besides Kaizar.

“Retainer.”

“What?”

“If you catch that one, I’ll give you the Heroic-rank armour that I got last time. You know what I’m talking about, right?”

He wasn’t certain that it would work, but he just shouted it out first.

However, Kaizar’s indifferent expression slightly changed.

“For... real?”

Ian let out a shout of delight internally.

“That’s what I’m telling you! It’s the one that I picked up while hunting with you back then. The one with the phoenix drawn on the stomach.”

Kaizar nodded his head.

“I know. That one’s cool.”

Ian, who thought that it was all set, quickly continued his words.

“The minute you catch that one, I’ll hand over that, so do me a favour, Retainer.”

However, Kaizar was still hesitant.

Using his last move, Ian slightly scratched his pride.

“Retainer, by any chance, it’s not because you don’t think you’ll be able to win against him, right?”

And at those words, Kaizar instantly stood up.

“Who do you think I am? Like that insignificant spirit!”

While looking at Kaizar, who unsheathed his sword in an instant and stood up and stomped forward, Ian wore a pleased smile.

“I like him because he’s simple-minded...”

As the image to face the enemies generally appeared, Ian let out commands to each of his Familiars as well.

“Ddukdae, go over there and buy some time as the opponent of

the warriors, and Pin, Lake, you guys save your AoE skills. Later, when the warriors are gathered onto one side, you just need to pour it out then.”

At his words, the Familiars nodded their heads and after expressing their minds, they headed to the front.

Kku-ruk- Kkuk-kkuk-!

Deu-reu-reuk-.

Lastly, after Ian got on Halli’s back, he ran towards the side of the enemies that the royal knights infiltrated through with Ly.

‘But to shove Kaizar around from now on, do I need to make a tribute of one item each time...?’

Even the armour that he said he would give to Kaizar was an expensive item that would sufficiently equal hundreds of thousands of gold if it was sold in the auction house.

Ian’s stomach hurt a little, but there was nothing he could do about it.

‘Still, I’m giving it to my retainer, so in the end, it’s mine, I guess.’

Ian, who comforted himself with such plausible reasoning(?),

quickly charged towards the battleground.

\*

- You are the first discoverer of the Tower of War.
- Your Specialty Points have increased by 3000.
- With the obtained Specialty Points, you can exchange for goods in the tower.
- You can only enter the Tower of War for 30 minutes once a day. Will you enter?

While looking at the messages that popped up one after another, Shyakran let out a shout of delight internally.

‘As expected! It was the Tower of War...!’

There was a reason why Shyakran was able to find knowledge on the Tower of War and Holdream’s Holy Grail beforehand.

It was related to the Empire Quest of Kaimon that he was progressing with.

‘This, should I be thankful towards Lacromyu...?’

Lacromyu was the leader of the knights of Kaimon Empire, who suffered and died from Kaizar and Ian’s combined attack.

Shyakran had gained such information from him.

Although, due to Ian and Kaizar, Lacromyu died and he couldn't carry out the quest until the end, but instead, through that, Shyakran was able to obtain a lot of information related to the central continent.

‘Since Lacromyu died, I was able to swallow up all of the material in the command and control centre at Pascal Islands...’

While thinking of this and that, Shyakran stepped foot into the Tower of War.

“I will enter.”

And Shyakran, who momentarily turned around, spoke towards his guild members.

“You can only enter this place once a day. Only people who have over 5000 Specialty Points, come in.”

As he completely went inside once he completed his words, most of the guild followed him and went inside.

As the Titan Guild had just hunted continuously ever since coming into the central continent, mostly everybody had quite a bit of Specialty Points.

On top of that, as the first discoverer's effect just now was shared, they even obtained 3 thousand Specialty Points, so there weren't a lot of guild members whose total points weren't at 5 thousand.

And amongst them, the one with the most Specialty Points was obviously Shyakran.

“Let's see here... Are there any good items?”

The Tower of War reset every two days.

It meant that all of the items displayed inside completely changed into new items every two days.

And there was an item that Shyakran was looking for.

‘The Flag of the Pharaoh... That needs to be here...’

The Flag of the Pharaoh wasn't as good as Holdream's Holy Grail, but it was an important item.

This was because the number of soldiers that were trained in a base in the central continent with the Flag of the Pharaoh raised in it doubled.

Shyakran, who concentrated and studied each of the items as he

went up, discovered a book that caught his eye.

‘What’s this...?’

And the item that he checked out of curiosity, was none other than a Legendary-rank Warrior-class skill book.

Will of the Desert Warrior

Classification: Skill book (Passive Skill)

Skill Rank: Legendary

Consumption Price: None

Cooldown Time: None

The Warrior to succeed the Will of the Desert Warrior, will be able to focus their mind and create a curtain of swords.

The chance of the curtain of swords attacking is made up of 15% rate. It blocks off damage as much as 300% of the skill user’s Offensive Power, and returns 150% of the damage.

\*Skill Acquisition Condition: The Proficiency of Swordsmanship must be Master lv 1 or higher in order to acquire it.

\*Whenever the curtain of swords is cast, your Offensive Power will increase by 10% for 15 seconds, and this effect overlaps up to 10 times.

“...!”

It was a passive skill book with an incredible option expected of a Legendary-rank.

Shyakran quickly checked the amount of Specialty Points that were required in order to purchase the skill book.

- Required Specialty Points: 12,000

It was a value that he could even pay if he used up all of the Specialty Points he possessed.

‘Do I need to buy this...?’

Shyakran was conflicted.

This was because it was a skill book that was so good that the 12,000 Specialty Points was definitely not a waste, but at this point, where a large-scale war was going to happen soon, it could be extravagant to use his Specialty Points for a personal item.

A momentary contemplation.



“Haa...”

However, Shyakran ended up grabbing the book.

- You have purchased the ‘Will of the Desert Warrior’ skill book.
- You Specialty Points will be deducted by 12,000.
- Remaining Specialty Points: 375

Shyakran rationalized with himself internally as he turned around and came out of the Tower of War.

Because he didn’t even have points now anyways, in order to not have any lingering attachments, he paid no attention to the other items on purpose.

‘That’s right, since by having me get stronger the guild will get stronger soon...’

However, Shyakran had no idea.

The fact that in the spot that he turned and left, there was an item that could completely determine the structure of the early phase of the power war of the central continent...

## Chapter 142: Scramble for the Holy Grail (3)

---

Ian's commanding abilities were surprising.

The Summoner special stat, 'Leadership', displayed a large effectiveness suiting its name when controlling a lot of people, and Ian, who was also normally skilled in multitasking with multiple Familiars, delivered commands to the right man in the right place and was leading them to victory with the least amount of damage.

While continuously fighting, Herz glanced at Ian.

'This Jinsung, he's probably really smart. The problem is that he uses that smart head of his in just gaming...'

Figuring out the situation of a messy battleground correctly and moving calmly is not an easy task in any game.

However, in VR games, that difficulty level increased even more.

As if he was looking at a marvelous animal, Herz kept on glancing at Ian continuously.

'How is he able to pay attention to multiple things at once like that?'

Different from PC games, in a VR game, it wasn't like you could see the surroundings of your character within the monitor, so in

order to figure out your surroundings, you truly needed to rely on your five senses.

Explosions rang out here and there, and it was a chaotic battleground where if you took your eyes off the situation for even one moment, an AoE attack could appear beneath your feet.

In here, you needed to maintain a cool head and being calm was a definite in order to come out with the best results, and at the same time, you needed to pay attention to several things at once.

Herz was always amazed at the form of Ian, who normally looked like he was distant from cool-headedness and intelligence, when he showed a completely different side whenever a battle began like this in the game.

“Ly, Pin! You two go and take care of that tougher one!”

- Understood, owner.

Kku-ru-ruk-!

Ian tied Ly and Pin into one group and made them face the Unique-rank leader-class monsters that appeared in between.

The level of the leader-class monster was around 150-160.

To be honest, as Ly and Pin’s levels were similar to Ian’s level at

the second half of the 120-range, when just looking at their levels, it was a level difference that they wouldn't be able to face even if the two charged in.

It was a level difference of a whopping 20-30 levels.

However, even though they were in the same lv 120-range, because the abilities of Legendary-rank Ly and Pin exceeded lv 150 Common or Unique-rank monsters, they couldn't be judged from a normal standard.

Especially, amongst the Inherent Ability that Ly had, the 'Rage of the Fenrir' which increased the combat stats by 50% was an ability that was basically no different from a passive skill.

This was because although there was a cooldown time, the cooldown time was reduced every time he got in critical damage.

On top of that, the Darkness Encroachment ability that he could use once every 30 minutes almost made Ly invincible.

When the day became dark and his passive ability, 'Heir of the Moon', was invoked as well, Ly practically became a zombie.

While looking at Ly, who overpowered the enemies that were over 20 levels higher than him at most, Ian wore a pleased smile.

'Now I've even completely adapted to utilizing Ly's abilities.'

That didn't mean that the battle itself was easy.

With this one battle, amongst the 90 royal knights, five had gone into incapable-to-battle state.

As the war situation tilted over enough and they were able to relax, Hellaim approached Ian.

“Good work, Viscount. I didn't know your commanding abilities were this astounding.”

At Hellaim's compliment, Ian wore a sheepish expression.

“Haha, well, since the result is good, it's a relief. As soon as we're finished here, shall we go down to the basement?”

At Ian's words, Hellaim nodded his head.

“Yes, I think that would be best. Since our priority is to put the Holy Grail in our hands as quickly as possible.”

Ian's party, who had succeeded in killing all of the 'Descendants of the Desert', immediately went down the stairs and began to move to the basement.

The inside of the grave was incredibly large as expected from the scale seen outside, and because it had a complex structure, it

wasn't easy finding the right path.

Ian glanced at Hoonie, who followed right behind him, and asked.

“Hoonie, by any chance, do you know which room Holdream is sleeping in?”

At Ian's question, Hoonie responded with a blunt tone.

“How would I know that?”

Ian pointed to the Death Knight floating next to Hoonie as he continued his words.

“I somehow feel like this friend could possibly know.”

A response came from Ballam instead of Hoonie.

- I don't know the exact location either. I can just feel the energy of darkness.

“Is that so?”

- However, what's certain is that the direction we are heading towards is right. We are getting closer and closer to him.

Ian nodded his head.

Even knowing the fact that they were headed towards the right direction was enough.

“I see. Understood.”

As Ian, who discovered monsters that appeared at the front line, moved his feet and stood far off at the front, Ballam opened his mouth towards Hoonie.

- I think he's an uncourteous human, Hoonie. To have such arrogant words and actions towards the successor of darkness.

At those words, Hoonie also nodded his head.

“I agree, Ballam. To think that having no power like this would be such a sad situation...”

Hoonie, who wore a bitter smile like the protagonist of misfortune in a movie, thought to himself.

‘Ian, this dude, if I get a hold of the Power of the Immortal with my hands, I will take revenge on you no matter what!’

However, to see if that revenge went well was something that needed to be watched.

\*

It was about a thousand years ago from now.

Holdream was the king of a group of giant, god-like people who governed the ancient central continent.

And he had two faces.

One was the good and wise king Holdream, who lead the reign of peace in the central continent.

And the other one was tainted by the power of darkness and became corrupted as the Monarch Holdream that ruined a nation and destroyed himself.

In his last years, Holdream became a puppet of the Immortal and conceived the seeds of darkness in the central continent, and the Immortal recovered his strength little by little through Holdream and dreamt of his revival.

And through that process, there was a medium that the Immortal used in order to control Holdream, and that was his crown.

The Crown of Holdream was also called the Cursed Crown as another name.



In order to recover the strength that the Immortal lost, the Crown of Holdream needed to be found.

Since the power of darkness he had gathered was accumulated in the Crown of Holdream.

‘Finally... I can see the end of the quest!’

The main body had appeared in front of their eyes.

While looking at the Crown of Holdream that was exactly on top of his head, Hoonie grinned.

‘I had no idea that losing my way in the Shikar Desert would return to me as a hidden quest.’

While proceeding with a different quest, Hoonie lost his way in the Shikar Desert, and by coincidence, he was able to meet the revengeful spirit of the Immortal.

The name of the hidden quest that Hoonie received by doing that was the ‘Cursed Crown’.

‘If I can just obtain the power of the Immortal, I would be able to beat someone like that Ian dude...’

Hoonie glimpsed at Ly, who was the strongest amongst Ian’s Familiars.

Because he diligently observed Ian's fighting power while in combat as if he was investigating, he could feel through his skin how strong Ly was.

‘That Fenrir looks a little strong, but since I have Ballam.’

Hoonie, who wouldn't have expected that Kaizar was Ian's retainer even in his dreams, grinned broadly at the thought of winning against Ian.

And separate from Hoonie, who was dreaming of his revenge(?) against Ian, the large-scale Boss battle was about to begin.

- So you've ended up coming here, you foolish souls!

Holdream let out a furious sound that came from his chest.

The party kept an eye on the movements of Holdream in a tense state.

- I shall send you all to hell!

A white light and black fog began to wrap and twist around Holdream's spirit.

As it did so, the ghost of Holdream that had a translucent

appearance became richer in colour little by little and began to take a tangible form on the ground.

Thud-!

As if they were seeing the giant of Forlan dungeon, Holdream had a giant body.

And the moment he saw the level that popped up above his head, Ian couldn't help but break out into a cold sweat.

‘Insanity! He’s level 270? He’s even higher than Kaizar!’

The level written in gold that was shining next to Holdream’s name definitely stated an tremendous value of 270.

‘Still, I never thought of losing... But it seems there will be quite a bit of damage.’

Ian slightly glared at Hoonie.

It somehow felt like he was doing the little brat a favour.

If it wasn't for him and the royal knights, how would he have thought of attacking Holdream?

However, just when Ian’s stomach was hurting, suddenly,

Hoonie stepped forward to the front and lifted his hand straight up.

“Holdream, you haven’t forgotten the Pledge of the Darkness, right?”

While shouting loudly, Hoonie pulled out a round plaque with a skull drawn on it from his chest and lifted it up.

And discovering that, Holdream’s expression turned pale as he froze.

- Why, why is this item here...?

With an expression clearly showing his bewilderment, Holdream stepped backwards while looking at Hoonie.

“I am the descendant of the Immortal, Kanjihoonie. I will carry out the pledge from a thousand years ago right here!”

Hoonie, who let out a powerful(?) dialogue that was so cringeworthy it felt like their hands and feet would shrivel up and all disappear, approached Holdream one step at a time.

Stomp-stomp-.

The rest of the party, who stopped the attack that they were about to do, watched Hoonie with an interested expression, and a

gloomy energy began to flow out of the wooden plaque with the skull design on it that Hoonie was holding.

Screee-screech-!

Noises so strange that it made goosebumps rise all over their bodies filled the air, and wearing a pained expression, Holdream shrieked.

- Keu-aaah! This brat...!

And shortly after.

A system message popped up in front of all of the people within the premise.

- The Pledge of the Immortal, the Sovereign of Darkness, has been implemented.
- The energy of darkness has flowed out of the Crown of Holdream.
- For the next 10 minutes, all of Holdream's abilities will decrease by 40%.
- For a moment, Holdream will lose his eyesight.

Through the Pledge of the Darkness, an outrageous de-buff was placed on Holdream.

As soon as the system message popped up, Ian immediately lifted his staff up.

“Everybody, attack!”

And as if they were waiting, the knights simultaneously charged towards Holdream.

And even amongst them, the one that definitely stood out was Kaizar.

Bang-Ba-ba-bang-!

A giant wave of darkness spewed out from the black Greatsword of the Fenrir.

- Retainer ‘Kaizar’ has used ‘Darkness Emission’, and has dealt 27,684 damage to ‘Holdream’.
- Through the effect of ‘Darkness Emission’, ‘Holdream’s Defensive Power has decreased by 30% for 3 minutes.

As the de-buffs overlapped and powerful attacks struck Holdream consecutively, his Vitality gauge bar began to drop quickly.

- These... Little... Brats!

Holdream, who let out a roar full of rage, began to swing his sword in every direction.

Bang-bang-!

And despite having an enormous de-buff that reduced all of his abilities by 40%, Holdream was not weak.

- Familiar Ddukdae has received critical damage from Holdream.
- Ddukdae's Vitality has been reduced by 41,209.

Of course, it was a critical hit, but he had just been hit by a sword that was swung around, and a large amount of 40 thousand Vitality was hacked off.

At Holdream's incredible Offensive Power, Ian gulped loudly.

'If he didn't have a de-buff, he would have seriously been incredible. That weird brat was an unexpected help.'

Ian's gaze automatically turned to Hoonie, and Hoonie was diligently fighting against Holdream.

A slightly interesting point was that Holdream seemed to be avoiding the protective coat of dark purple light that wrapped

around Hoonie.

‘He said he was in the middle of a quest and it seems that was true. But then again, if he wasn’t, he wouldn’t have even been able to use the Pledge of Darkness or whatever.’

Ian cut off his attention on Hoonie, and began to focus on facing Holdream that was in front of him.

They needed to catch Holdream within the 10 minutes before the de-buff was released no matter what.

Since, if they didn’t do so, he couldn’t promise that the war situation wouldn’t turn around.

“Paulean! Be careful behind you!”

At Ian’s shout, Paulean barely avoided the fireball that dropped from the air, and shortly after, his counterattack followed.

- Retainer ‘Paulean’ has used Inherent Ability ‘Judge of Thunder and Lightning’.
- ‘Holdream’s Vitality has been reduced by 17,649.

It wasn’t as much as Kaizar, but still, compared to Ly and Pin, Paulean showed an Offensive Power that was not the least bit lacking.



While Ian thought that he should at least gift admirable(?) Paulean with equipment if there was a need for him to go to the auction house, he began to shoot Magic Spheres towards the front.

Pung-pung- pung-!

And had about 5 minutes passed like that?

The body of Holdream, who was surrounded by about a hundred people and suffered concentrated attacks, slowly began to crumble.

Even if he was a lv 270 boss monster, he didn't have enough skill to withstand hundreds of attacks while in a critically restricted state.

Thud-.

As Holdream's heavy build collapsed onto the ground, a large sound rang out, and a system message notifying of Holdream's death popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

- You have killed Holdream. You have obtained 3,485,910 EXP.
- As you have punished the monarch of an ancient corrupted group of giant, god-like people, your Fame has increased by 50 thousand.

Even if the NPCs were excluded and despite it being EXP divided between a party of almost 10 people, while looking at the huge amount that was over 3 million, Ian wore a satisfied smile.

‘Keu, it looks like I’ll even be able to hit lv 130 soon, too.’

However, just then, another message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

- The power of darkness that resided in the Crown of Holdream was lifted.

The crown that was on top of Holdream’s head floated in the air, and the current of dark purple light that circled around it came out and was sucked into Hoonie’s wooden skull plaque.

And continuing that, a flustering system message popped up.

- The Crown of Holdream has selected a new owner that has the strongest power.
- The Crown of Holdream has selected retainer ‘Kaizar’.

Hoonie’s complexion turned completely pale.

# Chapter 143: In the Middle of the Scramble of the Holy Grail (1)

---

“This, this...!”

With a devastated expression, Hoonie stared at Kaizar.

Holdream had turned into an ashy colour as he scattered in the air.

And the Crown of Holdream which floated up towards Kaizar...

Hoonie couldn't believe the condition message that popped in front of his eyes at all.

- The Crown of Holdream has selected 'Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar'.

At the one line-long message that made all of his efforts up until now into foam, Hoonie cried out.

“Euaah! My quest... My quest, though...!”

Separate from that, Kaizar, who received the Crown of Holdream before he realized, wore a satisfied expression as he looked at the crown.

“Keuh, the item has an eye for people.”

And Kaizar turned his head towards Ian.

“Did you see, Lord guy? I am this great.”

“ ... ”

With a dumbfounded expression, Ian stared back and forth at Kaizar and Hoonie.

How this situation went, even Ian didn't really understand.

‘This... Is it right to be happy?’

He felt even more sorry at Hoonie's expression that looked like he would cry any moment now.

And Hoonie, who didn't know that Kaizar was Ian's retainer, couldn't do anything else but swear at the development side of Kailan.

‘Damn it. This is toying with the users. This is user insulting! I need to call LB Sports and complain.’

However, Hoonie knew well that even if he did that, nothing would change.

With a devastated expression, Hoonie mumbled.

“What the hell! How can it be so twisted like this?”

But that didn't mean that he could even conceive the idea of charging at Kaizar and taking the crown.

This was because he hadn't forgotten that imposing figure that knocked down Death Knight Ballam in just a couple of attacks.

With a pitiful expression, Ian spoke to Hoonie.

“Yo, what should we do with this?”

“...”

“This is an uncontrollable force.”

Hoonie glared at Ian.

“Are you trying to pick a fight with me?”

“No, well, not a fight.”

Hoonie found Ian detestable, but because it wasn't like a situation where he could say anything to Ian, he couldn't do anything else but swallow his anger internally.

Since it was a situation that was completely unrelated to Ian's will.

However, just then, Ballam opened his mouth.

- Hoonie, there is another way to accomplish the duty of the Immortal.

Along with those words, Hoonie's gaze automatically turned.

“What, what is it?”

Ballam's words were the same as a ray of light in pitch-black darkness to Hoonie.

Ballam spoke while slightly staring at Kaizar.

- For 100 days from now, you must stay near the owner of the crown and obtain the dark energy that leaks out into the wooden plaque.

And Ballam pointed to the wooden skull plaque that was in Hoonie's hands.

- Fortunately, because the seal of darkness on the crown has been released, the dark energy that was saved up will continuously flow out. It takes about twenty days to gather all of that.

At those words, Hoonie's expression slightly brightened.

If he could just successfully complete the quest, losing one artifact was nothing.

A duration of twenty days was quite long, but since the 'Power of the Immortal' was a charming ability, that much time wasn't a waste.

"What a relief..."

However, just then, an indifferent voice was heard from behind them.

"Who decided that? Don't even appear briefly near me, weird child."

The owner of the voice was none other than Kaizar.

Hoonie's face turned pale again.

"No, exactly why? I'm just saying that I'll obtain the dark energy that pours out!"

Kaizar waved his hand as he replied.

“Kanjihoonie, you...”

Everybody’s gaze focused on Kaizar’s mouth.

And at his words that followed, Hoonie despaired.

“Are too unlikeable.”

“ ... ”

Kaizar’s words were firm.

On top of that, because his words were to his liking(?), he couldn’t even rebut, and Hoonie was at a loss for words.

Out of shock, Hoonie stuttered.

“Un, unlikeable, you say! To the next sovereign of darkness that will continue the Power of the Immortal...!”

Kaizar shook his head.

“As expected, you’re weird.”

“ ... ”



Ian barely held back the laughter that was about to come out of his mouth, and spoke to Kaizar.

For some reason, he wanted to help that poor child brat.

“Retainer.”

“What, Lord guy.”

“Don’t be like that and help him out once.”

As Ian unexpectedly stood on his side, Hoonie’s complexion slightly brightened.

However, Kaizar’s expression was still lukewarm.

“Why do you say so?”

“Him, if you get to know him, he’s a poor kid. Look, just from looking at how he talks, he doesn’t seem like a normal kid.”

Kaizar slightly gazed at Hoonie.

And as if he was saying he understood, he nodded his head.

“There is some truth to your words.”

While looking at the two people that treated him like a weird person, Hoonie was infuriated, but he couldn't express it.

Since the most important thing to him right now was the quest.

“Yo, child brat.”

At Kaizar's calling, Hoonie reflexively replied.

“Hmm?”

“If you accept my proposal, then I will consider it.”

Hoonie quickly asked.

“Proposal? What is it?”

And Kaizar's words continued.

“You just need to become my subordinate from now on. Since I can't shove around the Lord guy, I need one person to shove around.”

“...”

Out of humiliation(?), Hoonie's fist shook.

“A person you can shove around, you say...!”

Kaizar opened his mouth again.

“However!”

The gazes of Hoonie and Ballam, as well as Ian, were on Kaizar's mouth.

“If you become stronger than me, I will give you freedom. How about it? If you are the heir of the Immortal, then shouldn't you have at least that much audacity?”

The gazes of Hoonie and Kaizar collided in the air.

And at this unpredictable development of the situation, Ian wore an excited expression.

Hoonie closed both of his eyes while he was submerged in his thoughts.

‘Ha, what should I do with this?’

Hoonie slightly opened his eyes and slyly stared at Kaizar.

‘If I obtain the Power of the Immortal, will I be able to beat him?’

Hoonie didn’t know what Kaizar’s exact level was.

Because Ian put all settings on private, the levels of all of Ian’s retainers, including Kaizar, were not revealed.

He could only guess Kaizar’s strength with just the fighting power he saw from the outside.

‘Alright. No matter how high his level is, would it be over 200? The levels of NPCs don’t go up easily, so if I just have the Power of the Immortal, then I should be able to catch up soon.’

Just like Hoonie thought, unless it was a special circumstance, the levels of NPCs never went up.

However, the problem was that Kaizar wasn’t a normal NPC.

Kaizar was Ian’s retainer, and he was still continuing to grow.

Conclusively, Kaizar’s level was at 247.

The problem was that it was much higher than the level that Hoonie was thinking of to the point it was incomparable.

The mouth of Hoonie, who didn’t know of these facts, slowly

opened his mouth.

“Alright! I’ll do it.”

Kaizar stared at Hoonie with a bleary look.

“Really?”

“Yeah. However, keep your promise.”

“What promise are you talking about?”

“If I beat you, then this contract will nullify.”

At Hoonie’s words, Kaizar smirked.

“Of course. I, Kaizar, am a man of my word. Trust me.”

And as Hoonie nodded his head, Kaizar opened his hand towards Hoonie.

At that, Hoonie stared at Kaizar with nervous eyes, and surprisingly, a message window popped up in front of Hoonie’s eyes.

Ring-.

- Master and Servant Contract

Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar wants to appoint you as his subordinate.

If you accept, you will become the subordinate of Undefeated Swordsman Kaizar, and until you meet the conditions, you cannot cancel the contract.

Requirement: Victory against Kaizar in a 1:1 battle.

\*If you violate an order, Kaizar may attack you.

\*If Kaizar destroys the contract before you meet the requirements, your Fame will decrease by 100 thousand.

Will you accept the contract?

And Ian, who was watching that scene from the side, looked at Kaizar with surprised eyes.

‘NPCs that have become retainers could give quests, too?’

Ian wasn’t able to know what kind of message window popped up in front of Hoonie’s eyes, but the effect that was floating above Hoonie’s head was definitely the same one that popped up when

one received a quest.

Ian pitied Hoonie even more.

‘No way... It’s not like he’ll accept, right? It’s just called a conditional contract, but with a condition like that, it’s alright to see it as a life-long contract.’

However, he had no intentions of stopping him.

This was because, even from Ian’s stance, he thought that it was the same as him gaining another subordinate that he could shove around.

‘Since the more subordinates there are, the better. And that guy is quite useful as well.’

And just like Ian was anticipating, Hoonie accepted Kaizar’s proposal.

“Alright, I will accept.”

While looking at Hoonie, who was still shaking his tightly held fist, Herz, who was standing next to him, whispered to Ian.

“Yo, isn’t he in big trouble?”

Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right. It’s become serious.”

Fiolan, who was nearby, also added on.

“That kid, I feel bad for him. A little later, when he realizes the reality, he might even delete his character.”

Even Bbookbbook, who came down by Ian’s feet, shook his head.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-.

Even Bbookbbook looked at Hoonie with a pitiful expression.

In Bbookbbook’s eyes, his vicious owner Ian, who was cheap with meatballs, and Kaizar looked the same for some odd reason.

However, no matter what people nearby thought, Hoonie burned up his fighting spirit.

“I will raise my skills quickly to the point that I will be able to beat you, you arrogant guy, and then challenge you. You won’t avoid me then, right?”

Of course, the thing that returned to Hoonie, was Kaizar’s sneer.



“Fix your words first, kid. To be talking so rudely to your master like that.”

Ian, who heard Kaizar’s words, was dumbfounded.

‘What? When he’s a retainer guy that calls his Lord a Lord guy!’

Separate from Ian’s thoughts, Hoonie let out a deep sigh as he nodded his head.

“Understood, Master.”

“Your words are short.”

“[Under...stood.](#)”

While grabbing his staff from the ground, Hoonie was swallowing his pent-up anger.

“Keuk. For me, the next sovereign of darkness to be in such a state!”

And Ballam comforted him.

- It was a choice that couldn’t be helped for the revival of the Immortal, Hoonie. You will be able to overcome this hardship then.

On the other hand, Ian, who heard the two people's conversation, wore an aghast expression.

‘Huh, really, how could anyone be like that?’

In no time, Hoonie had moved into this situation and role.

Ian shook his head and slowly moved his feet.

There were complications, but either way, since they succeeded in killing Holdream, they needed to secure the treasures of Holdream.

‘Behind that door, the artifacts will probably be piled there, right?’

Excluding the Holy Grail, they would need to divide the items evenly, but even considering that, Ian didn't doubt that he would be able to obtain an incredible reward.

“The Holy Grail is probably inside there, right?”

At Ian's question, Hellaim nodded his head.

“Probably so, no?”

Holding the doorknob, strength went into Ian's hand, and the

steel door that was firmly shut creaked and began to slowly open.

In Korean, there was a difference between the two ‘understood’, with the first one being informal and the second being formal.

# Chapter 144: In the Middle of the Scramble of the Holy Grail (2)

---

Ring-.

- The 'DarkRuna' Guild has succeeded in occupying the first base in the central continent.
- The Guild's Fame has increased by 100 thousand.
- Base Rank: None
- The desolate base must be developed, and the base rank must be raised.
- Suppress the surrounding monsters, and begin internal affairs.

The Guild Master of the DarkRuna Guild, Ilahan, was the strongest person in the Korean server of Kailan both in name and reality.

Ilahan, who put in the first flag in the middle of the central continent, wore a satisfied expression.

“Good. It looks like us DarkRuna Guild will be able to preoccupy this large update as well.”

Ilahan's class was known to be the hidden class 'Magic

Swordsman’.

However, because there was no other user besides Ilahan that had this ‘Magic Swordsman’ class, there was very little known information on it.

No one even knew besides Ilahan whether it was a hidden class derived from the Magician-class or a hidden class derived from the Warrior-class.

Because even Ilahan put all of his information on a private setting like Ian, he didn’t pop up on the ranking list either, so no one even knew of his level.

If Ilahan’s exact class was revealed, the users speculated that between Red-Flame Magician Remir, who was first place in the Magician rankings, and Shyakran, the Titan Guild Master who was first place in the Warrior rankings, one of them would be pushed back a rank.

“Ilahan, it looks like we will be able to expand to about two more bases soon. Shall I command them to expand more?”

At the words of the man that looked like he was one of the people in the executives of the DarkRuna Guild, Ilahan shook his head.

“No, I don’t think there will be a need for that. Since even if we were to increase our bases more, we don’t even have enough power to spare to protect it. For now, just suppress the surrounding of the

occupied base, and put strength into growing it.”

“Yes, understood.”

As the man that responded turned around and went out of the base station, Ilahan opened his mouth towards a female user that stood next to him.

“Sollin, have you found a lead related to Holdream’s Holy Grail?”

At Ilahan’s words, the female user called Sollin nodded her head as she replied.

“Yes, I’ve found it, Master.”

Ilahan asked again with a pleased expression.

“Good. What about the location?”

“The grave of Holdream is inside the ancient ruins that are near the middle area of the central continent. I presume that you will be able to obtain the Holy Grail there.”

Ilahan nodded his head.

“Okay. Sollin, I will pack up about 30 people and head over first. Follow us immediately.”

At Ilahan's words, Sollin momentarily hesitated as she opened her mouth.

"However, Master, there is one problem."

"What problem?"

"That... There seems to be users that went into the ruins before us. Looking at their flag, I think they are Luspel Empire users."

The moment he heard those words, Ilahan's eyes shone.

Ilahan opened his mouth with an interested expression.

"Oh-ho...? Were there any guys that had enough ability to enter the middle area of the central continent this quickly amongst the Luspel Empire users?"

Sollin asked carefully towards Ilahan.

"What shall we do, Master? Don't you think we should move as quickly as possible right now? If we lose the Holy Grail, our plans will be quite twisted."

However, different from Sollin, who wore a slightly impatient expression, Ilahan was wearing an incredibly relaxed expression.

Ilahan grinned as he spoke.

“There’s no need to rush, Sollin.”

“Huh...?”

The corners of Ilahan’s mouth slightly curled upwards.

“It doesn’t matter if we go slowly. We just need to make sure we don’t lose them.”

“That means...”

“If they come out carrying the Holy Grail, we just need to steal it from them, so I’m saying that there’s nothing to be worried about. Instead, it has become more interesting. I was worried that it would be too boring, too.”

Ilahan untied a sack holding a blue sword that he had wrapped around his waist and handed it to Sollin.

“Head over first with this sword. Don’t go into the dungeon, just guard the front. So that you can hit them as soon as they come out, that is.”

Sollin took the sword and asked.



“What kind of item is this sword?”

“It’s an item the king has given. It’s Offensive Power and Options themselves aren’t that good, but it has Summoning Magic on it, so you’ll be able to use it quite well.”

Sollin nodded her head as she replied.

“Understood.”

Ilahan called Sollin.

“Sollin.”

“Yes, Master.”

“Luspel scraps, you’ll be able to face them even though I don’t go there personally myself, right?”

Sollin smiled coldly as she replied.

“Of course, Master.”

The place that Ian’s party came into was a place that was the same as a treasure house with glittering gold light decorated everywhere.

However, the problem was that the space was just showy, and in reality, there weren't many luxurious items to be seen.

Even the piles of gold looked like a lot at first, but after distributing it, each person could only take about a little over 50 thousand gold.

Hiding his disappointed heart, Ian moved his feet towards the innermost platform.

‘Still, there’s the Holy Grail, fortunately.’

On the platform, the golden Holy Grail, which was about the size of a winning trophy of a sports competition, was perched there, and Ian grabbed that.

Since the most important thing right now was Holdream’s Holy Grail.

Ring-.

- You have obtained ‘Holdream’s Holy Grail’.
- You have satisfied the clear requirements of the ‘Exploration of the Historical Site of Shikar’ Quest.
- Clear Rank: S

- As you have successfully cleared the quest, you have obtained 25 million EXP.
- As you have successfully cleared the quest, you have obtained 100 thousand Fame.
- A new connected quest has activated.

And following that, a quest window popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

- Base Occupation Using Holdream's Holy Grail.

You have successfully killed Holdream and put the Holy Grail into your hands.

The holy water inside Holdream's Holy Grail makes the growth of central continent bases 2 times faster, and it reduces the time it takes to occupy a base by half.

Using the abilities of the Holy Grail, occupy a base.

Quest Difficulty Level: None.

Quest Condition: Unknown.

Time Limit: 7 days

\*If the Holy Grail is lost or stolen, the quest will be failed.

\*In the case that the stolen Holy Grail is recovered, the quest can be restarted.

Ian read through the message that popped up in a calm and orderly way as he nodded his head.

And for a moment, he was submerged in his thoughts.

‘Looking at the fact that there’s a precondition in case the Holy Grail is stolen, that definitely means that there is another power existing that is after this Holy Grail... Are there NPCs or monsters that are after the Holy Grail?’

Ian, who had no idea that quests related to the Holy Grail were activated here and there, firstly assumed that there were NPCs or monsters that had their eye on the Holy Grail.

Since it was impossible for a normal user to know of the existence of the Holy Grail if it wasn’t for the quest.

And that wasn’t exactly a wrong assumption either.

Even if other users were deducted, NPCs that were after the Holy Grail like Ian thought existed.

Ian asked towards Hellaim.

“Leader, how are you going to move now?”

With the king’s command, the royal knights were to help Ian just up to the Exploration of the Historical Site of Shikar quest.

As he had no idea whether they would continue to help him even afterwards, he had asked.

And it was just as Ian thought.

“Us royal knights must meet the second party and build the front line of the front now, Viscount.”

“I see. Where will the front line be built?”

Hellaim’s words continued.

“We do not know yet. By tossing and turning with the Kaimon Empire Army, the front line will probably be formed.”

Ian nodded his head.

“I see.”

And he diligently put his brain to work.

‘Then we need to occupy a base closest to the place the army of the empire is staying at in order to protect it safely...’

The Lotus Guild had grown at a blinding rate during that time and was strong enough to be close enough to the top 100 guilds now, but despite that, it wasn’t a fighting power that could enter this quickly into the central continent.

Since, compared to the guilds in the top 10, it was still the difference between an adult and a child.

‘No, rather than overdoing it and proceeding with the quest, it might even be better to concentrate on growing.’

Ian, who finished organizing his thoughts, quickly organized his equipment, and in order to move again, he called his guild members over.

“Fiolan, from now on, it could be really dangerous.”

At Ian’s words, Fiolan asked with a puzzled expression.

“Why’s that?”

“It seems that it will most likely be difficult to receive the help of the royal knights now.”

And Fiolan suddenly wore a flustered expression.

“Hul...”

Herz was just as surprised.

“Yo, there’s only ten of us and there’s no way that we can occupy and guard a base with this fighting power. It will be hard enough to even just hunt the field monsters with the guild’s fighting power.”

Herz’s words were an obvious.

Since the average level of the ten guild members here right now was around the mid-120s, but the levels of the field monsters were at 140 no matter how low it was.

Ian had an outrageous PvE ability, but the fact that it wasn’t enough was the reality.

“That’s why, I think for now we need to raise our levels a bit while hunting.”

Fiolan asked with a quizzical voice.

“Hunt? The quest was shared with us as well right now, so we saw it pop up... Don’t we need to occupy a base as quickly as possible? There’s even a time limit.”

However, Ian shook his head.

No matter how much he thought about it, running around so rashly right now was too dangerous.

He decided instead that it was better to grow as much as they could inside this grave, where, on top of becoming familiar with it, their first discoverer's buff overlapped twice, and they could obtain 4 times the EXP.

'It's the same whether we fail the quest 7 days later, or get the Holy Grail stolen from us and fail the quest.'

Ian opened his mouth.

"Fiolan. You know that with this fighting power, if we go out and meet a Heroic-rank field boss, then we will be annihilated immediately, right?"

If it was a Heroic-rank boss monster of the central continent, its minimum level would be at least lv 170.

Fiolan sighed deeply.

"Whew... That is true."

"To be honest, even if we were lucky and somehow were able to



go to an empty base, with just a couple monster attacks, it will all be game over for us like that.”

If the base was established, the monsters in the surrounding gathered together in large-scale sizes and raided the base.

The fighting difficulty level itself would increase significantly in comparison to just wandering around the field and hunting.

If they had a defensive wall to at least attempt in a defensive battle, it would be a different story, but in a base with desolate land, there was no way that such a thing would exist.

Herz, who was silent, asked towards Ian.

“So, what are you saying we should do? Are we giving up on the quest?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah, I think you would have to consider giving this up for now. Since we’re going to be hunting in here for a full week, and if we do that, then we’ll just have a day left within the time limit... Occupying a base within that time is going to be difficult by the looks of it.”

Fiolan licked her lips.

“Hm, that’s a little disappointing. My heart was fluttering because I thought that if we succeed with the quest, then we will be able to get hit by another EXP bomb.”

Ian smirked.

“Rather than that, you will probably gain 100 times more EXP hunting in here for a full week while gaining 4 times the EXP. Since there are no boss monsters that are Heroic-rank or more in here, even if we move with just ourselves carefully, we should be able to hunt continuously.”

Fiolan also agreed with Ian’s words.

“That is true. Based on the fact that I’m already at lv 129...”

And one of the guild members that had gathered nearby before they realized and heard what they said asked Ian.

“Then what level are you at now, Ian?”

Ian grinned as he replied.

“I just leveled up one level, so I hit 132.”

Herz opened his mouth with a baffled expression.

“132? Are you sure you’re not going into the top 10 of the general rankings like this?”

Ian shook his head.

“No, probably not that. Wouldn’t the top 50 users probably all be over lv 140 by now?”

“Is that so?”

“They probably are. Since when I checked the rankings before we started this quest, the user that was about 50th was at lv 138 or so.”

Fiolan mumbled as she spoke.

“But it’s basically a definite that Ian is first place in the Summoner rankings... then who could be in second place? Looking at the Summoner ranking list that popped up in the community last time, first place was marked as a lv 115 user.”

Because Ian’s information was placed as private, his name had never gone up in the Summoner ranking list.

And because they couldn’t guarantee that there wasn’t a Summoner user that maintained private settings up until now like Ian either, Ian shrugged his shoulders as he replied.

“Well, there could be another Summoner that’s a similar level as

me. Since that we don't know."

However, Herz shook his head wearing an expression as if it didn't make sense while he shook his head.

"Crazy, there couldn't be anyone that exists like that. There's no way that there's another lucky wacko like you."

"Yo... To call me a lucky wacko..."

Fiolan also nodded her head as if she was agreeing with Herz's words.

"His expression was a little extreme... But I also completely agree."

Ian replied with a sullen expression.

"Ha, even you, Fiolan..."

However, while they murmured and shared a conversation...

Plop-.

Bbookbbook, who ingested all of the meatballs that he received from Ian before he realized, came down to the ground and crawled towards somewhere.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

However, because close to about 100 people were in maintenance, the grounds were incredibly noisy, so no one could discover the disappearing Bbookbbook.

And just when about 10 minutes passed.

Ian was able to discover the fact that Bbookbbook had disappeared.

# Chapter 145: In the Middle of the Scramble of the Holy Grail (3)

---

“What the hell, is a war actually starting then?”

At the line of empire soldiers that connected endlessly to the point that they could connect from one town to another, the users looked at the empire army with excited expressions as they whispered to each other.

“Wow, for it to be a war that’s on a scale like this. I want to participate in the war, too!”

“What do you mean participate, this friend’s dreams are even big. I just want to be able to even get close and watch. It will probably be really amazing, right?”

“Cut it out, guys. With our level we can’t even go into the Wasteland, let alone the central continent. You’ll probably die after getting hit by a random Shikar Desert mob a couple times.”

“Yo, still, I’m at lv 90, do you really think I’ll die in one hit?”

“Yes, for sure.”

“...”

The war declaration of the Kaimon Empire and the Luspel

Empire was produced into a cool video and was being broadcasted through the game broadcasting companies, and the attention of all the users that played Kailan was leaning towards the central continent.

It was the first all-time large-scale battle happening between the two giant empires in Kailan.

And high-ranking users of the small minority, who received a quest related to the battle or were personally participating, couldn't help but be the subjects of envy.

Since at this point, in order to step foot into the central continent, you needed to be at least lv 120 or higher.

However, there were a lot of voices of complaint.

“No, how is it that the update they did saying it was for new content just a banquet for the small minority of top-rankers?”

“No kidding. I was anticipating, while wondering if new classes were coming out this time as well. But forget about new classes, there's absolutely nothing new for a lv 50 user like me.”

“Excuse me, people. You're complaining right now after having finished all the content, right? I still have a ton to do, so I found I didn't really have much to complain about...”

“...”

In some ways, this was an obvious sequence.

In Kailan, the users that were lv 120 or higher merely made up a small minority of about 0.1% of the top rankings.

As the server that opened up first, the Korean server, as well as the Europe and North America server were at this rate, the complaining was more severe in the foreign servers that opened late.

Since in the case of the new server, there was not even one user that could step foot into the central continent.

However, after a couple days passed, the complaints of the users instantly blew over.

This was because quests related to the war that anybody could do began to appear all over the empire.

- Look here, youngster. Soon after, my one and only son, who is an empire soldier, will be dispatched to the central continent. I want to make some marvelous equipment for my son... By any chance, would you be able to find and bring me 7 Iron Ores?

From material gathering quests that gave quite a generous reward...

- Hey, you, seeing that you have a strong build... If you just learn a little, you look like



you could fight well. How about it, coming into the Guards of the Luspel Empire and showing off your skills? If you work hard, you could even skip over Decanus and Centurion, and become an Officer.

To having the opportunity to find employment as a soldier of the empire.

As there was even the opportunity to be promoted, it wasn't a proposal that could be ignored as a soldier.

At the new quests and content that were continuously created like this, the users immediately wore a broad smile again.

Especially the chance to get employment(?) affiliated with the empire as an empire soldier, blacksmith, magician, or knight took centre stage with a lot of the users.

The rank or occupational group given was all different depending on the user's abilities, but if you obtained a job position(?) related to the imperial family, because you could gather contributions little by little, and above everything else, the Fame reward was so good to the point it was incomparable to other quests, it was to the point that within the users, the employment craze hit everybody.

It was even to the point that in the real time chatting room of the community, heated discussions related to the jobs arose.

- Everybody, soon, I will be promoted to a Decanus. To be a Decanus when I'm a lv 40, isn't that so freaking awesome?

- Person above, so far as my observations go, you're not affiliated with the central royal guards. Based on the fact that you hit Decanus at lv 40... It seems that you're affiliated with the local small manor vigilante, so I'm not one bit jealous.
- Ha, this person is sharp...
- What do you mean sharp. It's weird if you don't know.
- Huhu, everyone, don't be surprised. As soon as I took the test, I was immediately given a job as a Decanus affiliated with the central royal knights. The weekly pay is 400 thousand gold, Keu-ha-hat!
- Hul, above person, by any chance, could you share your class and level? I'm curious.
- I'm currently a lv 107 Warrior-class user.
- Hul! No way. I'm a lv 112, but I failed the Decanus real match interview...!
- Huhu, this would be the physical difference, no?
- Until you upload a picture for proof, I cannot believe you.
- Haha, these people. Please wait a moment, I will bring a screenshot.

Through this new update, Kailan stood on a new phase overall, and although having already claimed 1st place with an overwhelming share of the VR game market, Kailan began to rise

even more.

No matter what game channel was turned on, information and stories related to the war happening in the central continent were being shown, and despite being a game that had almost been released for a year, new users were constantly flowing in.

And Ian and the Lotus Guild were standing right in the centre of that.

\*

“Bbookbbook, I’ll give you a meatball, so don’t hide and come out!”

“Park Bbookbbook, where are you?”

“What the hell is Park Bbookbbook?”

“You said you’re Bbookbbook’s hyung. So, I thought his family name was also Park like yours.”

“...”

The empire knights, who finished maintenance, had all left, and before the Lotus Guild members buckled down to start hunting, they began to go around the dungeon looking for Bbookbbook, who disappeared.

At first, Ian thought that he would be able to find him immediately like any other time, so he didn't think much of it, but as time passed by, he began to grow worried.

What was even worse was...

- Familiar 'Bbookbbook' has denied Summon Release.
- Familiar 'Bbookbbook' cannot be Summon Released.

Ian wore a flustered expression.

'What the hell? He denied Summon Release? Did he at least discover something that's more delicious than meatballs?'

The time that went to no good purpose felt wasteful, but still, as the priority was finding Bbookbbook before hunting, Ian diligently looked for Bbookbbook with his guild members.

And it wasn't like they weren't hunting at all either.

Since they needed to catch the monsters that they ran into while wandering around before continuing.

"Lord guy, why are you looking so hard for that ugly turtle?"

At Kaizar's words, Celia, who was beside him, replied in place of Ian.

“What do you mean ugly! Do you know how cute Bbookbbook is?”

“Ha... I think that turtle and my subordinate guy looks similar. Their body proportions seem to be similar as well...”

At Kaizar's words, Hoonie, who followed next to him, scowled.

“To compare me to that big-headed turtle... I think that's too much, Master.”

“[Your words are short again](#). Do you want to get hit?”

“...”

At the unbearable humiliation(?) that he had never experienced up until now, Hoonie shook his fist.

‘This too shall pass...’

And he thought.

‘If I feel like I won't be able to beat that monster-like dude... Once I've just absorbed all the dark energy, I should throw away 100

thousand Fame and terminate the contract.'

However, this thought of Hoonie was an incredibly incorrect idea.

No, rather than incorrect, it was more like impossible.

This was because Hoonie had read the contract content incorrectly.

Specifically, the contract content that said, 'if Kaizar destroys the contract before you meet the requirements, your Fame will decrease by 100 thousand.'

If the content was read, it could be understood, but breaking free from Kaizar at the cost of 100 thousand fame was not a situation that Hoonie could make.

In the case that Kaizar lost interest in Hoonie and he destroyed the contract, it meant that 100 thousand Fame would also be thrown away with it.

However, Hoonie, who read that part incorrectly, thought of the 100 thousand Fame as the last resort as he stubbornly endured.

However, just then, one of the guild members called Ian with a loud voice.

“Oh, Ian! What’s that over there?”

“What?”

And everybody’s gaze turned to the place that they were pointing towards.

“That thing shining brightly over there. I think in that corner over there, a light is glowing softly?”

“Let’s take a look.”

The party, including Ian, walked towards the place that the light was shining from with careful footsteps.

They had no idea what would appear in the inside where their range of vision was dark, and since this area was the beginning of the high level hunting grounds, where the average level range was over 140, carelessness must be avoided.

And as they slowly turned the corner, a familiar backside caught the eyes of the party.

“What the hell?”

“Bbookbbook, what are you doing here?”

That was the backside of Bbookbbook.

What was more baffling was the form of the monster(?) that was standing face to face with Bbookbbook.

Ian mumbled with a dumbfounded expression.

“What the hell, he... Looks the same as Bbookbbook.”

The monster that was face to face with Bbookbbook in front of a narrow passageway was a sea turtle that had a similar appearance to Bbookbbook.

However, different from Bbookbbook, who had a dark, navy blue shell, the opposing turtle was a golden turtle whose whole body shone with a golden light.

As Bbookbbook’s large head, which already stood out enough, shone with a golden light, that appearance truly took the cake.

However, Ly, who followed beside Ian without a word, asked Ian all of a sudden.

- Owner.

“Ly, what’s wrong?”



- By any chance, is that turtle the one that you talked about last time... The coolest-looking turtle in the world, [Bbakbbak](#)?

“Huh...?”

- It seems his name is Bbakbbak because his head shines that brightly. But why is that turtle here? Owner, didn't you say last time that Bbakbbak was in the northern continent?

“...?”

At Ly's words, Ian momentarily wore a flustered expression.

And Fiolan, who was next to him, asked.

“Ian, what is Bbakbbak now? Was there a turtle like that as well?”

Herz showed interest with an excited expression.

“What is this, Bbookbbook even had a friend? That golden turtle, is that a turtle you know?”

At the two people's questions, Ian, who was momentarily in a daze, suddenly remembered the story of the 'Good-looking Turtle Bbakbbak' that he made up last time without much thought.

‘What, what the hell is this...?’

Ly’s mumbling continued.

- Come to think of it, I think he truly is more good-looking than Bbookbbook. It’s to the point I want to touch that shining head once.

It seemed that he heard Ly’s words, as Bbookbbook, who was in the middle of confronting the golden turtle with a serious expression, turned his head and glared.

Glare!

“Jinsung, his expression is really serious. This is the first time I’ve seen him this serious besides when he eats meatballs.”

“Same...”

Ian replied.

“Same goes for me.”

Bbookbbook, who glared every so often at the party that only said offensive things, began to crawl over towards the golden turtle.

And they didn’t know why, but the party all held their breath as they watched that scene.

It was an expression that the protagonist of a martial arts book or movie met a mortal enemy on top of a single log bridge!

Bbookbbook wore a resolutely determined expression, and even Kaizar began to watch the combat of the two big-headed turtles with an interest as well.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

What he was saying was unknown, but Bbookbbook pompously shouted.

And Bbakbbak(?) stood up to him and also opened his mouth.

However, surprisingly, Bbakbbak knew how to speak in the human language.

Bbakbbak stared at Ian instead of Bbookbbook and opened his mouth.

- Human, do you know of me?

“Huh...?”

- Bbakbbak, huh... For me to have such a cool name!

“Pfft...!”

In order to hold back the laughter that burst out in such a serious(?) situation, Ian had to use all of his strength.

Similar situation as before, where Hoonie is speaking informally, and this cannot be expressed in English properly.

For those wanting to read the chapter where Bbakbbak is first unofficially introduced, please refer back to chapter 65! ^^

# Chapter 146: The Final of the Scramble of the Holy Grail (1)

---

“Bbook, bboo-bbook!”

‘I feel a strong energy from somewhere bbook!’

Bbookbbook, who was deliciously eating a meatball right after battle like any other time, suddenly jerked his head up.

He had felt a strong energy that he had never felt before up until now calling him.

After shoving all the meatballs that were in front of him into his mouth, Bbookbbook nodded his head at Ian.

“Bboo-bbook!”

‘Owner, I’m just going to take care of some business for a moment bbook!’

Of course, there was no way that Ian, who was distracted, would have heard Bbookbbook’s report(?), but Bbookbbook didn’t care.

Since reports were just formalities anyways.

With excited footsteps, Bbookbbook began to crawl off.

‘Energy as strong as this means that there’s probably quite a delicious elixir bbook!’

Was it ever since he obtained Halli and Pin?

At some point, there were a lot more cases when Ian left Bbookbbook alone during battle.

Since he had a lot more Familiars, and they mostly fought battles using long-ranged skills, unless it was a very dangerous situation, he hunted without putting Bbookbbook on his back.

‘Because it’s been awhile since I’ve been hanging on his back for such a long time, I feel stifled to death bbook!’

However, ever since they came to the central continent, because the hunting grounds themselves were incredibly high-level and there was no leeway to be careless for even a moment, Ian had Bbookbbook on his back constantly.

Because of that, it was the first time in an incredibly long time that Ian had let Bbookbbook down, and Bbookbbook, who received freedom for the first time since entering the central continent, couldn’t help but feel excitement.

‘My heart is fluttering bbook! I hope it’s something more delicious than meatballs bbook!’

Ian didn't really know about this, but once Bbookbbook obtained freedom(?), he went out without Ian knowing and dug out and ate elixirs.

And in this giant dungeon that Bbookbbook came to for the first time in his life, elixirs that he would desire were scattered here and there.

The scents of the unknown that could be sensed more strongly as Bbookbbook moved made his short legs move even faster.

‘I’ve found one for now bbook!’

Bbookbbook, who successfully crawled up the wall with his chubby body, dug out the multi-coloured grassroot that was growing out of the cave wall and began to eat it.

“Bbook! Bboo-bbook!”

‘Hm, this aroma! This texture that can be felt on my tongue is beyond comparison bbook!’

To Bbookbbook, tasting all the elixirs that scattered here and there across the continent was an incredibly enjoyable job.

Of course, it was hard to find something that satisfied Bbookbbook more than meatballs, which had a stimulating taste that filled his mouth, but there was a different charm in tasting medicinal herbs.

‘I feel the energy of Mother Nature in my stomach bbook!’

Whenever he ate medicinal herbs, a new energy blew vigor into Bbookbbook’s whole body.

After completely gobbling up the large medicinal herb root, Bbookbbook started walking again.

However, an annoying message popped up in front of Bbookbbook’s eyes.

- You have ingested the Thousand-Year Multi-coloured Grass. The information can be shared with Owner ‘Ian’.

This annoying message popped up every time he ate a medicinal herb.

With a flat expression, Bbookbbook shook his head.

‘I don’t want to bbook! If my owner knows, then he’ll tell me to bring him one for himself as well bbook! I’m going to eat it all by myself bbook!’

As he did so, the message disappeared, and Bbookbbook began to move his feet quickly again.



‘Soon, my owner will figure out that I’ve disappeared and come looking for me bbook. I need to eat as much as I can before then bbook!’

Bbookbbook moved quickly to the point it was hard to believe that a speed like that could come from such short legs, and he went around consuming medicinal herbs inside of the dungeon.

And shortly after.

Just like Bbookbbook worried, an unknown strength began to wrap around Bbookbbook’s body.

His owner Ian had let out a command to Summon Release him.

Bbookbbook began to stubbornly resist the powerful, unknown strength.

‘I don’t want to bbook! I’m going to eat more bbook!’

As he did so, surprisingly, the blue light that wrapped around Bbookbbook began to disperse into the air.

And Bbookbbook, who had successfully rejected Ian’s Summon Release command, began to move his feet again.

‘Nobody can stop me bbook!’

With a confident appearance, Bbookbbook began to ingest the elixir he found again.

At first, Bbookbbook originally had no strength to reject Ian's command.

However, as he ingested elixirs and slowly became stronger, it became possible for him to reject this unknown energy.

Bbookbbook also had a small dream.

'If I consume more elixirs, it's possible that I could run away from this wicked owner bbook!'

Bbookbbook was a turtle labourer that dreamed of escaping his wicked owner that was cheap with his wage payments.

In many ways, gathering elixirs was an incredibly important(?) job for Bbookbbook.

However, just then, a different kind of voice was heard.

And the content couldn't help but pull Bbookbbook's attention.

- Who are you, this is the first time I have seen a turtle that has such a cool appearance ever since I was born!

At the appearance compliment, which could even make whales dance, Bbookbbook forgot about the medicinal herb he was chewing on and turned his head.

‘No, I never knew there would be someone that would recognize my handsome appearance from such an out-of-the-way spot bbook!’

And at the gaze that met his own, Bbookbbook couldn’t help but become taken aback.

This was because for an instant he was blinded by whatever was shining gold in colour.

“Bbookbboo-bbook-!”

Shortly after, Bbookbbook’s vision, which was clouded, returned to normal, and after checking the other, Bbookbbook’s two eyes rounded.

‘Bbook! This is my first time seeing such a cool turtle bbook!’

In front of Bbookbbook, a golden turtle that had a shell shining gold and a large, beautiful head was crawling towards him.

Even for Bbookbbook, the narcissist turtle, it was a perfect appearance that he couldn’t help but acknowledge.

There was one word that hit Bbookbbook's memory hard for a moment.

- Bbookbbook, you, do you know who is the most handsome and cool turtle in the world?

It was the story he heard from his wicked owner a couple months ago that he had a hard time believing.

- There is a turtle called Bbakbbak in the northern continent, and apparently, that turtle is the coolest turtle in the world.

Bbookbbook, who remembered the cool turtle story that he heard from Ian, wore a determined expression as he glared at the golden turtle.

His opponent was for sure the Bbakbbak that Ian spoke of.

‘Bbakbbak...! I had no idea that I would meet you in a place like this bbook!’

Bbakbbak was the wicked turtle that introduced Bbookbbook to the world of dieting and portion control.

Bbookbbook couldn't forget that name.

And internally, he hardened his determination.

‘If I can just eliminate that greasy-looking turtle guy, then I should be able to eat meatballs to my heart’s content again bbook...!’

And just before the two turtle’s combat was about to begin.

Ian and his party had appeared behind Bbookbbook.

\*

The central continent’s ancient historical site was in the middle of the desert.

Because of that, tons of sand hills existed around it, and on the corner of one of those hills, a large flag was flapping.

It was a guild flag with a white background and a black crescent moon drawn on it.

That was the flag of DarkRuna, the guild that was 1st place in rankings.

“Sollin, how long must we wait until?”

At the words of the user next to her, Sollin placed her index finger against her lips as she replied with a quiet voice.

“Let’s wait a little bit more. It’s best to not act rashly until Master arrives.”

Sollin was a high-level female Warrior user that was the group leader of scouting team no. 1 of the DarkRuna Guild.

She was lv 139.

And at this current moment, lv 139 was a high enough level to be close to the top 50 in the general rankings.

‘I feel like it’s time for them to come out now...’

Sollin searched the information of the dungeon.

- Grave of the Ancient, Giant, God-like People

Dungeon Rank: Heroic

Dungeon Level: 170

Dungeon Boss: Holdream Lv 270

Cleared or Not: Dungeon that has been cleared

First User that Cleared: Unknown

The grave of 'Holdream', the leader of the ancient, giant, god-like people.

If the boss is killed, the treasures of Holdream can be obtained with a low rate.

\*'Holdream's Holy Grail' has been obtained the first time it was cleared.

\*Item 'Holdream's Holy Grail' is only dropped in the very first clear.

Sollin, who checked through the information thoroughly, wore a puzzled expression.

“What the hell? Why is the First User that Cleared popping up as Unknown?”

Usually, for a dungeon's First User that Cleared, the name of the user that hit the boss last before the boss died popped up.

Because, even if it was a user that left their information on private, it was marked down similarly to something like '\*\*\* (Private)', Sollin was taken aback.

And a different guild member that was nearby solved her

question.

“Ah, if an NPC dealt the last hit on a boss, it seems that it gets written down like that. I’ve seen it before.”

“Ah...”

Sollin, who finally understood, nodded her head.

‘Either way, since it’s popped up as a dungeon that has been cleared... whether it’s an NPC or a person, someone will probably come out.’

And her expectations weren’t off.

“Sollin, there is someone coming out from over there.”

At a guild member’s words, Sollin’s gaze turned towards the exit of the historical site’s grave.

“Shall we attack right away?”

At that question, Sollin lifted one of her hands and stopped them.

“Let’s wait a bit. I don’t think it’s a user.”

Royal knights began to come out one by one following the exit of



the grave.

And Sollin, who checked the symbol drawn on the armor of the knights, could figure out immediately that they were knights affiliated with Luspel Empire.

‘No wonder... There’s no way that a guild affiliated with Luspel Empire could enter this quickly into the central continent alone.’

Splendor Guild, the guild that was the highest rank amongst the ones affiliated with Luspel, was ranked 3rd place.

However, compared to DarkRuna Guild or Titan Guild, who quarrelled over 1st and 2nd place, their fighting power was much lower.

This was because most of the users that were in the top 50 were affiliated with the two giant guilds.

Sollin momentarily contemplated.

‘If they are royal knights, then they’ll at least be over lv 140... Will we be able to fight them with our current fighting power?’

However, she didn’t take long to think about it.

Because there was no room for selection.

‘If we just send them off here, then we will definitely not be able to get the Holy Grail.’

It wasn’t even a normal guild, but the royal knights, and if they lost the Holy Grail to them, there was no way to find it back.

Sollin thought that the royal knights would definitely have the Holy Grail.

She wasn’t even able to think about the fact that someone was remaining inside a completed dungeon and was hunting.

‘With a guild fighting power of about 50 people now... And since Ilahan will be coming with the main force soon...’

It seemed there was roughly about 100 Luspel royal knights, and if that was the case, she felt they would even be able to fight them somehow with numerical superiority.

Since, if the main force all arrived, there would be about over 200 users even just counting the users that were over lv 130.

“How long did Master say he would take?”

“He said he would arrive in about 10 minutes.”

Sollin nodded her head.

“Alright, let’s fight them, then.”

At Sollin’s words, the guild members that were sitting down, hiding their bodies, simultaneously stood up.

“Understood.”

Seu-reu-reung-.

As she unsheathed and lifted the long greatsword from her waist, from the back of the line, the loud sound of a horn rang out.

Blare-!

- Through the ‘Morale Support’ effect of the ‘Horn of Victory’, the combat abilities of all of the guild members will increase by 5%.
- The movement of all of the guild members will increase in speed by 10%.
- The ‘Morale Support’ effect will last for 10 minutes, and whenever an opponent is killed, the duration time will increase by 5 seconds each time.

And the gazes of the Luspel royal knights, who heard the sound of the horn, turned towards the top of the sand hill at the same time.

“Charge...!”

Waaah-!

Like that, the first battle between both empires in the central continent began with the battle between the DarkRuna Guild and the Luspel royal knights, and in the future, it was the beginning of the disaster called the 'Nightmare of the Central Continent' amongst the DarkRuna guild members.

# Chapter 147: The Final of the Scramble of the Holy Grail (2)

---

“Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!”

The golden turtle Bbakbbak(?) paid no attention to Bbookbbbook, who circled around him as he picked a fight, and slowly approached Ian.

Bbakbbak opened his mouth.

- To meet a human that knows about my past, I’m moved. Did you say you were Ian?

On impulse, Ian nodded his head.

“Huh? Yeah...”

- Thank you for finding my name, Ian. To show my gratitude, I will give you a present.

“...”

Of course, Ian wore a dazed expression.

‘What exactly is even happening? Then was his actual name Bbakbbak? For real?’

Ian didn't know the reason why, but he held out his hand for now at the word that he would receive a gift.

Since, even if he didn't know what kind of case this was, there was no reason to turn down free things.

To be honest, it was an obvious that Ian didn't know, but a quest took effect as soon as Bbakbbak(?), a hidden NPC, was named by the first Summoner user he met.

More specifically, you could call him a NPC-monster.

However, for Ian, who would have had no way to find out that truth, couldn't help but be taken aback.

- This is one of the most valued possessions. I hope that you will handle it with care.

And as Bbakbbak opened his mouth, a sphere that shone brightly popped out and floated in the air.

It was a brilliant sphere that was the size of a fist of an adult male.

Ian grabbed it and lifted it up.

As he did so, a message rang out.

Ring-.

- You have obtained the item 'Turtle Spirit'.

'Turtle Spirit? What's this? It's Chinese characters I don't know...'

Firstly, as he didn't know what kind of item it was used as just from looking at it on the outside, Ian opened his inventory and checked the item information.

- Turtle Spirit

Classification: Talisman (Charm)

Rank: Legendary

Equip Limit: Can be equipped onto one 'Familiar'.

Durability: 55/55

Option: All combat abilities +55%

Cooldown times for all Inherent Abilities -15%

\*If equipped onto an 'Ancient Turtle' species, Defensive Power

will additionally increase by 50%.

\*If equipped onto an 'Ancient Turtle' species, 0.5% Vitality will be recovered per second.

\*If equipped onto an 'Ancient Turtle' species, Inherent Ability 'Curtain of Water' can be used.

Curtain of Water is made 30m wide and 10m high within range, and no kind of projectile will be able to pass through the curtain.

Curtain of Water lasts for 15 seconds.

(Cooldown time: 1 minute)

\*This is an item belonging to user 'Ian'.

This item cannot be transferred to another user or be sold, and even if the character dies, it does not drop.

(Transferrable only once for the first time.)

This is a marble that has part of the spirit of Golden Turtle 'Bbakbbak', a turtle from ancient legends, placed within it.

It is an item that has the secret required to ascend an ancient turtle into a turtle dragon.



Ian, who read through the explanation on the Turtle Spirit item, felt his mind snap into place.

‘It ascends an ancient turtle... Into a turtle dragon?’

Ian’s gaze immediately turned towards Bbookbbook.

‘Based on their appearance, I’m certain that Bbookbbook is of the same species(?) as Bbakbbak, so then?’

This could perhaps be the clue to the method on evolving Bbookbbook, which he had no idea on until now.

Ian was almost certain.

‘Bbookbbook, I was wondering what you would become to be eating so much, but you were to become a dragon!’

Towards Ian, who was thinking of this and that, Bbakbbak opened his mouth again.

- Ian, by any chance, could you do me a favour? I have been asleep for too long. I want to find my forgotten memories.

Following that, a quest window popped up.

This time, the quest window popped up in front of all the users that belonged to Ian's party.

Ring-.

- Golden Turtle 'Bbakbbak's Request (Hidden Quest)

Golden Turtle Bbakbbak, who had been asleep in the grave of the giant, god-like people in the ancient ruins, had woken up from a long sleep.

However, Bbakbbak, who had been asleep for too long, is not able to remember his past.

In order to find his memories again, the 'Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon' that is hidden somewhere in the grave must be found.

Find the Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon and return to Bbakbbak.

Quest Difficulty Level: SS

Quest Condition: A user that has obtained the trust of Golden Turtle 'Bbakbbak'.

A user that has succeeded in killing Holdream.

Time Limit: None.

Reward: Egg of the Golden Turtle (Can only be obtained by one person amongst the party members)

Scale Armour of the Turtle Dragon (Given to all party members)

Fame (Graded payment given depending on the clear rank)

Ian's pupils expanded.

He needed to have obtained information from Bbakbbak to solve Bbookbbook's evolution secret anyways, but as he was even granted a hidden quest like this, he at least wanted to dance.

'If I successfully complete a hidden quest like this, then my Affinity with the NPC will probably go up a lot, right?'

As it was obvious that the higher the Affinity, the more information you could obtain, Ian couldn't help but be in a good mood.

And it wasn't as much as Ian, but the expressions of the other users also became incredibly bright.

"Ian, have you clicked on this Scale Armour of the Turtle Dragon item?"

“No, why?”

“This is a freaking Legendary-rank item!”

As Fiolan spoke with excitement, Ian tabbed the Scale Armour of the Turtle Dragon item that popped up in the quest window.

As he did so, an armour with a fancy design drawn on it appeared in front of Ian’s eyes.

“Keu, it is cool.”

At Ian’s mumbling, Herz added on with a glowing tone.

“Yo, the problem isn’t that it’s cool right now! It’s a freaking Legendary-rank. I haven’t even been able to look at a Legendary-rank item yet, even in the auction house!”

At those words, Ian wore a puzzled expression.

“Oh, really? You don’t have even one Legendary-rank item yet?”

Herz asked back.

“Do you have one to be like that?”

“Of course. Let’s see here... I think I have about three.”

“...”

For an instant, everybody’s gazes filled with jealousy were aimed at Ian, who wore a sheepish expression.

Ian was flustered, so he stuttered as he smiled awkwardly.

“Ha, haha, I thought everybody at least had one...”

To be honest, Legendary-rank items were rare, but still, a user that has obtained one uploaded a proof shot in the community every now and then.

The only reason why it was hard to find a Legendary-rank item in the auction house was because most items starting from Legendary-rank were obtained as bound items.

For a moment, silence flowed.

The one that broke that silence was none other than Kaizar.

“Lord guy.”

“What, retainer.”

“You know that you have to give me that Scale Armour of the Turtle Dragon or whatever, right?”

“...?”

At Kaizar’s unexpected words, Ian became speechless.

“Why, why do I have to?”

At Ian’s question, Kaizar responded lightly.

“If you don’t give it to me, I won’t work. Lord guy.”

“... ”

Because the fighting power of Ian’s party was already too weak to make it through this dangerous dungeon, he couldn’t do anything else but cry as he bit the bullet and nodded.

“Ah, understood.”

In case their items would also be taken from them, Herz and Fiolan quickly turned away from Ian, and he wore a sullen expression.

\*

Because of Bbookbbook's affair(?) that was not part of the schedule and the meeting with Bbakbbak that followed, they were momentarily delayed, but after receiving the quest, Ian's party proceeded with hunting like planned.

It wasn't easy to hunt with high-level monsters that were around lv 150-170, but because Kaizar, who was to receive his daily wage(?), worked diligently, their hunting speed was getting faster little by little.

Before they realized, it had been 5 hours since they had begun hunting.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

- Retainer 'Kaizar' has attacked the 'Ancient Forgotten Revengeful Spirit' and has dealt critical damage.
- The 'Ancient Forgotten Revengeful Spirit's Vitality has been reduced by 24,875.
- The 'Ancient Forgotten Revengeful Spirit' has been killed.
- You have obtained 248,590 EXP.
- You have leveled up. You have reached lv 133.

Along with the system messages that popped up one after another, Ian's whole body was covered in a white light.

As he felt the pleasure of leveling up, Ian wore a satisfied smile.

“Keu, as expected, you need to go hardcore.”

At Ian’s words, Herz, who stood in the front holding his shield as he blocked the projectiles, grumbled.

“Yo, let’s rest from time to time while hunting. Do you think everybody else is like you as well? Everybody’s utterly exhausted now.”

At those words, Ian turned his head as he looked around.

And just like Herz said, everybody’s shoulders were drooping.

Ian, who saw that, licked his lips.

“Jjup, then shall we rest a bit?”

As soon as Ian said those words, everybody plopped down on the spot.

Fiolan, who sat next to Ian, shook her head as she opened her mouth.

“Ha, after I hunt with you, Ian, I become completely drained, but



because my EXP goes up so well, I can never turn you down.”

At those words, Herz smirked as he spoke.

“It’s not that you cannot turn him down, but that you hang onto him to go with you, Fiolan.”

“Did, did I now? Still, thanks to you, I’m already at lv 131. Hehe.”

“I’m a bit jealous about that.”

Before Ian sat down, he rotated through all of his buff skills before beginning his break.

“Speaking of which, how should we do the quest? This Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon or whatever... I have no idea as to where we even need to be looking for this.”

At Ian’s question, Fiolan replied without much thought.

“That, well, since it’s the Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon, shouldn’t it come out if we can catch that Turtle Dragon or whatever?”

Herz also added on with a soulless voice.

“What could a Turtle Dragon be? [Is it a dragon that looks like a](#)

[ghost](#)? Ghost dragon?”

At Herz’s words, Ian scolded him.

“You idiot, the ‘Gwi’ is turtle in Chinese characters. Such ignorant words.”

“Really? Then it’s a Turtle Dragon? Is it something like [Hyunmu](#)...”

However, Ian’s conceited act was derailed by Fiolan.

“Ian, I saw Hoonie teach you earlier already.”

“...!”

Ian laughed embarrassedly, while Herz turned his head with a surprised expression towards Hoonie, who was wearing an arrogant expression.

“Oh, kid! You’re smarter than you look.”

Hoonie grinned with a triumphant expression.

“Huhu, this is the body that will become the Black Magician of the legends. It would be weird if I wasn’t smart.”

Ian smirked as he made a sarcastic remark.

“He must have learned it from his worksheet that he solved yesterday.”

At Ian’s taunt, Hoonie flew off the handle.

“Are you looking down on the heir of the darkness right now?”

However, this fuss was immediately cleared by Kaizar.

Smack-!

Kaizar had lifted his sheath and hit the back of Hoonie’s head.

“You’re too loud, Subordinate guy!”

Unable to say anything, Hoonie wore a sullen expression as he just spun his head around.

For some reason, Ian felt sorry towards Hoonie.

“Suddenly, that kid looks a little pitiful.”

There was a momentary fuss during the break after hunting, but the limp party had recovered enough of their strength, and they stood up from their spot in order to begin hunting again.

However, just then.

The sound of a weak vibration began to be heard from a stone wall on one side of the grave.

Ku-reung- Ku-reu-reung-.

And Bbookbbook, who heard that weak vibration sound, began to crawl towards the direction that sound was coming from.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

‘Yo, Bbookbbook, where are you going now?’

Ian hurriedly grabbed Bbookbbook and put him on his back, and during that time, the vibrations grew bigger and bigger.

Ku-reu-reu-reung- Ku-gu-gung-!

“Everybody, be careful! Rocks are falling from above!”

Baang-!

As soon as Fiolan’s words ended, quite a large rock fell between the party, and Ian, who saw that, was startled.

“If you couldn’t dodge a size like that, you would end up kicking the bucket.”

While the party busily moved as they escaped the dangerous area, one of the stone walls of the grave began to split, and Ian hurriedly began to activate all of the buffs as the cooldown times ended.

“I think something will come out from over there. Everybody, get ready for combat!”

And shortly after.

Ping-!

A strong light that made it hard to even open their eyes exploded from between the cracked stone wall, and enveloped the party’s vision.

In Korean, Turtle Dragon is ‘Gwi-Ryong’. ‘Gwi’ alone means two things depending on the Chinese character it is derived from. One meaning is ‘ghost/spirit’, which is what Herz thought it meant, and the other is ‘turtle’, which is the correct meaning.

Hyunmu = The Black Tortoise; a mythical creature that is a hybrid of many animals, much like a Griffin. Also known as Xuanwu in Chinese and Genbu in Japanese.

# Chapter 148: Golden Turtle Dragon (1)

---

Bang-Ba-bang-!

There was a large explosive sound that rang out as well as a white flash of light that covered the desert zone.

- Leader of Luspel Empire's Knights 'Hellaim' has used skill 'Flash of Destruction'.
- Critical damage has been dealt!
- Vitality has been reduced by 28733!
- Defensive Power has been temporarily reduced by 40%.

The DarkRuna Guild members, who pompously charged towards the Luspel Empire's knights, truly began to fall apart.

“Sollin, by the looks of it, I think we've made a mistake!”

Sollin's expression crumpled.

“Damn it, how are empire knights this strong?”

Of course, if they were the average standard of empire knights, the DarkRuna Guild wouldn't have been slaughtered this gruesomely.

No, they would have almost been equal.

However, the problem was that the ones they disturbed were not normal empire knights, but the royal guards that were under direct control from the King.

On top of their average level being 170, Hellaim, who, although they didn't know his exact level, was definitely well over lv 200, was simply a disaster to the DarkRuna Guild users.

"I was a little disappointed to just return like this, but to have met some Kaimon rookies, this turned out well just in time!"

Like a fish that met water, Hellaim went around the battleground swinging his greatsword around.

Whoong-Whoong-!

Even just from hearing, the horror of the sound of the air splitting could be felt.

The moment they were struck with the outrageous lump of metal, which was as almost as tall as an adult male, the DarkRuna Guild members, who were not yet even lv 140, turned black just like that and disappeared.

Bang-!

A sound too extreme and blunt to be considered something coming from being hit by a sword could be heard, and the guild members that were attacked were blown far back and turned into a grey light.

Plop-.

While looking at about five or six of her guild members die in an instant right in front of her eyes, Sollin fiddled with the sword she received from Ilahan.

‘Even if I were to use the Summoning magic right now, there probably wouldn’t be any use, right?’

No matter how high of a level the Summoning Magic that was on the sword was, it seemed inadequate to face that monster-like knight that ran around wildly carrying a greatsword the size of a tree-trunk.

Sollin opened her mouth.

“Leo, I think we have no choice.”

“What are you saying?”

“Even if we were to run away right now, we’ll be annihilated.”



The guild member called Leo nodded their head.

“That’s true.”

Sollin unsheathed the sword as she continued her words.

“Since it’s already like this, we’ll kill a couple of them at least and die in battle cleanly.”

At her words, Leo sighed deeply.

“Ha, in order to restore a level, it will take on average a couple of days... However, there’s nothing we can do.”

Ta-tat- Tat-!

Sollin quickly charged forward and began to face the knights of Luspel, and following her, Leo also ran into the battlefield.

However, Hellaim’s knights were too strong for them to face.

10 minutes later from then.

There was not one DarkRuna Guild user that remained on top of the desert, and the battle ended blandly.

“They had quite dogged spirits. Based on the fact that they

weren't afraid of death."

Hellaim mumbled as he carried his greatsword.

Stomp-Stomp-

The dozen people of the DarkRuna Guild were annihilated like that without having been able to kill even one knight.

However, this was an obvious result.

On top of the difference in fighting power for each individual being far superior, there were close to two times the number of knights, so in a way, it was to the point that even lasting 10 minutes was admirable.

\*

Keu-reu-reu-reu-reu.

A growl so loud it gave off the illusion that the whole dungeon was shaking was heard.

The thing that appeared in front of Ian's party was literally a giant, golden lizard.

At the enormous presence that didn't lack in size even when

compared to King Holdream of the giant, god-like people, Herz swallowed audibly as he opened his mouth.

“What, what the hell is that, Jinsung? I think that dragon is the Golden Turtle Dragon that Bbakbbak was talking about earlier.”

Jinsung nodded his head, as his gaze turned towards the mouth of the lizard that appeared in front of him.

The Cintamani was being held in the mouth of the giant lizard.

Kyaoohh!

The yellow lizard that bore through the stone wall and appeared roared loudly, and the party flinched as they took a step back.

However, just then, Kaizar opened his mouth.

“That isn’t the Golden Turtle Dragon.”

Ian’s head naturally turned towards him.

“Hm? You’re saying it’s not the Golden Turtle Dragon? Is it a monster that you know, retainer?”

Kaizar nodded his head.

“It’s much larger than what I remember, but if my memory is right, this is a Sand Drake. It’s a central continent monster that’s about lv 200.”

However, because the presence felt was incredible, Ian tilted his head.

“It looks much stronger than the Teranodon that’s a lv 200 monster.”

Kaizar opened his mouth again.

“That probably... I think is because of the Cintamani that’s being held in its mouth.”

“The Cintamani?”

“That’s right. I think it wanted to absorb the energy of that Cintamani and become a dragon. Based on its size, it seems it has absorbed quite a bit of its strength already.”

Kaizar unsheathed his sword as he walked forward.

As he did so, Ian wore a flustered expression.

“Retainer, this is too reckless! If you just go in like that!”

At that, Hoonie, who was standing in the back with a sour expression, mumbled.

“Is he worrying about that monster because he has no person to worry about?”

Ballam, who stood next to him, nodded his head in agreement.

- Unless Immortal presents himself in a tangible form, I think it's impossible to kill that guy, Hoonie.

“Hmph!”

Either way, as Kaizar stepped forward, the lizard got into an even more offensive stance, and even the rest of the party, including Ian, couldn't do anything else but prepare for battle.

And the drake, who discovered the party getting closer and closer, opened his mouth wide.

Whooong-!

Fiolan, who discovered that, shouted.

“It's Breath! Dodge it!”

A large vortex swirled inside the drake's mouth as the desert sand

began to be sucked in.

Ian quickly let out a command to Bbookbbook.

“Bbookbbook, Curtain of Water!”

Bboo-bbook-!

As Ian spread out his hand while shouting, a stream of water poured out from Bbookbbook’s mouth.

Kwaaah-!

The stream of water flew out and formed a large curtain right in front of the drake.

And the drake’s breath spurted out.

Hwaaak-!

However, the drake’s Sand Breath was completely blocked off by the Curtain of Water that Bbookbbook spread out, and it dispersed into the air on the spot. The talisman item ‘Turtle Spirit’ that was received from Bbakbbak was already equipped onto Bbookbbook, and because of that, it was an Inherent Ability that he could use.

“Ooh...!”

Herz gave a thumbs-up as he let out an exclamation.

Kaizar also grinned as he lifted his sword.

“Good job, Lord guy. You were quite useful.”

Ian’s expression scrunched up as he responded.

“What do you mean I was useful? It was perfect!”

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

After smirking, Kaizar stomped his foot as he powerfully jumped forward.

And with that as the trigger, the battle with the Sand Drake began.

“Yoohyun, go up front first!”

“Got it!”

Herz shot forward as he started up his most top-ranked defensive skill.

- User 'Herz' has used skill 'Divine Protection'.
- User 'Herz's Defensive Power and Vitality has tripled temporarily.
- For the duration of 'Divine Protection', the Vitality and Defensive Power of nearby party members of User 'Herz' will increase by 20%.

Ian's command continued.

“Healers, please focus all heals on Herz, and Fiolan, please start casting magic!”

“Okay!”

Herz, who was already close to reaching the drake, followed up with a provoking skill.

- User 'Herz' has used skill 'Rage of the Knight'.
- User 'Herz's Defensive Power has increased by 1200.
- All monsters within a 50-metre radius have begun to attack User 'Herz'.

Following that, the gaze of the drake, who was facing Kaizar, moved towards Herz.

Bang-Ba-bang-!



A type of sand wind that was shot out from the mouth of the drake hit Herz's shield.

- The Sand Drake has used Inherent Ability 'Sand Spear'.
- User 'Herz's Vitality has been reduced by 12,650.

The message that popped up was a system message that Ian, the party leader, could only see.

While looking at the damage value that was seen in the message, Ian was astonished.

'Wow... Even though he coated himself with Defensive Power buffs like that, over 10 thousand damage still comes through.'

Starting from when Bbookbbook's Curtain of Water was used to block off the breath, the battle proceeded effectively like flowing water, but it didn't finish that easily.

The drake's Offensive Power was strong as well, but it seems as it appeared as a boss-type monster, its Vitality was incredible, to the point it made them speechless.

- Retainer 'Kaizar' has dealt critical damage to the 'Sand Drake'!

- The 'Sand Drake's Vitality has been reduced by 27,767.
- The 'Sand Drake's Vitality has been reduced by 15,755.

Even Fiolan, who continuously poured out her magic, was astonished.

“Wow, how can its endurance be so strong? My mana's going to be depleted soon...”

Herz also agreed.

“My buff effects will end soon as well! I'm still continuously getting healed, but once my defensive buffs disappear, I think I'm going to die horribly from just a couple hits...”

While attacking the drake's flank with Ly, Ian mumbled internally.

‘If the royal guards were here, then we would have already caught him.’

However, as it was more important to attack even once more during the time he spent being disappointed over Hellaim, who had already left to face the Kaimon Empire army at the front, Ian worked his hands without rest.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

The battle continued on narrowly.

Herz's Vitality continuously went back and forth from 20-30%, and if even one of the Vitality recovering skills of the healers were cancelled, the battle cycle that could completely collapse continued on like that.

However, not one of the party members lost their focus and diligently endured it.

“We’re almost there!”

Just like the shouts of someone, the Sand Drake's Vitality gauge bar began to blink faster and faster, and Ian squeezed out as much attack speed as he could.

- The 'Sand Drake's Vitality has been reduced by 9824.
- The 'Sand Drake's Vitality has been reduced by 915.
- The 'Sand Drake's Vitality has been reduced by 4975.

At the attacks that were constantly poured out, the drake seemed to be distressed as it roared towards the air.

Kyaaoooh!

And shortly after, the body of the giant lizard slowly crumbled to towards the sand floor.

Along with that, the body of the Sand Drake slowly turned into a grey light.

In the end, they had succeeded in killing the Sand Drake.

Thud-!

Along with a heavy sound that was enough to shake the ground, a system message popped up in front of all of the guild members.

- You have successfully killed the Hidden Boss Monster, the 'Sand Drake'.
- You have obtained 5,587,798 EXP.
- As you are the first to kill the 'Sand Drake', your Fame has increased by 30 thousand.
- You have obtained the title 'Drake Slayer'.

As the difficult battle, where they could have truly been annihilated from even just one mistake, ended, a reward fitting of that returned to the party members, and they all wore broad smiles.

“Wow, look at the EXP. It’s incredible!”

Fiolan obtained a Heroic-rank magic wand and was all smiles.

“I won a prize, jackpot!”

“Fiolan, what did you get?”

“A wand that’s better than the staff that I was using!”

“Ooh!”

While everybody was excited over the success of the boss monster hunt, a couple more messages popped up additionally for Ian.

- You have successfully interrupted the evolution of the Sand Drake.
- The Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon has found its strength again.

Along with the message, the Cintamani floated up into the air.

And as the giant body of the Sand Drake shrunk, a white light came out of it and was sucked into the Cintamani.

And the Cintamani, which had a hazy glow, began to shine

brightly.

Ian walked towards the Cintamani.

Both of his eyes were shining.

‘I’ve interrupted the evolution, you say?’

Judging from the system messages, it seemed like that Cintamani was the medium to evolution.

Ian’s gaze turned towards Bbookbbook.

‘Then that means...?’

Bbookbbook stared back at Ian, who was staring at him with a sticky gaze, with an expression saying as if he didn’t understand his reasoning.

Bboo-ook-?

# Chapter 149: Golden Turtle Dragon (2)

---

Beep-Beep-beep-beep-beep-!

Harin, who arrived in front of Jinsung's studio apartment, pressed the code of the [door lock](#) with skillful(?) hand movements and opened the door.

Because she already knew that Jinsung would be in the middle of gaming either way, she didn't even press the bell on purpose.

Creak-.

Harin, who opened the door and entered, plopped down on Jinsung's bed that was in the corner.

And she began to stare piercingly at the capsule that Jinsung was definitely in.

‘Our Jinsung, it's about time he comes out to eat now...’

Harin dressed quite differently than usual in a pretty dress.

Of course, she didn't just come out dressed up just to cheer her mood up.

‘Today, without fail, I will drag out this gaming cripple and go on a date.’

She normally didn't go out wearing whatever either, but Harin, who paid attention to her makeup and even sprayed some perfume on for the first time in a while, stared at the clock hanging on the wall with a determined(?) expression.

12:47

Because Jinsung had a regular eating habit different from normal gaming cripples, around 12:50 everyday, he came out of his capsule without fail to eat lunch.

Harin was waiting for that.

“Shall I take a look in the mirror instead? I even feel like my makeup looks good today too...”

Harin hummed as she looked at her face here and there with her hand mirror.

And shortly after, no different from any other day, as it passed 12:50, Jinsung's capsule began to open.

Whiiing-.

Harin, who was sitting on the bed, abruptly stood up from her spot, but Jinsung seemed to have not noticed her, as he walked to the table sluggishly.



‘Ha, how can he not even realize that someone came into his house? That dense guy...!’

To be honest, Jinsung’s denseness was also at fault, but as he came out after being in the capsule for such a long time, the fact that his surrounding perception ability had dropped was the actual fault.

Harin hurriedly ran over to Jinsung’s side and linked arms with him.

And Jinsung, who was wearing a half-dazed expression, was surprised by Harin’s unexpected appearance and shouted.

“Aaah!”

While looking at Jinsung who almost threw a fit, Harin smiled brightly as she pulled on his arm.

“Why are you so surprised? I thought you said that I could come over whenever?”

“That, that is true, but...”

Jinsung, who barely settled his surprised heart, asked Harin again.

“But when exactly did you come? If you were going to come, you should have at least sent me a message beforehand.”

Harin grinned as she shrugged her shoulders.

“Surprise!”

“...”

The two people turned their footsteps that were headed towards the table away and sat down side by side on the bed.

“Did you come to eat lunch together with me?”

At Jinsung’s question, Harin replied.

“There’s that, too...”

“There’s something else as well?”

“Today...”

Harin, who momentarily paused to take a breath, continued her words.

“I’m planning on dragging you out of Kailan at any cost.”

“What?”

Harin stood up from her spot and faced Jinsung as she smiled brightly.

“What do you think? Don’t I look pretty today?”

Jinsung looked at Harin with a sour expression.

Come to think of it, Harin’s appearance, which looked even more put-together than usual, felt incredibly beautiful.

Jinsung stuttered as he nodded his head.

“Y, yeah, pretty.”

“How much?”

With an awkward expression, Jinsung’s words continued.

“A lot?”

However, it was just his expression that was awkward, but Jinsung’s words were sincere.

It was just because this was his first time experiencing a situation(?) like this, so he just had no idea how to react.

Harin glanced at the computer that was next to Jinsung's new capsule model as she spoke.

"I'll be on the computer looking at the internet while I play a little, so go shower and get ready quickly."

"What?"

"Then do you actually think I came dressed so prettily just to game with you?"

The words that he needed to go complete the quest almost came out of Jinsung's mouth, but he narrowly swallowed them back.

"So suddenly..."

However, as Harin came so firmly determined, such excuses wouldn't work.

Harin cut off Jinsung's words as she opened her mouth.

"This is a date request, Park Jinsung. I originally wanted to give you a chance, but having you request a date from me seemed impossible until Kailan goes bankrupt."

As Jinsung couldn't refute that, he became as dumb as an oyster.

“ ... ”

“Anyways! Hurry up and go shower, quickly!”

Harin quickly approached Jinsung and pushed his back, and Jinsung, flustered, sat her down on the chair.

“Al, alright. I got it. I'll go shower, so just go on the computer, alright?”

Harin wore a playful smile as she replied.

“If you take too long, I'm going to pick open your door and come in, so shower quickly!”

Jinsung wore the most decent clothes he had at home, and left the house with Harin.

However, there was no real point to that.

Since next to Harin, who boasted a shining appearance, Jinsung was covered by her shadow and didn't catch any gazes.

“But where are we going, Harin?”

At Jinsung's question, Harin smiled as she answered.

“Just follow me, Jinsung. You don't have a choice today.”

“O, okay.”

Jinsung, who flinched at Harin's energy(?), began to follow her without saying a word.

The Cintamani that would still be in his inventory bothered a corner of his heart a little, but still, looking at Harin, who was holding tightly onto his hand, a smile automatically formed.

‘Harin is seriously pretty.’

Jinsung thought that the only person that he could give up his gaming time, which was the most important(?) of all his daily tasks, for was Harin.

Since right now, while holding Harin's hand and walking with her, his heart fluttered more than when he won a luxurious item as a prize.

Like that, the place that the two people were headed for was the largest amusement park in the suburbs of Seoul.

“You wanted to come to an amusement park?”

At Jinsung's question, Harin nodded her head.

“Yeah, I really like going on rides!”

With quite an excited expression as well, Jinsung looked around at the rides.

And he said something shocking(?).

“This is my first time coming to an amusement park.”

“What? How is that possible?”

“Just... It just happened to end up like this.”

“What do you mean it just happened to end up like this, it's because you thought it was a waste to use the time you game on something else.”

Harin had already figured out Jinsung perfectly.

Jinsung, who couldn't argue against Harin's words, scratched the back of his head without a word.

Like that, the two people that bought a free pass to the amusement park, began to go on the rides in a good mood.

However, shortly after, a critical(?) problem formed.

Jinsung, who boarded the high-speed train, the A-Express, which was also the pride of the amusement park, began to break out into a cold sweat.

Rattle-Rattle-.

Deu-reu-reu-reuk-.

As the chain was slowly winded up, the ride moved towards an even higher spot.

Jinsung's voice came out shaking.

“Ha, Harin.”

“Hm? What's wrong?”

“Th, this is too...”

Jinsung, who was too embarrassed to say in front of Harin that he was scared when she was having the time of her life, stammered, but Harin immediately caught onto his state.

“What the hell, are you scared right now?”



Jinsung refuted as he responded.

“Sca, scared, pfft! I just feel like this is too high... Aaack!”

Rattle-.

The train that was dragged up to the highest point stopped along with the rattling sound, and a shout reflexively came out of Jinsung’s mouth.

And Harin, who saw that, shook her head.

“I can’t believe it.”

Jinsung’s eyes trembled slightly.

While looking at Jinsung, who grasped the safety bar tightly with an expression seized with fear, Harin laughed.

However, it wasn’t like there was a way for Jinsung to escape this situation.

Like that, Jinsung’s nightmare began.

Swaaeeek-!

The high-speed train split the wind as it began to plummet

downwards.

While squeezing his eyes shut, Jinsung yelled.

“Aaaaauuuk!”

On the other hand, with an expression full of thrill, Harin cheered.

“Waaaah!”

With completely opposite forms, the two people enjoyed the ride.

With his eyes closed, Jinsung thought of his Familiars.

‘I miss Bbookbbook! Pin, Halli, Ly, guys, save me, heuk-heuk.’

It was a line that Harin would have made fun of him about for the rest of his life if she had heard it, but it was the truth for Jinsung.

His mind was filled with the thought hoping that this painful time quickly passed by.

‘For dating to be as scary as this! There was a reason why I was forever alone!’

Because he wouldn't be able to withstand this if he didn't at least have such ridiculous thoughts, Jinsung continued to think about other things, and after the 15 minutes that felt like 15 hours passed by like that, Jinsung was able to step foot onto land again.

“Euh, euuh...”

His face was completely pale, and his two legs shook.

While looking at Jinsung, who was almost worn-out, Harin laughed at him.

“Yo, how can a man be that scared? You even went up so pompously when you went up to get on.”

However, Jinsung let out an excuse of his own.

“Harin, do you know why I'm so good at VR games?”

“Why?”

“My space perception ability is outstanding.”

With a dumbfounded voice, Harin replied.

“How is that related to you having so much fear right now?”

“That’s why, when I’m up there, I’m several times more scared than others. Where I am right now, how dangerous of a place I’m up on, I am too well-aware of that.”

While looking at Jinsung, who spread out a strange situation that didn’t make sense, Harin shook her head.

“Very funny. Then is my space perception ability dull, so that’s why I’m not scared?”

Jinsung nodded his head as he replied.

“Yeah, that’s it. Even when you’re up there, you don’t realize where this is and how dangerous of a place it is.”

With quite a serious expression, Jinsung spread out his logic.

However, with Harin’s next words, Jinsung’s insistence was immediately dismissed.

“You’re being noisy, old man. I’m hungry, so let’s just go eat something.”

“Su, sure...”

At the fact that Harin didn’t suggest that they immediately go on a different dangerous ride, Jinsung was quite relieved.

\*

“So, Emily, you’re saying that it’s practically impossible to produce food here?”

“That’s right, Shyakran. Truthfully, rather than impossible, to be more specific, the efficiency is too poor. Since it requires almost ten times the resources that was needed to produce our main Domain.”

“Hmm... It’s to that extent, huh. It’s a more serious state than I expected.”

The Titan Guild, who had successfully occupied the first base in the central continent after the DarkRuna Guild, ran into an unexpected challenge.

Firstly, once a base was occupied, it must be developed, but as it was a base on top of the desolate desert, they couldn’t produce any resources.

The one thing that they could really do was raise the public order group to hunt the monsters in the surrounding and obtain the loot, but even if they obtained the loot, as there was no place to sell it, there was no real meaning.

Even though it was a little cold in the northern Domain, as it was possible to network within the empire with the basic agricultural system and the surrounding Domains, if they just set up a base to a

certain point, it was possible to grow it quickly. However, in the central continent, there was seriously no answer.

Ceilron, who was next to them silently, opened his mouth.

“Then there’s no other choice but to haul over the resources from the main base and pour it out onto here.”

Emily nodded her head.

“Exactly. In order to quickly grow right now, there’s only that method...”

Shyakran smiled bitterly.

“This was something I was expecting to an extent, but I didn’t know it would be this bad.”

However, it wasn’t like there were no advantages to the base in the central continent.

Even if the level of the base was low, the quality of the troops that could be fundamentally produced were far superior to the Domain in the northern continent, and even the basic level of the individuals that could be appointed began from 130.

On top of that, it seemed since it was an area that specialized in war, once the level of the base went up, because you could create

an agency that trains Heroic NPCs that had equipment shops that were related to all kinds of battle or had special abilities, it was incredibly appealing.

It was just really difficult to settle in with the base in the central continent in the beginning, but once they got the groundwork going somehow, it was definite that it would be completely worth it.

The mouth of Shyakran, who was submerged in his thoughts for a moment, slowly opened up.

“The time has come to pour out all of the funds that were saved up until now.”

At Shyakran’s words, Emily nodded her head in agreement.

“That’s right, Master. We must pull together as much funds as we can right now, and if we can properly raise up about two or three bases in the central continent, then it will definitely become a big help.”

As the opinions were gathered, Shyakran immediately opened the guild chatting room and convened an executive meeting, and quickly proceeded with everything.

Like that, about the time the two giant guilds that had each occupied a base slowly began to get a foothold, the top guilds of the Luspel Empire were finally beginning to advance into the central

continent one by one.

From the outside, it looked as if the guilds of the Kaimon Empire were already overwhelmingly beginning to take dominance in the central continent, but there was always a way for there to be a variable anywhere.

In Korea, instead of keys, there are passcode locks.



# Chapter 150: Golden Turtle Dragon (3)

---

Ian, who returned safely from his date with Harin, logged onto the game as soon as he finished washing up.

And the moment Ian logged on, the guild chatting room became chaotic.

- Herz: Yo, did you come? And did your date go well?
- Fiolan: Harin was determined to do this for a couple days now, and it seems she finally succeeded in dragging Ian out and going on a date. I'm jealous...
- Kroban: Fiolan, how about a date with me? I can treat you like a princess.
- Fiolan: Ah, I will just go on dates with the monsters...
- Kroban: So harsh T.T.
- Mishyal: Since Ian has logged on, are we going to start hunting again now?
- Herz: That's right, but we must finish the quest first. We must go meet Bbakbbak.

Ian, who read through the guild chatting room that bubbled up so crazily, smirked as he posted something in the chat window.

- Ian: Everyone has rested well, right?

- Mishyal: Those words... I'm not the only one that feels they are somewhat scary, right?
- Herz: Mishyal, you are not the only one like that. I'm also a bit fearful.
- Fiolan: Shall we charge forward now? Is probably what he'll say, no?
- Ian: If you've rested, shall we charge forward now?
- Herz: As completely expected...
- Mishyal: ...

Even though everybody was making such a big fuss, they immediately used the Base Return Stone and returned to the dungeon.

The Base Return Stone was an item that only guild members who had a base could use, and if used during hunting, it was possible to teleport to the Domain of the guild they were affiliated with, and if used again, it was an item that returned the user to their original spot.

Normally, it was impossible to use the return stone inside a dungeon, but it was possible to activate the return stone in a dungeon that has already been cleared like this.

The guild members, who were enjoying their break in the

Domain for the first time in a while due to Ian's absence, began to return to the dungeon one by one.

- Ian: But when is our second party arriving at the central continent again?

The second party that Ian was talking about were the guild members that couldn't board the magical square and were coming the central continent joined with a line of the imperial army's expedition.

Carwin and Kroban were leading them.

- Kroban: I think we'll also be arriving around tomorrow now.
- Carwin: Kroban hyung's right. If we're fast, we'll be there around tomorrow morning, and if we're late, it will be around lunch time.
- Ian: Carwin, how many people are there in our second party?
- Carwin: About... 150 people? No, it's probably about 170 people.
- Ian: Okay. Contact us immediately once you arrive. Since we need to meet up.
- Carwin: Understood, hyung.

Ian, who got a rough understanding of the situation through the chat, began to organize his plans internally.

‘Firstly, once we return to Bbakbbak and complete the quest, there will be about two days left of the dungeon buff, and once we join up with the second party, does that mean we just need to go up now to occupy a base?’

It was a situation where he had basically given up on the Base Occupying Quest due to lack of time, but that didn’t mean that he had even given up on obtaining a base.

Even though their fighting power was a little lacking compared to the top-ranking large guilds, he was planning on obtaining even one base that was in a hidden area at all costs and defending it.

‘Originally, it would even be difficult to defend a base in the central continent, but since we have Kaizar.’

Kaizar, who had leveled-up through the hunting they did for a couple days and was now at lv 249, was an incredibly big help to Ian.

‘His Loyalty did drop more and is now at 3, but since he hasn’t hit me yet...’

While Ian was thinking of this and that, all of the guild members that weren’t even logged on returned and the party was able to all get together, and that party began to head towards Bbakbbak.

As the dungeon was so wide and rough, it took a lot of time to

even return.

While looking at the Cintamani that was in his inventory, Ian mumbled to himself.

‘If it was up to my heart, I would want to use it on Bbookbbook...’

Ian opened up the information of the Cintamani that he read at a glance in the morning again and checked it.

- The Cintamani of the Golden Turtle Dragon

Classification – Miscellaneous (Unknown)

Rank – Legendary

Equip Limit – Unable to Equip

Durability – 55/55

Option – In the case a Familiar possesses it, all combat abilities of dragon-affiliate Familiars will increase by 3%.

\*Item Able to Use: If used on an ‘Evolution Possible’ Familiar, it has the strength to forcibly evolve the applicable Familiar. It is possible to use on an irrelevant species, but there may be side effects.

\*Quest Item: This is an item filled with the memories of Golden Turtle 'Bbakbbak'. If used or lost, you will automatically fail the quest and you will receive Bbakbbak's rage.

\*This is an item belonging to user 'Ian'.

This item cannot be transferred to another user or be sold, and even if the character dies, it does not drop.

(Transferrable only once for the first time.)

This is a rare and precious Cintamani holding a bright golden light.

If sold, it's possible that one could gain an incredibly high price for it.

As could be seen even from the explanation, the Cintamani was an item that could evolve a Familiar as Ian expected.

Of course, it was only possible on a Familiar that had the 'Evolution Possible' option attached to it, but to Ian right now, this was an ability that was quite a big merit.

This was because Bbookbbook, who had yet to evolve even once, was constantly on his mind.

The reason why he didn't consider the other monsters was simple.

Since right now, when even Ly had evolved into a Legendary-rank, there was no other evolution possible Familiar besides Bbookbbook for Ian.

'I think this is a chance... But somehow it feels a bit leery.'

Of course, it wasn't because he was afraid that he would receive Bbakbbak's rage(?).

This was because, although he was an interesting turtle that was a little more mystical and could even talk, a turtle that looked similar to Bbookbbook didn't look that strong.

The part that pulled at Ian the most to use the Cintamani was because of the thought that the reward that Bbakbbak would give once the quest was completed could possible be something incredibly good.

If that was the case, then his worry was just one.

'Will the reward that Bbakbbak will give be a bigger merit than Bbookbbook's evolution?'

However, as Ian grew closer to Bbakbbak, he hardened his heart.

‘It’s a little disappointing, but since if this quest finished without me knowing what the reward is, I feel like I won’t even be able to sleep out of curiosity.’

And as the other party members wouldn’t be able to receive the quest reward because of Ian, that part also pulled at him.

And shortly after, Ian’s party was able to meet Bbakbbak again.

As soon as Bbakbbak saw Ian, he crawled over with a welcoming expression.

- Oh, Ian, you’ve returned!

Ian, who met eyes with Bbakbbak, burst out laughing.

‘He looks exactly like Bbookbbook, yet exceeds Grandpa Oakley’s way of speaking[1].’

Ian, who momentarily thought that Bbakbbak was cute, pulled out the Cintamani from his inventory and handed it to him.

“Here, I brought it back.”

And Bbakbbak, who received that and bit it with his mouth, wore a satisfied smile as he opened his mouth.



- Ian, you are truly a trustworthy human.

“Huh? Why?”

- For you to have returned this expensive Cintamani to me just as I requested without being greedy.

“Ah... Well, that, since it was yours originally.”

- Even if one knows it, it is not easy to control the desires within one’s heart. Ian, I’m truly grateful for your help.

Ian, who absentmindedly shared a conversation, suddenly developed something he was curious about.

“But Bbakbbak.”

- What is it?

“How much is that Cintamani worth for you to be like that?”

Bbakbbak, who momentarily thought about it, slowly opened his mouth.

- I do not know exactly, but amongst the ancient, giant, god-like people, this Cintamani traded for about 50 gold bars. Right now, I don’t know what it would be worth.

At Bbakbbak's words, Ian, of course, but the eyes of even the other guild members that were next to him rounded.

"5, 50 gold bars?"

"We didn't hear this incorrectly just now, right? It's not gold coins but gold bars, right? For sure?"

Their surprise was not an exaggeration either.

Since one gold bar was worth 1 million gold.

50 gold bars meant that it was 50 million gold.

Even if they sold it and split it into ten shares, it was an item worth an incredible amount to the point that one could take at least 5 million gold.

Ian suddenly felt his legs lose strength as he lurched to one side.

"I, I see."

However, there was no use crying over spilt milk.

The Cintamani was being held in Bbakbbak's mouth, and the quest proceeded onwards.

Ring-!

- You have successfully completed the Golden Turtle 'Bbakbbak's Request (Hidden Quest)
- Clear Rank – S
- You have obtained 12,000 Specialty Points.
- You have obtained 39,456,000 EXP.
- You have obtained 10,000 Fame.

He had obtained an incredible amount of rewards, but Ian felt an unknown emptiness as he checked the system messages that popped up.

However, just then, right in front of everyone, the Cintamani that was held in Bbakbbak's mouth began to shine brightly.

And along with that, Bbakbbak began to open his mouth as if he was mumbling, and his voice could be heard clearly by everybody's ears.

- It seems now I'll be able to find my forgotten honour.

Whooong-.

While in Bbakbbak's mouth, the Cintamani began to vibrate strongly.

Ian's party began to watch that scene with excited expressions.

And shortly after, the golden light that poured out of the Cintamani wrapped around Bbakbbak's whole body and began to violently spin.

Hwa-reu-reu-reu-!

The wave of golden light wrapped around Bbakbbak's surrounding, looking like a blazing flame.

Bbakbbak's body, which was already golden as is, began to shine even more, and eventually, Bbakbbak's whole body was covered in a white light.

No matter who saw it, it was an incredibly mysterious scene.

Different from the others, who were watching that scene with a blank expression, Ian thought that it was a familiar scene he had seen many times.

'This... It seems similar to the scene when a Familiar evolves...'

Bbakbbak's body began to grow bigger and bigger while wrapped in light, and at last, he turned into a larger size than Lake or even Halli.

The size of his shell just grew larger and his shape was the same; however, his short neck stretched out like a snake, and two more heads grew on each side, so he looked like a Hydra.

‘What the hell, he might even grow bigger than Ddukdae!’

And just like Ian said, Bbakbbak's body continued to grow.

His four legs with sharp claws grown on them became sturdy.

His giant shell had unknown ancient patterns embroidered on it majestically.

And even the round face that was originally there disappeared and turned into three heads with sharp and cool appearances.

The light that was wrapped around Bbakbbak completely disappeared, but Ian still hadn't come to his senses and was staring at him with a dazed expression.

The first one to break this silence that existed for a moment was Bbakbbak.

- Ian, thanks to you, I was able to find my past honour. Thank you.

With a bewildered expression, Ian opened his mouth.

“Ye, yeah... Well. It turned out well, haha...”

Ian slightly glanced at Bbookbbook, who was hanging on his back, before he stared back once more at the appearance of Bbakbbak again.

‘If I used the Cintamani on our Bbookbbook, would he have become that cool?’

He felt like his stomach was slowly hurting again.

However, in the next moment, Ian’s stomach ache was completely cured in an instant.

Bbakbbak’s three heads approached Ian as they opened their mouths.

- Ian, while protecting the riches of Holdream, I have spent over a thousand years in this dark basement.

“So?”

- Since the revengeful spirit of Holdream has also left this grave, I want to find freedom as well.

“...?”

Bbakbbak and Ian’s gazes met.

- I want to be with you. Could you accept me?

A system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

- Golden Turtle Dragon ‘Bbakbbak’ wishes to become your Familiar.
- Will you take in ‘Bbakbbak’ as your Familiar? (You are lacking Leadership, but through the effect of the ‘Dragon Tamer’s Feather Ornament’ item, you may obtain Familiars without the restrictions of Leadership).

# Chapter 151: War Friend (1)

---

Oaklan Guild's flag flapped in the middle of the desert.

And along with about over a hundred users, there were hundreds of guild soldiers that were entering the central continent underneath that flag.

“Whew, the level of the monsters is completely different from the ones in other zones for sure. I thought that we thoroughly prepared ourselves, but for us to already have lost ten people.”

At the words of the female Knight user, who was leading the line at the head, Limlong nodded his head quietly as he replied.

“That's right, Rihina. Since the monster level range itself is so high in comparison to other hunting grounds we have.”

Rihina was one of the founding members of the Oaklan Guild as well as a ranker, and was also part of the guild's executive members.

And she was in charge as the main leader of the first expedition for the central continent.

Limlong's role was to assist her.

“Speaking of which, Limlong, you're certainly different from



other Assassin-class users. There was a reason why the Master put his trust in you.”

“Hoo-hoo, what points make you say that?”

“The fact that Assassin-class users cannot properly display their abilities in PVE is a truth that has already been proven. They hardly have any AoE attacks, and as their body is practically as weak as paper for being a close-combat class...”

Just like she said, the Assassin-class was the class that was most excluded from PVE. Even in this central continent expedition, the fact that a lot of Assassin-classes were excluded was the counter evidence of that.

Limlong smiled as he spoke.

“Is it not all up to each person? There are some disadvantages, but since there are also ways to overcome them.”

However, while these two people were talking about this and that, just then, a scout from far away returned running.

“Ma’am! Rihina, I’ve returned after patrolling.”

Rihina nodded her head as she replied.

“Good work. Give us the reports.”

The words of the soldier, who paused for a moment to collect their breath, continued.

“If you head towards the front for about 10 minutes, there is the news of the Scorpion Queen. The average level of the monsters is about 160. If you are to face them, there is a high chance that you will win, but as the exact level of the Scorpion Queen cannot be figured out, it’s dangerous.”

“If that’s the case, then even if we win, the damage will be enormous.”

At Rihina’s words, the soldier nodded their head.

“That’s right, Rihina. It seems like it will be better to detour and advance.”

Limlong, who stood next to her, assisted her.

“The dungeon first discoverer’s reward feels wasteful, but right now, we must save as much of our fighting power and occupy a base first, Rihina.”

Rihina also agreed with his words.

“I also think that way.”

Her gaze turned back to the soldier.

“Aside from the Scorpion nest, we should be able to proceed to our destination without a lot of difficulty, right?”

“That’s right.”

“If we take a detour, what is the expected time that it will take to arrive?”

“I think it should take about a quarter of a day.”

“Alright.”

As the report of the scout was finished, the troops of the Oaklan Guild began to move again.

Their destination was a base on the front line that they had looked at beforehand.

\*

‘I just completely got lucky!’

Ian, who was checking the information of his Familiar ‘Bbakbbak’ that he obtained during an unguarded moment, couldn’t hide both corners of his mouth, which were rolling

upwards, as he smiled broadly.

But then again, this was because Bbakbbak was an outrageous 'Legendary'-rank Familiar.

- Bbakbbak (Golden Turtle Dragon)

Level: 150

Classification: Mystical Creature

Rank: Legendary

Personality: Prudent

Evolution Impossible

Offensive Power: 2730

Defensive Power: 3825

Agility: 1575

Intellect: 2355

Vitality: 183,300/183,300

## Inherent Ability

### \*Guardian of the Desert (Passive)

Once every minute, a protective film made from sand will be created and it will absorb damage.

The protective film will absorb 30% of the damage of the maximum Vitality, and will last for 20 seconds.

### \*Absolute Defense (Cooldown Time 2 minutes)

Will go into 'Invincible' state for 10 seconds.

When in 'Invincible' state, no damage will be received, and will become 'immune' to all status conditions.

However, for the duration of Absolute Defense, no actions can be made.

### \*Blessing of the Turtle Dragon (Cooldown Time 10 minutes)

For 2 minutes, the damage that a designated target would have received will be taken personally instead.

The Turtle Dragon will receive 150% of the original damage that the designated target would have had to receive, and if the Vitality of the Turtle Dragon drops below 10%, this skill will automatically be cleared.

\*Roar of the Turtle Dragon (Cooldown Time 2 minutes)

Opponents within a wide range will be provoked and it will make them attack the Turtle Dragon. The 'Provoke' state will last for 30 seconds, and the movements of the opponents that are afflicted with provoke will slow down by 40%.

(When facing users, the effect will drop by half.)

An ancient mystical creature that had protected the relics in the grave of the ruins for a long time.

It is incredibly powerful.

As expected, Bbakbbak boasted overwhelming stats that were similar to Ly and Pin.

The only disappointing part was the fact that he was 'Evolution Impossible'.

'If he was evolution possible on top of being a Legendary-rank, I would have been able to make a Mythological-rank...'

In Ly's case, a 'Completed Form' title was attached.

It meant that amongst the wolf-type Familiars, there was no phase higher than Ly's that could be evolved into.

If those words were thought of the other way, in the case of the Turtle Dragon or the Griffin, it meant that it was possible that there was an even higher phase that they could be evolved into.

It was because of that, he was disappointed.

'Either way, I felt like tanking with just Ddukdae alone was lacking, so it's turned out really well.'

An outrageous amount of Vitality at 180 thousand, and Defensive Power that was close to 4 thousand.

As expected, they were overwhelming stats even if the fact that he was a high level of 150 was considered.

"Wow, congratulations, Lord. Bbakbbak is so cool!"

The eyes of Celia, who walked up to Bbakbbak, shone as she petted the side of the giant shell.

Ian also wore a satisfied smile as he replied.

“Thanks, Celia.”

And Hoonie, who was watching from the back, grumbled.

“Lucky dude. The reason why he grew so unbelievably quickly was because of his luck.”

Even at Hoonie’s sarcastic remark, Ian just shrugged his shoulders.

“Luck is also a skill, kid.”

“Hmph.”

And there was also a turtle that wore a displeased expression.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

Bbookbbook glared at Bbakbbak with an expression full of jealousy.

He seemed to have realized that it had now become too far-off for him to become more good-looking than Bbakbbak no matter how much he dieted as Bbookbbook wore an incredibly sullen expression.

Ian, who saw that, smirked as he petted Bbookbbook’s head.



“This cute guy.”

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

Bbookbbook grouchily went into his shell, and Ian slowly approached Bbakbbak, who had an imposing figure.

However, there was one problem.

‘Speaking of which, from now on, I can’t summon all of my Familiars in battle.’

His Leadership, which he didn’t know he lacked up until now due to his items and hidden stats, had reached a limit.

Thanks to the Dragon Tamer’s Feather Ornament that makes the Familiar Possession Limit infinite, there was no problem in obtaining, but summoning was impossible.

Ian began to put his brain to work.

‘Even if I use up all my money to change all of my items, I feel like it will still be hard to cover for it...’

However, just then, Celia, who was happily talking with Bbakbbak, caught Ian’s eyes.

‘Ah, by any chance, if it’s Celia, then...!’

Ian called Celia over.

“Celia!”

“Yes, Lord!”

“By any chance, do you have some leftover Leadership?”

Ian’s idea was simple. He was planning on transferring one of his Familiars to Celia.

As Celia was also Ian’s retainer, if he did that, he would be able to manage all of his Familiars.

‘Since Celia is close to lv 130 now as well, she’ll definitely have some Leadership remaining. Since the only Familiar that Celia manages is the Blue Wyvern.’

And as is Celia was fulfilling Ian’s expectations, she nodded her head.

“Yes, Lord. I have a lot of leftover Leadership. Why?”

Ian smiled brightly as he spoke to Celia.

“Celia, then from now on, could you take care of Ddukdae? If it is you, I feel like I could count on you, that is.”

If he transferred Ddukdae to Celia, he felt like he could switch out some equipment to increase his leadership and it would become possible to manage all of his Familiars.

And of course, Celia nodded her head out of excitement.

“Sounds good, Lord! Thank you so much!”

With a happy expression, Celia looked at Ddukdae, who was standing as dumb as a post.

Ian, who had transferred Ddukdae to Celia, finished maintenance and began moving again.

It was now time to start the advance work in order to occupy a base.

\*

“Sollin, you’ve made such a reckless move.”

At Ilahan’s words, Sollin dropped her head as she replied with a low tone.

“I’m sorry, Master. I didn’t know they were the royal guards directly belonging to the king.”

Ilahan shook his head.

This was because it wasn’t that he didn’t understand her decision, but despite that, the loss received was too big.

The massacre of about a dozen guild members.

The fact that there was a gap created in their fighting power for a day was an obvious, but as their levels even dropped by one in general, this was an incredible loss.

On top of that, the fact that they couldn’t even kill one knight angered him the most.

“Ha... There’s nothing we can do now. Except to stay alert starting now at least.”

As a setback developed in his plans already from the beginning, Ilahan’s head pounded.

‘I was planning on occupying at least three bases before starting... But if it’s like this, then even if we overdo it, we’ll only be able to take care of two.’

Their rival guild, the Titan Guild, had already succeeded in occupying two bases, and as he obtained information that they were increasing the number by one more additional base, his stomach hurt even more.

‘Still, as the Luspel Empire Guild guys haven’t even found a spot properly yet... That at least is a relief.’

Ilahan, who completed his thoughts there, clicked his tongue internally.

The representative guilds of the Luspel Empire were Splendor, Oaklan, and Valiant Guild.

They themselves had pride that they were one of the top 5 guilds, but Ilahan never thought of them as their rivals.

Their decisions were always one step behind, and their objective fighting power also dropped in comparison.

Because the nations that they were affiliated with were different, they had yet to meet in the arena, but if they were to go against each other, he thought that the result would be clear.

For the territory wars, because of the advantage that the defending guild had, they weren’t able to win easily, but he was confident in completely destroying all of them in the field wars that would occur in the central continent now.

Towards Ilahan, who was thinking of this and that while closing his eyes, Sollin opened her mouth with a careful voice.

“Uh... But, Master.”

Ilahan replied with his eyes still closed.

“Speak.”

“While I was coming here after the time I couldn’t log on was over, I discovered an interesting location.”

Ilahan slightly opened his eyes.

“An interesting location?”

“Yes, that’s right. As the Titan Guild guys were gathered around it, I couldn’t go inside, but it was a structure that definitely looked like there was something in there.”

Ilahan’s expression slightly changed.

“Oh-ho, a structure... And you saw what the name was?”

Sollin nodded her head.

“Yes, I checked the name. It was a building with the name the

‘Tower of War’.”

And the moment he heard those words, Ilahan suddenly stood up from his spot.

“This, damn it!”

Sollin, who flinched at his form, where he burst out in anger, asked.

“What’s wrong?”

Ilahan’s eyes glinted.

‘Shyakran, this jerk, so he’s saying he won’t even share information now, huh?’

The Titan Guild and the DarkRuna Guild were rival guilds, so obviously, they kept each other in check up until now.

However, as the advance into the central continent was a battle between the empires, the Guild Masters agreed to share information related to this, but Shyakran had violated that.

Ilahan turned his gaze towards Sollin again.

“Sollin.”

“Yes, Master.”

“We must move immediately. Go get ready.”

As she already guessed where Ilahan was planning on going, Sollin nodded her head as she replied.

“Yes, understood. Master.”

Ilahan added on as he moved his feet.

“Gather all of the executive members. Since all of us will need to move together.”



## Chapter 152: War Friend (2)

---

After the quest was completed, in order to tune-up momentarily, Ian's party scattered.

As they hunted so intensely for such a long time, the durability of their equipment had almost reached the end, and they were also all out of Recovery Potions.

However, it wasn't a matter that was applicable to Ian.

This was because his Familiars mostly fought for him, and for recovery, Familiar Healing and the healers took full charge of that.

The only thing he really used was Spirit Magic Recovery Potions, but even those, he still had quite a bit of.

Even after Ian sent off his guild members, he continued to hunt alone, and thanks to that, his EXP even filled up quite a bit.

‘Soon, I’ll probably be able to hit lv 136.’

Ever since the central continent opened up, because a lot of high-level hunting grounds that give a lot of EXP appeared, the top-ranking users' leveling-up speeds had grown quite fast compared to before.

However, it wasn't comparable to Ian's leveling-up speed, and

the result of that was a situation where Ian was almost caught up to the top-ranking group.

‘When I checked yesterday or so, it looked like the level cut for the top 100 was 141...’

The ranking that Ian was talking about was not just the class-specific ranking, but the general user level ranking cutline of the Korean server.

In front of the eyes of Ian, who started as a latecomer, the end of the top 100 rankings was finally visible.

“Keu, shall we keep the steam up and hunt again?”

However, just then, a system message that drained Ian of his strength popped up.

- All 7 days for the dungeon’s first discoverer’s buff has passed.
- From now on, all reward values will return to normal.

After his guild members left for maintenance, Ian had been hunting inside the grave dungeon again.

Ian, who even checked that the buff icon at the top of his view disappeared, licked his lips.

“Tsk... I guess it can’t be helped.”

At Ian’s mumbling, Hoonie, who was in the back, immediately asked.

“Are we finally done hunting?”

Because Hoonie was affiliated with Kaizar, he basically came attached like a 2-for-1 set menu in Ian’s hunting, and thanks to that, the dark circles of Hoonie, who completely went through Ian’s hard hunting schedule, reached down to the end of his chin.

“Hmm... We’ll need to go out and hunt instead now, I guess.”

Hoonie sighed deeply,

“Haa....”

And Death Knight Ballam let out a sigh next to him as he helped out.

- Ah... As expected, an evil human.

However, Ian didn’t even cast a look towards their complaints, and he moved his feet towards the exit of the dungeon.

Kaizar, who saw that, smirked as he mumbled.

“Our Lord guy, even though he lacks in other aspects, his spirit alone is acknowledgeable.”

Hoonie just shook his head.

\*

While he was out on the ground anyways, Ian thought that he should explore here and there as he searched for a base that they could occupy before the other guild members returned.

“But where should I start...”

An area with a lot of complicated paths was a pain as well, but maps that were completely open like this to the point the end wasn't visible were also a structure that also easily brought difficulty in choosing for the users.

While Ian was contemplating like that, Bbakbbak, who was next to him, opened his mouth.

- Hm, I do remember. I came out on the ground for the first time in a while, but it's as familiar as if it was just yesterday.

Bbakbbak raised his three heads with his long necks as if he was stretching.

Ian, who turned his gaze towards him, asked.

“Then, Bbakbbak, you probably also know the geography quite well, right?”

Bbakbbak nodded his head as he replied.

- That’s right, owner. I don’t know all of the central continent, but I remember almost all of this middle area.

Ian’s eyes shone.

This was because the thing that he needed immediately was information on the geography.

‘I wish there was a honey-like base hidden somewhere...’

Ian asked Bbakbbak with eyes full of anticipation.

“Bbakbbak, then by any chance, do you know where a base is near here?”

However, Bbakbbak wasn’t able to meet Ian’s expectations.

- Base? I don’t know what that is, owner.

“Hmm...”

Ian scratched the back of his head.

‘Is it because base is a word only used by users? Then how should I explain it so that Bbakbbak will understand?’

While Ian was contemplating like that, Bbakbbak opened his mouth again.

- By any chance, is the place called a base somewhere where a lot of people are gathered and it’s noisy?

At Bbakbbak’s question, Ian quickly nodded his head.

“Yeah, it’s exactly that. I think it’s right!”

While looking at Ian, who was happy, Bbakbbak slowly nodded his head.

- If it’s a place like that, there is a place that I remember that isn’t far off. I don’t know if it will still be there, though, as so much time has passed.

However, Ian was basically sure that the place that Bbakbbak was talking about was a base.

“Let’s go there, Bbakbbak. Show us the way!”

After Bbakbbak nodded his head, he began to slowly move his large body.

- Understood, owner.

\*

“Is it not awkward to go about like this, Shyakran?”

At the entrance of the Tower of War that stood majestically, two men shared a conversation while facing each other.

The two people were none other than Ilahan, the Guild Master of the DarkRuna Guild, and Shyakran, the Guild Master of the Titan Guild.

From the outside, it looked like they were sharing a quiet conversation, but between them, severe nervousness flowed.

Since this was the central continent, and in the central continent, there was no restriction on PK amongst users of the same nationality.

If even one of the two sides were to attempt to attack first, an uncontrollable large-scale battle would occur.

And as much as it was a battle between the 1st place and 2nd place guilds, the aftermath would be incredible.

Shyakran was overly chatty as he opened his mouth.

“Haha, Ilahan. This is a misunderstanding. This is a place that we just discovered in the morning today as well, so we were about to give you the information shortly after as well.”

“Ahem...”

They both knew of each other's intentions, but as they were Guild Masters that needed to move based on thorough relations of gains and losses, they paid close attention to their actions and words.

Ilahan slightly looked at the Tower of War as he asked Shyakran.

“Then, it would certainly be alright for us to use it right about now, right? The Tower of War, that is.”

While looking at Ilahan, who spoke with strength in his words, Shyakran could do nothing else but nod his head.

This was because if they were to clash with the DarkRuna Guild right now, there was too much to lose.



“Of course, Ilahan. You probably also have a lot of Specialty Points that you’ve saved up until now, so you should use it quickly.”

As Shyakran made a hand motion, the guildmembers of the Titan guild opened up a path on either side, and the entrance to go into the Tower of War entered Ilahan’s field of vision.

“Ahem.”

Ilahan, who stared at Shyakran for a while, slowly started moving his feet, and following him, the guild members of the DarkRuna Guild entered the Tower of War quickly.

\*

“Bbakbbak, is the place that you were talking about... here?”

- That’s right, owner. As expected, as too much time has passed, there’s no one left. A thousand years ago, it was an incredibly crowded place. Either way, the place that I remember is here.

The place that appeared in front of Ian’s eyes was a building large in size that was wide from side to side.

‘Even just by looking, it’s not a base, but... What is this?’

Ian checked the information of the building.

- War Trading Post

A trading post that warriors of the ancient central continent traded and sold goods. Goods in the trading post can be purchased using 'Specialty Points', and artifacts or food, as well as gold and so on can also be purchased with 'Specialty Points'.

And Ian's two eyes widened.

'What, what the hell, there was such a place? I was wondering where I was supposed to use Specialty Points, but it was to use it here!'

Ian didn't know of the existence of the 'Tower of War' yet. Because of that, this was the first time he discovered a place where he could use his Specialty Points.

With the middle area of the central continent, where both sides of the empire army were facing each other, as the reference point, the Tower of War was in the west, while the War Trading Post was in the east.

Because of that, the DarkRuna Guild and the Titan Guild, who came in through the west, discovered the Tower of War, while Ian was able to discover the War Trading Post.

'Let's just go in first.'

Ian, whose heart became elated at the exciting discovery, moved his feet and stepped foot into the entrance of the trading post.

As he did so, a system message rang out.

Ring-.

- You have discovered the War Trading Post for the first time.
- Your Specialty Points have increased by 3 thousand.
- With the Specialty Points obtained, you can trade it with goods inside the trading post.
- You can only enter the War Trading Post once per day for 30 minutes. Do you wish to enter?

Ian nodded his head as he opened his mouth.

“I’ll enter.”

And following behind Ian, Hoonie also entered.

Kaizar and Celia, as well as Ballam and others entered as well, but aside from Kaizar, because they weren’t able to gather much Specialty Points, he didn’t think there would really be a meaning.

‘Is this a place that you can purchase things like items with Specialty Points?’

As he had a time limit of 30 minutes, Ian began to poke around the inside of the building as quickly as possible.

And he was able to conclude one thing through that.

‘They don’t sell stuff like artifacts. It’s mainly made so that you can trade food and war goods.’

The Specialty Points that Ian had gathered up until now was a tremendous amount close to 50 thousand.

He didn’t know exactly, but with this much, he was anticipating that he could possibly buy something like a decent artifact, yet was slight disappointed.

However, as it was an obvious that a lot of resources would be lacking in order to grow a base in this barren central continent, he was sure that the War Trading Post, where food could be received through battle, would be a big help.

While Ian was thinking of this and that, Hoonie, who looked around the trading post, opened his mouth.

“How disappointing. I was hoping it was the Tower of War.”

At Hoonie's words, Ian asked with a quizzical expression.

“Tower of War? What's that?”

It was only then Hoonie wore an expression showing that his tongue slipped.

Ian approached Hoonie and began to interrogate him.

“What is that? By any chance, you aren't trying to hide it, right?”

However, before Hoonie even replied, a voice that resolved Ian's curiosity was heard from somewhere else.

That was Kaizar's voice.

“The Tower of War was a place where you can purchase ancient artifacts or items with Specialty Points from war. It's a little different from this place.”

“I see, why are you telling me this only now, retainer?”

At Ian's complaining, Kaizar smirked as he replied.

“Even if you knew the location of the Tower of War, it's in a place where you cannot go.”

“Why is that?”

“That’s because it’s in the west side, where the Kaimon Empire army is stationed.”

“I see.”

For now, disappointment is just disappointment, and Ian began to think about what would be the best way to use this War Trading Post.

‘For every 100 Specialty Points, it’s 50 Food Points... If I pour in all of the Specialty Points I have right now, how many soldiers can I produce? If it’s in reference to the northern continent, then I think I’ll be able to make close to about 200...’

For now, Ian decided to hold off using his points. He felt like he should first occupy a base before checking the cost and mapping out a plan.

‘Since I’ll be able to come back tomorrow again anyways.’

Ian looked around his surroundings.

Thanks to the geography, where it was surrounded by tall sand hills, he felt like it wouldn’t be discovered by other guilds for a while.

Since if it wasn't for Bbakbbak, Ian wouldn't have been able to find it either.

‘If I knew this was the case, should I have occupied a base first instead of hunting as soon as I finished the quest? If I did that, then I wouldn't have failed the Base Occupying Quest either.’

However, if he had moved that quickly, he knew well that he would have already become a target of the Kaimon Empire soldiers and guilds, so Ian quickly set aside his lingering attachment.

‘For now, let's wait until the others log back in.’

Ian came out of the trading post and began to move towards the place that the guild members and he decided on meeting up at.

However, just then.

A world message that was sent to all users in the same continent popped up at the top of Ian's view.

Ring-

- User 'Ilahan', the DarkRuna Guild Master, has obtained the 'Mark of Magellan'.
- From now on, 'Desert Warriors', which have appeared as 'Neutral NPCs' have formed an amicable relationship with the 'DarkRuna' Guild.

- As the nationality of the 'DarkRuna' Guild is the Kaimon Empire, the Desert Warriors will now have a hostile relationship with the Luspel Empire.



# Chapter 153: War Friend (3)

---

The central continent was incredibly wide.

And although it may be an obvious, it was a completely empty, ownerless mountain.

However, it wasn't like there was a plentiful number of empty bases either.

This was because if certain requirements weren't fulfilled in the beginning, then base points didn't form at all, and there weren't a lot of places that met population and resource number, which were one of the requirements.

Currently, the number of bases that existed in the central continent were about 50 that formed as the central area as the reference point.

Truthfully, in the case of the Lotus Guild, which was barely in the top 100, occupying a base and maintaining it could be considered an incredibly difficult task.

“Jinsung, wouldn't it be better if we just look next time after the number of bases have expanded a little instead?”

At Herz's question, Ian shook his head.

“It will be too late. At that point, the gap between the top-ranking guilds and us will probably become incredibly wide.”

Just like Herz’s words, once time passed, the number of bases grew.

This was because when the existing bases developed, the population density will naturally grow, and as the resources become abundant, it also influenced the surrounding.

However, Ian had no intentions of waiting until then.

Since, to be honest, he thought that they had waited enough even now.

And there wasn’t even a guarantee that they would be able to take over a base easily just because they waited until then.

‘If we can just last somehow, there will be no better opportunity than this to jump up.’

If they increased their bases with one in the central continent, they would be able to promote the rank of the Lotus Domain in the northern continent to a Large Domain.

From multiple perspectives, a base in the central continent was incredibly charming.

Fiolan asked Ian.

“Is there a place that you were thinking of?”

Ian nodded his head.

“There’s a decent base near the front area where both empires are facing each other.”

At those words, both of Fiolan’s eyes rounded.

“Huh? Isn’t that too close to the front? If by mistake we were to be even swept into the large-scale battle that is occurring between the two empire armies, then we’ll reduced to ashes...”

However, as Ian had thought about this part enough as well, he frankly nodded his head as he opened his mouth.

“The risk is certainly high. However, there is an advantage as well.”

Herz asked.

“What is the advantage?”

“Firstly, because of the risk that Fiolan just mentioned, the competition rate amongst guilds is incredibly low. Even the Titan

or the DarkRuna Guild probably won't want to use up fighting power in order occupy such an uncertain Domain. As a result, we just need to block off the empire soldiers of Kaimon Empire."

Fiolan slowly nodded her head.

"You certainly got a point there. However, with just that kind of advantage, isn't it still lacking merit? Since if we frequently get attacked by the empire soldiers, then it will almost be impossible to even develop the base. It will be reduced to ashes all the time, so will there be time for crops to grow and for the population to increase?"

Herz agreed with her words as he nodded his head.

"That's right, we might just be wasting resources to no purpose. Since if we don't have resources, it's impossible to produce troops."

The two people's worries were truthfully an obvious.

It wasn't the end just because they occupied a base.

After occupying, they needed to maintain it, and in order to create a higher value than the expenses they invested, they needed to guarantee stability.

However, Ian had a plan.

Ian slowly opened his mouth.

“We just need to supply resources with Specialty Points.”

The existence of the War Trading Post that he found thanks to Bbakbbak allowed Ian to have such ideas.

Herz and Fiolan, who didn't know about the War Trading Post wore puzzled expressions, and Herz asked.

“How are you going to supply resources with Specialty Points? Have you found a way to use Specialty Points?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Yeah, just before I came here.”

And Ian explained the possibilities of the War Trading Post to the two people.

Fiolan, who heard all of the explanation, nodded her head.

“Indeed, it is a strategy worth trying. If there is just more supply of Specialty Points than there is consumption of food.”

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“That’s right. That part is the biggest key point. However, by constantly blocking off the Kaimon Empire soldiers in the front line, I think that we will not lack Specialty Points.”

From Ian’s experience, a larger amount of Specialty Points could be obtained from catching users or NPCs that were affiliated with the enemy empire than with normal monsters.

Because of that, he spoke confidently.

“Hmm...”

The three people that found a general direction of where they should go further began to build a detailed plan.

And shortly after, the members of the guild’s second party, which had joined a line of the Luspel Imperial Army and successfully entered the central continent, all arrived, and with all of their fighting power gathered, the Lotus Guild slowly began to move.

Their destination was the base at the front lines.

\*

“Sollin, do you know what flag that is?”

While looking at a quite large group of users move below a low hill, Ilahan wore a quizzical expression.

This was because if it was a guild that could come into the central continent at this point, it was definitely a top-ranking guild, but it was a guild symbol that he was totally seeing for the first time.

“I’m also... Not sure, Master. What I’m sure of is that there is no guild in the top 20 with that flag.”

The flag that Sollin and Ilahan were looking at was none other than the flag of Lotus.

And the Lotus Guild had taken place at the base in the front lines and was immersed in the occupying process.

Ilahan wore an interested expression.

“Open up the guild list right now and find them. As they’ll at least be in the top 30, you’ll probably find it immediately.”

“Yes, understood, Master.”

However, it took Sollin quite a long time to find the guild mark of the Lotus Guild.

This was because the rank of the Lotus Guild was 100th place.

“Uh... Master.”

“What’s wrong?”

“That guild mark... It’s the guild mark of one called the Lotus Guild.”

Ilahan’s two eyes slightly grew.

“Lotus?”

“Yes, Master.”

“This is my absolute first time hearing about them.”

“That can’t be helped. Since they are currently ranked at 107th place in the guild rankings.”

“...”

Ilahan wore a flustered expression, but soon after, the corners of his mouth rolled upwards again.

He had developed an interest.

“Shall we try raiding them? What do you think, Sollin?”



Currently, the main fighting power of the DarkRuna Guild was out protecting their own base, but Ilahan thought that they could easily wipe out a 107th place guild with even just their scout party.

And that wasn't a completely incorrect thought either.

However, Sollin shook her head.

“For now, I think it will be better to restrain ourselves right now, Master.”

Ilahan smirked.

“Because of the Luspel Imperial Army behind them?”

In the direction that Ilahan pointed towards with his chin, the Imperial Army of Luspel were stationed, and Sollin nodded her head.

“That's right. At the slightest provocation, it could end up as a large-scale battle. For now, I think it would be better to be cautious until we perfectly make three bases safe.”

Ilahan smiled as he nodded his head.

His thoughts weren't different from hers either.

“But then again, since there isn’t any benefit even if we were to steal that base. For it to be a base in the middle of the battlefield... I have no idea who the Guild Master is, but whether he’s incompetent or rash...”

However, different from Ilahan, who clicked his tongue, Sollin’s eyes shone.

‘If it’s a guild at 100th place, it will be impossible for them to obtain a proper base anyways, so were they targeting the niche market? However, even if they did that, there really won’t be anything they could obtain from there.’

Ilahan opened his mouth towards Sollin, who was thinking about this and that.

“Sollin.”

“Yes, Master.”

“Since it seems it will be a bit irrational for us to personally interfere, shall we then test the Mark of Magellan during this opportunity?”

At Ilahan’s unexpected words, Sollin’s large eyes slightly widened.

“Are you planning on using the Desert Warriors?”

Ilahan nodded his head.

“That’s right. If it’s just like I plan, it looks like we should be able to reduce them to ashes even with just the Desert Warriors.”

“I think that’s a good idea, Master.”

Sollin smiled brightly as she bowed her head.

She also wanted to see how powerful the ‘Desert Warriors’ that had become their new fighting power were.

\*

- ‘Holdream’s Holy Grail’ has been used.
- The holy water filled with the spirit of the king of the giant, god-like people, Holdream’ has made the barren earth fertile.
- The time taken for base occupation has drastically decreased.
- Time remaining until base occupation: 05:24:33

While looking at the messages that popped up one after another, Ian wore a satisfied smile.

“It is truly a remarkable artifact.”

And on the other hand, he was also disappointed.

‘If our guild was as strong as a guild in the top 10, we would have been able to occupy about three or four additional bases through the Holy Grail...’

Still, the fact that the Holy Grail didn’t go to the enemy empire’s hands alone could be truly considered a relief.

Ian turned his gaze towards Bbookbbook, who was playing next to him.

“Bbookbbook, you’re living the life lately.”

Bbook-?

“Your unemployed lately. Since I rarely go for close combat, that is.”

Bbookbbook nodded his head with a happy expression.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

“Hyung is sorry. I need to give you a job quickly... Just wait a

little more, Bbookbbook, I'll create a job for you soon."

With shaking eyes, Bbookbbook fiercely shook his head.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

Bbakbbak, who was watching him do that beside him, called Ian.

- Owner.

"Yes, Bbakbbak."

- How much do you know about Bbookbbook?

"Hmm...?"

Ian, who was momentarily taken aback at the unexpected question, scratched the back of his head as he replied.

"Well... Basically that he's a big-headed turtle that lets out a weird sound?"

Bbookbbook, who raged at that response, charged towards Ian.

Bbook-Bboo-bbook-!

Bbookbbook headbutted Ian's shin with a fearsome spirit, but there was no way there would be any damage.

Ian, who smirked, asked Bbakbbak.

“Bbakbbak, do you know a bit about him?”

Bbakbbak nodded his head.

- I'm not too sure myself, but because he is still a brother species, there are a couple of things I know.

Ian's eyes shone.

“Oh, what are they?”

Bbakbbak's words continued.

- I am a species of the desert, but Bbookbbook is a species of the abyss. In order for a species of the abyss to become a turtle dragon, I know that there are two ways.

At the words 'turtle dragon', Ian's expression completely changed.

‘If it's about becoming a turtle dragon, he's probably talking

about evolution for sure, right?’

Ian quickly asked Bbakbbak again.

“What are the methods? Tell me quickly. I need to evolve that good-for-nothing quickly and shove him around, I’m telling you.”

Glare-.

Bbookbbook glared at Ian, but Ian wasn’t fazed.

Bbakbbak’s words continued.

- The first method is to obtain the Cintamani of the Turtle Dragon and use it just like how I evolved. However, if you use the Cintamani of the Turtle Dragon to evolve, you cannot ascend.

“Ascend...?”

- That’s right. In order to ascend, you must succeed in evolving without the help of the power of the Cintamani. This is because it is only possible to use the Cintamani once in a lifetime, but in the case that you use Cintamani when evolving, then you cannot use it when ascending.

However, Ian wore a confused expression.

This was because he didn’t know what the concept of ‘ascension’

was.

“What is ascension? What happens when you ascend?”

At Ian’s question, Bbakbbak slowly responded.

- As this is a story that was passed down through legends, I don’t know for sure myself, but I heard that a turtle dragon that has succeeded in ascension will become the king of turtle dragons as well as a god-like being. If Bbookbbook, a species of the abyss, was to succeed in ascension, I think he will become a water dragon that will be able to freely use the power of water.

“Oh...!”

He didn’t know exactly what it was, but even if he heard Bbakbbak’s instruction without really understanding, Ian could feel the incredible scale of it, and his mouth gaped open.

Bbook?

On top of that, even Bbookbbook, who at first wasn’t that interested, began to take quite a bit of interest in Bbakbbak’s words.

“Then tell me a way that Bbookbbook can become a turtle dragon without the Cintamani.”

At Ian’s urgency, Bbakbbak’s mouth opened up again.



- Owner, by any chance, do you remember the item called the 'Turtle Spirit' that I gave you?

Ian immediately nodded his head.

This was because the Turtle Spirit was a talisman item that he had equipped onto Bbookbbook and was using well.

“Yeah, of course I remember.”

- You can call that Turtle Spirit an 'essence of energy' that I have made over the past several hundred years. If you gather a total of three of these Turtle Spirits and find a place called the 'Altar of Water', then Bbookbbook should be able to become a turtle dragon.

Ian's expression slightly hardened.

This was because if he said he needed to level up or do a quest, then he would evolve Bbookbbook somehow, but he didn't even have an idea as to where to obtain the item called the Turtle Spirit.

“Where can you obtain the Turtle Spirit?”

Bbakbbak stared at Bbookbbook as he replied.

- Bbookbbook can make it himself. Or he must find one of the same race as him that has

a relic like me and receive it.

Ian's gaze turned to Bbookbbook.

“Yo, Bbookbbook, do you have a relic?”

For a moment, Bbookbbook wore a startled expression.

Bboo-ook?

Ian, who felt something through that form, began to press Bbookbbook.

“Yo, if you have one, spit it out quickly. He says you can evolve. You can become as cool as Bbakbbak.”

However, Bbookbbook wore a sorrowful expression as he shook his head.

However, just then, he saw a guild member run over hurriedly from afar.

“Ian, there's a huge problem!”

“Sorry?”

“Desert Warriors have appeared from the west!”

Ian’s gaze turned towards the direction that guild member pointed towards, and there, dozens of Desert Warriors were heading towards the base.

Ian’s expression slightly hardened.

# Chapter 154: Isolation, and a Crisis (1)

---

“Prepare for battle! Hurry and call all of the guild members that aren’t logged on, quickly!”

At Ian’s urgent shouts, the guild’s chat room began to light up like it was on fire.

It was no wonder, though, as the number of Desert Warriors looked to be quite high.

‘If it was after base occupation, it’s a fighting power that we would be able to face without a lot of difficulty, but to have to protect that while fighting...’

At the place that Ian’s gaze landed on, there was a shining giant crystal that was letting out a blue light floating.

That was the ‘Blue Crystal’, which could be called the heart of the base.

In order to occupy a base, the process of engraving the guild’s pattern into the Blue Crystal was required, but despite having shortened the time using the Holy Grail, it was a situation where they still needed 5 more hours.

While looking at the Desert Warriors that were approaching, Ian summoned all of his Familiars.

“Ly, Halli, Pin, summon!”

And Celia, who approached from him from behind, also summoned Ddukdae and her Blue Wyvern.

Ly, who was summoned, stretched as he opened his mouth.

- Owner, is it a battle?

At Ly’s question, Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“Yeah, you see them swarming over here, right?”

While looking at the approaching Desert Warriors, Ly growled lowly.

- It looks like it will be a fun battle for the first time in a while.

At Ly’s words, Bbakbbak, who was standing next to him, spoke as if he was dumbfounded.

- You haven’t already forgotten the vicious fight that you were just in a little while ago, right?

Ly nodded his head.

- Of course. However, we've rested a whopping 3 hours. To have rested this long aside from when we sleep, this is something that shouldn't have happened. My body is itching.
- ...

Ly let out a remark that was expected of a Familiar that had been with Ian the longest.

No wonder Bbookbbook was staring at Ly with a pitiful expression, while on the other hand, Ian was wearing an incredibly pleased expression.

'I've truly raised Ly alone really well.'

And shortly after, as the leading group of the Desert Warriors were close to the base, Ian began to let out commands.

"Yoohyun, firstly, lead the Knight-class people that are logged on right now and pull aggro please!"

"Okay."

And he turned his gaze towards Bbakbbak.

"Bbakbbak, it looks like you'll have to stand your ground at the very front."

- Understood, Owner. I will do that.

Thud-Thud-.

As Bbakbbak moved his heavy build and went out to the front, Celia also let out a command to Ddukdae and made him follow him.

And Ian began to bang on the giant war drum that had the Lotus Guild's symbol drawn on it.

The loud sound of a drum rang out through the air.

Thud-Thud- Thud-!

And shortly after, all of the Lotus Guild users were buffed.

- The War Drum of Courage has rung out.
- The fighting spirit of all soldiers affiliated with the Lotus Guild has increased by 20%.
- The combat abilities of all users affiliated with the Lotus Guild have increased by 15% for 20 minutes.

Ian, who had invoked everything including the guild buff, now began to move his Familiars around busily.

Of course, invoking all of the buffs he held was first on his list.

Since the larger the scale of the battle, the bigger the effect an AoE buff had in battle.

“Pin, Roar of the King!”

As soon as Ian’s command dropped, Pin, who surged quickly up into the air, cried out loudly towards the sky.

Kyaaoh-!

- Familiar ‘Pin’s Inherent Ability ‘Roar of the King’ has been invoked.
- The Agility of all allies within a 50-metre range will increase by 30% for 10 minutes.
- The movement speed of all enemies within a 50-metre range will decrease by 30% for 10 minutes.

With Pin’s roar as a reference point, the literal dogfight began.

Rather than running into battle in person, Ian continuously looked at the progress of the battle as he began to conduct the battleground.

‘The damage received must be minimized. Since just blocking them off doesn’t mean it’s the end.’



In comparison, the Desert Warriors had a simple battle pattern, but as their levels alone were 20 levels higher than the general fighting power of the Lotus Guild, the condition of the battle was progressing incredibly tightly.

Clang-Claang-!

Riding on horses, the Desert Warriors swung their scimitars that shone white here and there.

Whoong-!

How dangerous their destructive power was could be heard just from hearing the sound, and the Lotus guild members faced their opponents in their tensest state.

“Fiolan, please support the front to the right!”

“Alright!”

“Carwin, keep your position, and Kroban hyung, please block them so that they can’t get close to the crystal!”

“Okay!”

Still, it seems thanks to the buffs that were granted on top of one another and Ian’s fast and accurate command, the Lotus Guild was

blocking off the Desert Warriors quite magnificently.

And even through this dogfight, Ian's Familiars were outstandingly playing an active part.

Especially, the abilities of Bbakbbak, who was newly recruited, was to the point they were shocking.

- Familiar 'Bbakbbak's Inherent Ability Guardian of the Desert skill has been invoked.
- Familiar 'Bbakbbak' has created a protective film that can absorb damage of up to 30% of his maximum Vitality for 20 seconds.

As a matter of fact, the Vitality of Bbakbbak, on top of boasting an outrageous amount of Defensive Power that was close to 5 thousand when including his buffs, hardly went down as he even created a protective film through his passive skill.

- Familiar 'Bbakbbak' has dealt critical damage to the Desert Warrior.
- The 'Desert Warrior's Vitality has decreased by 9870.

However, it wasn't like his Offensive Power was weak either.

He was indeed a splendid dealer-slash-tanker.

With a satisfied expression, Ian watched Bbakbbak's

performance.

‘It may be because his level is high as well as his rank, but he definitely lasts much better in comparison to Ddukdae.’

On top of that, thanks to the ‘Blessing of the Turtle Dragon’ ability that receives damage in place of a designated target, Ly was also flying around the middle of the battlefield.

- Familiar ‘Bbakbbak’ has used Inherent Ability ‘Blessing of the Turtle Dragon’ on Familiar ‘Ly’.
- For 2 minutes, ‘Bbakbbak’ will instead receive ‘Ly’s damage (‘Bbakbbak’ will receive 150% of the original damage, and if his Vitality drops below 10%, the skill will automatically be cleared).

Ian shouted towards Ly.

“Ly, go deeper inside and stir it up even more!”

- Understood, Owner.

Despite Ian’s active engagement, there couldn’t help but be continuous damage in the beginning of the battle.

This was because the users, who hadn’t been in the central continent long ever since arriving, seemed to not have been fully accustomed as they ran about in confusion.

However, as the battle proceeded, the users of the Lotus Guild began to find stability more and more, and the number of Desert Warriors began to shrink one by one.

However, just then, Ian heard a familiar voice.

“Blessing of the Goddess!”

- Guild member ‘Harin’ has used skill ‘Blessing of the Goddess’.
- All level of immunity has increased by 20%.

At that voice, Ian slightly turned his head.

And in that spot, there was Harin.

Ian slightly wore a taken aback expression.

“Huh? Harin, you were here as well?”

This was because Harin’s level was too low to come to the central continent.

That’s why he told Harin to stay at the Lotus Domain, and he thought she would only be there for sure.

While looking at a surprised Ian, Harin puffed out both her cheeks.

“Hey, if I don’t follow when all the guild members are moving, would there have been a way for me to come here? Then I would have at least have had to gamed alone boringly for several weeks.”

Ian scratched the back of his head as he mumbled.

“Still, it’s dangerous...”

Harin hit Ian’s back with the staff that she was holding as she spoke.

“Forget it, I’ll take care of myself, so focus on the battle quickly instead. Carwin’s in a bit of danger over there right now.”

At Harin’s words, Ian reflexively moved, and he gave a command to Halli and Ly, and Carwin, whose Vitality had almost hit zero, barely saved himself.

While looking at Ian, who was now instead on Halli’s back and was running around the battleground crazily, Harin shook her head.

“Ha, how nice it would be if he invested even a quarter of the energy he uses in gaming into me.”

While looking at Harin, who was mumbling, Fiolan, who was casting magic next to her, smirked.

“Aren’t you being a little too greedy, Harin?”

At her words, Harin had daggers in her eyes.

“No, not even half, but a quarter is being greedy? Is this how you’re going to be as well, Fiolan?”

While looking at Harin’s tearful face, Fiolan burst out into laughter.

“It looks like almost 100% of Ian’s life is gaming, but a quarter of that is 25%. At that rate, that is being greedy.”

At Fiolan’s reasoning that was quite persuasive(?), Harin couldn’t help but become speechless for a moment.

“Is, is that so?”

There was a small disturbance(?), but either way, at the end of the battle that lasted about 1 hour, the Lotus Guild succeeded in blocking the Desert Warriors without taking a lot of damage.

They did lose a lot of soldiers, but the number of guild members that died were only about thirty, and that much damage was a

much favourable amount in comparison to what was initially expected.

And as the battle ended, while looking at the purple rays that were sucked in from the corpses, Ian's two eyes slightly grew.

‘Huh? Ever since the territory war, there was never a case when purple rays were made like this.’

Ian hurriedly opened his inventory and checked the information of Karceus' Egg for the first time in a while.

- Karceus' Egg

Hatching Rate: 57%

And his two eyes rounded.

“...!”

This was because, just when he checked a couple days ago, the hatching rate, which was just below 40%, had gone up close to 20%.

‘What exactly is the criteria? What kind of battle do I need to do in order for the hatching rate to go up quickly?’

While looking at God Dragon's Egg that was shining brightly, Ian felt his heart pound.

‘If this one just hatches... I could probably actually face top-ranking players now.’

Ian, who momentarily set aside his anticipation towards the god dragon, began to straighten out the grounds after putting the egg back into his inventory.

As it was a battle big enough that even Ian could count into a handful of large-scale battles ever since coming into the central continent, the spoils of the war were also quite big.

Lastly, Ian, who checked the state of the Blue Crystal, mumbled to himself.

‘Speaking of which, the time is passing by really slowly. To still have over 4 hours left...’

While hoping that there are no other hitches until the base was completed, Ian began to heal his Familiars.

\*

Battlegrounds here and there, which were quiet for a while even after the central continent opened up, finally started to have large-scale battles.



This was because all of the follow-up troops of the armies of either empire were gathered in the central continent, and high-ranking guilds that were decent enough had also entered.

Thanks to that, the main page of the community was plastered with articles that were related to the battle results of the central continent everyday.

- The DarkRuna Guild lead by Magic Swordsman 'Ilahan' is letting out a crushing force.
- Mark of Magellan, dispute over the balance-breaking item.
- Luspel Imperial Army's line of defense, countdown until it collapses.

Jinsung, who was sitting in front of his computer while eating cereal, mumbled as he looked through the community.

“Hmm... The imperial army's line of defense can't collapse.”

Even after they blocked off the Desert Warriors that attacked on a large-scale, there were invasions of small monsters, but the Lotus Guild was eventually able to succeed in occupying the base.

However, as expected, the major reason for the base occupation was Holdream's Holy Grail.

If it wasn't for the Holy Grail, they would have been attacked by the Kaimon Imperial Army before they even succeeded in occupying the base.

Jinsung, who continued to read down the article, mumbled again.

“Should I now leave the base defense to Yoohyun, and go out to the front lines and help defend the defensive line...”

As mentioned in the main community article, the Kaimon Empire's fighting power was showing overwhelming superiority.

And in that background, there was an item called the 'Mark of Magellan' that Ilahan possessed.

The Mark of Magellan made the Desert Warriors, which were neutral NPCs, stand with the Kaimon Empire's side, and due to them spreading out a guerilla tactic in battlegrounds here and there, the Luspel Imperial Army began to lose every battle that they fought.

The fighting power of the Desert Warriors were much lower in comparison to the fighting power of the Luspel Imperial Army, but as the fighting power of the Luspel and the Kaimon Imperial Army were evenly matched to the point it was tight, the addition tilted the weight.

'The base defense can only be spoken about when the line of

defense hasn't collapsed, if the line of defense collapses and we're isolated in the middle of the enemy camp, then there will definitely be no solution then.'

Ian, who quickly ate all of his cereal, hurriedly went into his capsule.

He had no intentions of helplessly losing the base he worked so hard to get.

## Chapter 155: Isolation, and a Crisis (2)

---

“Alright, alright, please gather over here in an orderly way. The battle will begin soon.”

At the front-line base of the Luspel side of the central continent, there were hordes of users affiliated with the Luspel Empire that gathered to participate in the battle.

Front line battles were dangerous to the point that it was quite difficult to avoid death, but despite that, there was an obvious reason why many users looked for this battleground.

That reason could be organized largely into two, and first, as expected, it was because of the enormous amount of EXP that was difficult to obtain through just normal quests, and the second was because the easiest way to obtain ‘Imperial Family Contributions’, which were required to obtain good artifacts or quests, was fighting in the front lines.

Of course, because for users that were affiliated with giant guilds, there were more benefits in fighting while affiliated with their guild, so there weren’t many that came, but for users who didn’t have an affiliated guild or were part of a small guild where it would be difficult for them to enter the central continent, yet were still over lv 100, it wasn’t an exaggeration to think that most of those users gathered at this front-line base.

And because there was a huge crowd gathered, the noisiness was an obvious.

“Yo, but, what if you die as soon as the battle starts? Then you’ll just lose a level without even being able to obtain much Fame or Contributions, no?”

“That probably won’t happen, but even if you were to die as soon as it started, it’s not that big of a loss. Since, on average, you obtain 10 thousand Fame and 1 thousand Contributions even just from participating. A ranking Warrior-class person that I know caught a couple dozen soldiers yesterday alone and obtained over 50 thousand Fame. And I think they obtained almost 10 thousand Contributions as well?”

“Pfft, are you sure they didn’t randomly hit knights and not just soldiers? You’re saying that they just caught soldiers, yet got 50 thousand Fame?”

“No, that person is about lv 130, but they said that they couldn’t touch the knights. They said that Kaimon knights are almost lv 140.”

“Keu, then how much Fame would a knight give? They probably give a lot of EXP too, right?”

And while they individually talked about this and that, Ian also stood in line amongst the empire users that were waiting to register as a mercenary.

‘For crying out loud, the procedure is incredibly complicated. Should I have just gone looking for Hellaim right away?’

If he had went straight to Hellaim, he probably would have been able to register as a mercenary quickly, but the front-line barracks were too wide, and the problem was that there was no way to find out where Hellaim was.

Ian stretched out his neck, and after checking the front of the long line, he grumbled to himself.

‘Ugh, how much longer do I have to wait? I’m dying because of how wasteful this time is.’

However, just then, A familiar voice called Ian.

“Excuse me... By any chance, aren’t you Viscount Ian?”

Ian reflexively turned his head at the voice that called his name, and in that spot, there was a knight affiliated with the Luspel Empire that was staring at Ian while on a horse.

Ian was momentarily taken aback.

‘Who is this? How do they know me?’

He felt like he saw him somewhere, but he didn’t really remember.

Ian erased his taken aback expression and asked him.

“Yes, it is, but... Who are you?”

And Ian’s question was immediately solved.

“Ah, so it is you, Viscount! The fact that you cannot remember me, I’m a little disappointed, haha. I am ‘Valtor’, an adjutant serving the leader of the royal guards, Hellaim. Did we not participate in the hunting of Holdream just a couple days ago together?”

After hearing his explanation, Ian began to remember the other’s face.

No, truthfully, even though he didn’t remember, he needed to act as if he remembered.

‘Alright, I got lucky!’

Ian brightened his face, and held out his hand towards him.

“Ah-ha, Sir Valtor! I’ve made a big mistake; how could I have not remembered? When thanks to you, Sir Valtor, we were able to hunt so easily in the basement dungeon, haha!”

Valtor immediately got down from his horse, and while taking Ian’s hand, he showed his mannerisms, and in an instant, their surroundings began to buzz.

“What the hell, that user is acquainted with a knight of the imperial family’s royal guards!”

“Who exactly are they? Rankers or celebrities are all affiliated with giant guilds, so there’s no way that they’re here. If they are able to act that close with a royal guard, then aren’t they an incredibly important figure?”

“On top of that, the imperial family knight spoke first!”

While jealousy towards Ian and assumptions about his identity were rampant here and there, someone yelled loudly.

“I know that person!”

“Who is it?”

“You see, the Summoner that came out on the trailer videos of this large-scale update, it’s that person!”

“That’s right, Ian, it’s Ian!”

At the unexpected situation, Ian flinched.

However, this was an obvious sequence.



Since, before Ian realized, his popularity had gone up to the point it was comparable with decent rankers.

However, because his stake of popularity was mainly gathered around Summoner users or new class users, in this battleground, where high-level users that were above a fixed standard, a person that recognized him had just appeared a little later.

The number of new class users that could enter the central continent was truly a small minority.

Especially in the case of Summoners, who had difficulty leveling up, the number of users that had the ability to enter the central continent could be counted within ten fingers.

No matter the reactions of the people, Ian brazened his expression and continued his conversation with Valtor.

“Sir Valtor, by any chance, could I ask you for a favour?”

“Please tell me, if it is something that I can do, I must definitely do it.”

Ian was slightly surprised at the reaction that was more favourable than expected, but he soon nodded his head.

‘It’s an obvious that my Affinity with the imperial family’s royal knights is high since I’ve done multiple quests with them up until now.’

Starting from the Griffin Hatching Quest, Ian had completed weighty empire quests such as the War Prisoner Rescue Operation.

Especially, as Ian had conducted the knights magnificently inside the ancient ruins, the dungeon of Holdream's Grave, his Affinity with Valtor, whom he was currently with, was close to maximum.

"I also want to help the knights at the front line and fight, that is, I want to face as many opponents as I can at the head. Could you, Sir Valtor, guide me to Leader Hellaim?"

He had cleverly packaged up the words that he didn't want to wait and wanted to jump the line.

Of course, Valtor was delighted as he nodded his head.

"Oh, from what I heard, I heard that the Lotus Guild also had to defend their base, but to run over to the offensive unit at the front like this for the imperial family, your loyalty towards His Majesty is truly enormous, Viscount."

While being as brazen as possible, Ian let out a hearty laugh.

"Haha, once the front defensive line of the empire collapses, what good would our guild base be? I will lead the first line in blocking off the Kaimon guys."

Valtor wore a pleased expression as he nodded his head.

“Keu, as expected, there was a reason why His Majesty favoured you. Follow me, Viscount. I will guide you to the leader. The Leader will also probably be delighted.”

Ian slightly bowed his head towards Valtor as he showed his gratitude.

“Thank you, Sir Valtor.”

Like that, Ian finished his short conversation with the knight of the imperial family, Valtor, and following behind him, he disappeared into the barracks.

In the spot that he disappeared from, the remaining users grumbled as they let out their dissatisfaction.

“Wow, for personal connections to be important even in games, too... How sad this is!”

“But still, no matter how much of a named user he is, how much of an active role could a Summoner play in the ferocious front-line battlefield for them to take him away like that?”

“That’s what I’m saying. The fact that it is incredibly difficult to level up a Summoner is something that everybody knows... That Ian person wasn’t even in the ranking list, so would he have even hit lv 110?”

“Hul, these people really don’t know much. Have you at least watched one combat video of Ian’s?”

“No. Well, even if I didn’t watch one, isn’t it obvious? It’s not like I’ve seen a Summoner only once or twice.”

However, just when dispute towards Ian began to thicken, one female user, who had been still up until now, opened her mouth with a quiet voice.

And the rippling effect of her words were quite big.

“I am not an acquaintance, but I believe that Ian is at least lv 130.”

Shortly after, opposing voices immediately burst out from here and there.

“No, what kind of nonsensical words are those? From what I know, the current 1st place Summoner user in the rankings is lv 122 or something like that.”

“Exactly what I’m saying. There aren’t even five Black Magician users that are over lv 130 either.”

However, at her words that followed afterwards, everybody couldn’t do anything else but shut their mouths.

“I am that lv 122 Summoner that is currently in 1st place in the Summoner rankings. And from the result of watching Ian’s combat video, he is much stronger than me.”

The users, who had gathered together to chat away up until then, wore flustered expressions.

“But how could he not pop up in the rankings...”

And she continued her words.

“He probably set up all of his information up until now to 100% private. Aren’t there also a couple of users like that amongst the unofficial rankers?”

“Th, that...”

They were words that were hard to believe easily, but as the character information that popped up above her head added a weight to her words, people stared at the spot that Ian disappeared from with jealous expressions.

- Loren/Lv. 122/Summoner

\*

- So... You're saying that you'll be going in as a spearhead in a war that will break out between the empires 1 hour from now?

Jinsung sat on his chair in front of his desk and was currently on call with someone through his smartphone.

“Yes, that’s right. And I will record all of the battle process with the internal camera in the capsule. As my capsule is the new model with the best specifications that hasn’t been out long, the quality will probably be fantastic.”

A clear, female voice continued to be heard through Jinsung’s smartphone.

- Excellent. No wonder, the video quality of the basement dungeon of Holdream’s Grave last time was also really good, and as expected, you had the newest capsule model.

“That’s right. Anyways, I hope you’ll also edit this video well this time, Sojin.”

- Of course. Don’t worry. The video itself is really good, but you also know my abilities.

“Of course. Then once the video is finished, I will immediately send it to you.”

Jinsung, who finished with his business, was about to end the call, but Sojin’s voice flowed through again.

- Oh, right, Jinsung.

“Yes?”

- When should I upload that Holdream’s dungeon clear video?

At that question, Jinsung was momentarily submerged in his thoughts.

‘Hmm... If that video spreads, it could still possibly be a little dangerous. Since giant guilds will pay more attention to me...’

The biggest problem was that once the video spread, the fact that Holdream’s Holy Grail was under Jinsung had a high chance of spreading together as well.

Of course, the scene where they obtained the Holy Grail will be edited and uploaded, but still, it was a fact that could be guessed at any time.

Jinsung’s words continued.

“Please wait a little more. As information that cannot be known yet is inside... I think it should be alright after about two weeks. I will contact you again then.”

At those words Sojin licked her lips.

- Tsk... I'm itching because I want to upload it quickly... Well, either way, I understand. Then, please contact me again soon, Jinsung!

“Sounds good!”

Jinsung, who ended the call, opened up the internet and searched up the list of videos on YouCast where his combat scenes were included in before he began to look through them.

There were videos starting from as little as a couple hundred thousand views to ones that were even close to about ten million views.

Jinsung mumbled with a satisfied expression.

“Alright, with about this many views, I'll probably get even more money than last month, right?”

With a broad smile, Jinsung checked each and every video.

Thanks to having passed on quite a lot of combat videos to Sojin, now, if you searched Ian's name, almost close to twenty videos could be searched up.

“What should I buy as soon as money comes into my bank? As expected, you earn money to spend it!”



At the thought of splurging on things with the money that would roll into his bank account, Jinsung became happy.

However, Jinsung's next words were the highlight.

“Should I be changing all of my armour into top-class items? Or is it time for me to change my staff? Hmm, as Magic Spheres is still useful, it's a little wasteful to change it...”

If it were others, they would have thought about buying a car or moving into a better house with the money they earned, but Jinsung just thought of trading the money he earned into game items.

If his parents saw this scene, it would have been hard for him to even salvage his bones, but Jinsung was all smiles as he moved his feet towards his capsule again.

“Still, let's not use all of it, I should leave a little and at least go eat beef or something with Harin.”

Still, fortunately(?) now, Harin's stake seemed to have appeared a little in Jinsung's mind.

# Chapter 156: Isolation, and a Crisis (3)

---

The all-time largest war in size in Kailan.

No, this was not just simply in Kailan, but it could be considered the largest war in scale even including the history of all VR games.

Just counting the number of soldiers on either empire's side, there were about 30 thousand on each side.

On top of the number of knights being close to a thousand on each side, there were even over thousands of users that were participating in the war.

And a scene with a scale this large when counting the number of people could easily be called a grand spectacle.

“Cut down all Kaimon Empire people!”

“There is no retreat! Raise the dignity of the Luspel warriors!”

“Whooo!”

The users that were participating in the battle were feeling the utmost thrill inside the large-scale battle that was materialized perfectly to the point it was realistic.

“It really feels like I’m participating in war!”

“No kidding. It’s more tiring than hunting in the field, but there’s a completely different nervousness from hunting as well!”

The position of the users in this battleground could be considered the middle of the soldiers and the knights.

This was because the levels of the soldiers were around 110-130, while the levels of the knights were around 150-180.

Of course, there were also users that were a lower level than the soldiers, but they died out immediately and couldn’t help but be reduced to ashes.

Baaang-!

- You have been directly hit by the sword attack of the Kaimon Empire Knight, and have received critical damage.
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 36,478.
- As your Vitality has been completely exhausted, you have died. You have left the battleground.

Especially in the case of Magicians or Archers, which were classes with low Defensive Power, even if they just got hit once by a high-level knight, they couldn’t help but face game over just like that.

However, even if they were hit by the same attack, depending on the Defensive Power of the person that was hit, that force was different in an infinite number of ways.

- Familiar 'Bbakbbak' has received damage from the Kaimon Empire Knight's Inherent Ability, Soul Penetration.
- Familiar 'Bbakbbak's Vitality has been reduced by 5768.

The greatness of Bbakbbak, whose Defensive Power was close to 4 thousand, was showing.

Looking at the fact that only about 5 thousand damage came through even though he was hit with not just a normal attack, but a skill attack, Ian wore a pleased expression.

'I should attach a Vitality regeneration option no matter what on the talisman that I'll be giving to Bbakbbak. Although it doesn't appear often, that is.'

If he gave Bbakbbak, whose Defensive Power and Vitality were overwhelmingly high, a talisman that had the high-ranking regeneration option attached to it, it was obvious that the effectiveness of it will be incredible.

Because he even formed a protective film once every minute thanks to his passive skill, if he had a good regeneration option, he felt like he could even recover all of the Vitality he lost for the duration of the protective film.

‘Once the battle ends, I should just grind talismans for a couple hours.’

Because he didn’t rest from producing talismans whenever he got the chance up until now, now he could even make talismans that were over Heroic-ranks as well.

He had even equipped an item onto Bbakbbak that was decent enough amongst the talismans he had made up until now, but it wasn’t at a satisfying level.

Ian, who was riding on top of Bbakbbak’s wide back, let out a command.

“Bbakbbak, use Blessing of the Turtle Dragon on Ly!”

- Understood, Owner.

And the golden current of light that spurted out from Bbakbbak’s body shot out towards Ly as it dyed the air yellow.

- Familiar ‘Bbakbbak’ has used Inherent Ability ‘Blessing of the Turtle Dragon’ on Familiar ‘Ly’.
- For 2 minutes, ‘Bbakbbak’ will receive ‘Ly’s damage instead (‘Bbakbbak’ will receive 150% of the original damage, and if his Vitality drops below 10%, the skill will automatically be cleared).

Ian, who checked that the skill was invoked, turned around and let out a command to Celia.

“Celia, have Ddukdae step back a little, and please focus the Familiar Recovery skill onto Bbakbbak!”

“Yes, Lord!”

Even if it was Bbakbbak, because his Vitality dropped in an instant if he was to receive the damage that Ly received instead, for the duration that the Blessing of the Turtle Dragon skill was invoked at least, they needed to focus the recovery skill on Bbakbbak.

And even though Ian didn't command him, Ly charged into the battlefield and began to slaughter the enemies.

- Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to the Kaimon Empire Soldier.
- The Kaimon Empire Soldier's Vitality has been reduced by 27,638.
- You have successfully killed the Kaimon Empire Soldier!
- You have obtained 198,079 EXP.
- You have obtained 3000 Fame.

- You have obtained 500 Contributions towards the Imperial Family of the Luspel Empire.

Ian, who slightly checked the overloading amount of system messages that popped up whenever Ly killed a soldier, turned his head again and looked around at the battleground.

‘It’s important that we catch a lot, but since the most important thing is leading the battle itself to victory no matter what!’

As the biggest purpose for Ian participating in the battle was to maintain the front lines, Ian focused more on the flow of the whole battleground.

And from afar, a familiar backside caught Ian’s eyes.

‘Ugh, why is he over there again? He should listen a little to what I say!’

The main character of that backside was none other than Kaizar.

Kaizar was in the battlefield that Ian was participating in with him, but as he just did as he pleased, he didn’t listen to Ian’s commands at all.

Since it was to the point that if Ian told him to move towards the east, he purposely moved to the west.

It was to the point that he felt like the common empire knights that Ian had high Affinity with listened to Ian's words better than Kaizar instead.

‘Ah, I don't know. Still, since all of the EXP and Fame is coming in, I should just be satisfied with that.’

He felt as if even Kaizar was inserted into the west front lines, which were slowly collapsing, the balance would return again, but Kaizar was excitedly fighting the knights in the central front line.

‘I should adjust to Kaizar's movements instead and move accordingly.’

Ian called over Pin, who was spreading out his Crush skill towards the soldiers.

“Pin, come over here!”

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

At Ian's command, Pin approached him at lightning speed.

After Ian petted Pin's head for some time, he got on Pin's back with skilled movements.

“Celia, I'll leave it up to you here. Try to last while healing Bbakbbak and Ddukdae well. Halli will also help.”



“Yes, Lord, just leave it to me!”

Ian also let out a simple command to Paulean, who was diligently fighting at the front.

“Paulean, since protecting this line is the most important, don’t go in too deep to dig through the front and just maintain the line.”

Paulean nodded his head energetically as he replied.

“Yes, Lord, understood!”

Ian, who left the battleground up to his reliable retainers, flew up into the air on Pin’s back like an arrow.

Kkyaaoooh-!

As expected of the emperor of the blue sky, Pin cried out with a resounding voice.

Ian looked down at the battleground as he began to diligently spray Magic Spheres and Current Proliferation.

‘As expected, I don’t think there’s any AoE status condition skill that’s as effective as Current Proliferation in a large-scale battle. On top of that, if it’s a dogfight like this, it’s better!’

Like that, Ian began to direct the whole battleground effectively.

He wasn't directly letting out commands to the NPCs or users, but while he sprayed debuff skills or status condition attack skills to the right man in the right place, he began to grab the battlefield in an indirect way.

And the ones that felt threatened by Ian's form first were the users of the Kaimon Empire.

"What is that? Was there even a NPC riding a Griffin amongst Luspel Empire's combat-type NPCs?"

"What the hell, this is my first time seeing that too. There really is a Griffin Rider?"

Users who didn't really know about Ian thought that Ian, who went around the air and disturbed the battle little by little, was an NPC, but there were also users amongst them that knew him.

"That user, it's Ian! I've watched a video of him riding a Griffin and spraying lightning!"

"It's the truth! If you get hit by those purple spheres, it hurts quite a bit, so everybody, avoid them!"

Pung-!

The effect that the fighting power of one user has on this big of a battleground couldn't help but honestly be meager, but no matter who saw, Ian exerted a great amount of effect onto the overall battle.

Ian properly used his strong allies, and he skillfully isolated threatening enemies and made it difficult for them to display their full strength.

As the battle proceeded like that, the battleground slowly began to lean towards the Luspel Empire's side.

It seemed that the users affiliated with Luspel that were still alive and were diligently fighting felt that as well, as they began to chatter out of excitement.

“Wow, are we finally going to win for once as well?”

“I know, right? I feel like we're really going to win today!”

“I heard that we just lost three days in a row since the war started, but how exactly did we win today?”

“Do you not see that Griffin rider over there? I think that person is really great. Thanks to that person, I survived twice earlier.”

“What do you mean that person? That person is Ian, who is 1st

place in rankings for Summoners. I told you that I saw a combat video before. He's freaking awesome. If I'm still alive by the end of the battle, I'm thinking of even getting an autograph at least."

"Oh, really? That person is that Ian you were talking about?"

The users looked at Ian, who sometimes rode on Pin and flew in the air or other times rode Halli and went around the battleground, with jealous gazes.

"Yo, if I look at that Ian person, I think that the Summoner class is actually a cheat class, but then why whiners always whining in the Summoner bulletin board?"

At one user's word, a Knight user, who seemed to be his friend, shook his head as he replied.

"You, does that play look easy to you right now? As Familiars themselves have AIs, they do fight up to an extent even if you just leave them alone, but unless you consistently give them commands, then you can't get that much control. That Ian person is amazing. I've been watching him for a while now, but he doesn't have one Familiar that is just muddling around. On top of that, I even think the ranks of his Familiars are at least Heroic-rank."

Like that, after Ian poured out all of his concentration without rest and went around the battleground, Luspel Empire was in the end able to perfectly claim victory.

The fact that the Desert Warriors that had contributed quite a bit in the victories of Kaimon Empire up until now hadn't showed up could be considered luck, but despite that, it wasn't like Ian's active role faded away.

“Hooray! I never thought that I would still be alive by the end of the battle!”

“Jackpot! I also survived, hahaha!”

“Yo, you're not even lv 120. How were you able to survive up until now?”

“Hehehe, well, I just followed behind Ian. Ian saved me three times! God Ian!”

The number of Luspel Empire users that survived at the end of the battle was only about 900, which was about 30% of the 3 thousand that participated in the battle in the beginning, but to be honest, that was also an incredible standard.

Since even if it was the victorious camp, up until now, there was never a case when over 10% of the users survived.

In other words, today's battle could be considered a great victory.

‘How far could we push in with today's battle?’

Ian opened his map and after checking the newly formed front confrontation line and the distance between that and the base, Ian let out a sigh of relief.

If in the case they had lost today as well, the base would have really been in danger.

‘Alright, if we can just win continuously the next two days or so, it looks like our base could avoid the danger zone.’

After Ian checked the fact that his abilities displayed a bigger effect than expected even in a large-scale battle, he was incredibly pleased.

‘The EXP is terrific as well. I should run as a mercenary in the front lines for a couple days.’

However, Ian’s plans, which just looked smooth, couldn’t help but be immediately shattered the next day.

\*

- Ian: What? The base was attacked?
- Herz: That’s what I’m telling you. While you were gone, the Desert Warriors came and attacked. The scale was smaller than last time, but it seemed because you were gone, the damage was quite big.

- Ian: No, how is that possible? With today's battle, we increased the distance from the front lines by over 3 kilometres, so then how were the Desert Warriors able to invade us?
- Fiolan: By the looks of it, it seems like the DarkRuna Guild personally moved the Desert Warriors. Or, the Mark of Magellan has some sort of special ability...
- Ian: Special ability? What kind...?
- Fiolan: For example, something like summoning Desert Warriors within a certain distance to a specific place...?
- Ian: Ah, this is beyond my expectations. Then starting tomorrow, I should also return to the base.
- Herz: By the looks of it, I think that would be best. Since whether you're here or not, the difference is quite big.

The expression of Ian, who went into the chatroom in order to boast about the victory in battle and instead heard unexpected news, hardened.

“Ah... The Mark of Magellan or whatever, is there no way to see the details of what kind of item that is? I'm going crazy.”

The central continent base of the Lotus guild was currently raising buildings quickly and was in the middle of development.

The resources and goods that were needed in raising those

buildings were, of course, things that were supplied through the War Trading Post.

‘If attacks continuously come in, it looks like we’ll have to build a defense tower first, not the production buildings. We’ll have to invest a lot more in the labour force as well...’

But then again, as it was too big of a waste to cancel the production buildings that were being built, they needed to supply additional resources from somewhere.

Ian’s head began to become incredibly complicated as he closed the chat window and headed towards the base.

‘If it’s like this, in the end, it means that we’ll need to pull resources from the northern continent...’

Ian, who momentarily organized his thoughts, sent a personal message to someone.

- Ian: Professor, it’s Jinsung. By any chance, are you finishing up the thing that I asked as a favour from you before now?



# Chapter 157: Base Defense War (1)

---

Jinook's message came immediately after a couple seconds since Ian sent his message.

- Lee Jinook: Yes, Jinsung. As a matter of fact, I was planning on contacting you.
- Ian: Yes, Professor, is the training ground now on the final stage?
- Lee Jinook: The upgrade finished yesterday afternoon. Starting today, we can now take in customers.

The thing that Ian had requested from Jinook was none other than an upgrade on the Domain's training ground.

At the end of several months since the training ground was first built, it had finally been upgraded to the final stage.

‘The training ground could truly become an amazing bonanza at this point. Now, it seems even information related to Potential has slowly been releasing, and the time has come.’

The training ground was a unique place that could quickly raise the Potential of a Familiar.

That is, if Ian's special skill, ‘Training’, was excluded.

‘I don't know how much of a ripple effect it will have, but at least

amongst Summoners, it won't be able to help but become the greatest issue.'

To Summoners, the 'evolution' of a Familia was an incredibly important part.

Because of that, in order to solve the secret related to the evolution of a Familiar, a dispute occurred periodically on the Familiar bulletin board.

However, there hasn't been a person that knew about the relationship between Potential and evolution almost as exactly as Ian did yet.

It could be that there was a user that found out, but hasn't released the information like Ian, but at least in the community, the information had not yet been released.

At this time, when there was almost no one that knew about the correlation between Potential and evolution, if the role of the training ground also became known, a truly enormous wave would rise.

- Ian: Then, how many Familiars can be accommodated in the training ground right now, Professor?
- Lee Jinook: Hmm... It looks like a total of 50 large Familiars, and for medium and small Familiars, 100 each could be accommodated. I expanded it completely using all of the allotted land you gave me.

- Ian: Oh, the number of accommodatable Familiars is larger than expected. Thank you for your efforts.
- Lee Jinook: Then, are you planning on now releasing the information outside starting today?
- Ian: Yes, Professor. I think it is the right time now. Users that have almost found out the secret of Potential will probably already exist, and soon, the information will also be released in the community. We will release the information before then and dominate the market in advance. There probably won't be a Domain that possesses a training ground that has been upgraded to the maximum level anywhere in Kailan.

Ian's calculations were simple.

If he released the information into the community that within the correlation of Potential and a Familiar's evolution, the higher the Potential, the higher the range that the Familiar's abilities grew to, almost all Familiars within Kailan would gather at the Lotus Domain.

If that was the case, naturally, with the Lotus Domain as the centre, there will be an explosive economic growth, and there will also be Familiars that will begin to just put their roots down and settle in the Domain.

As the level of the monsters around the Domain were 70 at the lowest and 100 at the highest, the hunting ground would be charming enough to Summoners in the mid-level range as well.

- Lee Jinook: Alright, student Jinsung. Then, how are you planning on going with the promotions?

Ian, who thought for a moment, sent a short response.

- Ian: I will take care of it, Professor. Just thoroughly prepare to take in customers.

\*

Jinsung, who finished his conversation with Professor Lee Jinook, logged out of the game for now and came out of his capsule.

He was planning on not logging on for about a quarter of a day now.

‘Let’s think that I’m writing an attack piece for the first time in a while and write something as diligently as possible.’

Ian, who first opened up his internet browser, began to scrape together information related to his Familiars.

Gathering large amounts of information on evolved individuals that Ian didn’t know, yet the information has been released for, was first priority.

‘It is most important to write it so that it looks as good as possible, and also for it to be easily readable.’

Of course, it was no mistake that even if he wrote the information that when Potential was 100 after other evolution requirements are met, they would evolve and that they needed to raise their level when their Potential is high in order for their abilities to grow up to a higher range in a condensed form, it would be an incredible amount of information, but he couldn't be pleased with just that.

He wanted to write something like a Summoner's bible, something that if you were a Summoner, you needed to read at least once.

Ian was planning on analyzing all Familiars and their evolutions, and organizing everything he could from their ranks, the maximum and minimum rate of growth based on each rank's abilities, so that it was easy to look at.

'I'll promote the bulletin board link by posting it up at the end of the video that Sojin will be uploading, and since my ID also has become quite famous, if I sell my name a little, the number of hits will probably go up in an instant.'

Ian, who sat in front of the computer, began to be absorbed like crazy into it.

\*

The Lotus Base in the Central Continent.

In the barracks of the centre of the base, Fiolan and Herz were sharing a conversation with serious expressions.

“What? We’re already building several buildings right now, but we’re going to raise more on top of this?”

“Yes, Fiolan. This is something I just discussed with Ian about. With the defense tower as the main, we decided to build everything we could that could go around it.”

At Herz’s words, Fiolan wore an incredibly flustered expression.

“No, there’s no big problem in starting construction now, but if we go on like this, are you sure we won’t be able to complete anything and just hit the bottom with our resources? If that’s the case, we really won’t be able to do anything, and just fail...”

The process of building a building in Kailan was incredibly similar to the real one.

For example, just because a building worth 5 million gold was being built, it didn’t mean that 5 million gold just went in straight from the beginning.

If just the basic construction costs were there, then the construction could begin whenever, and for any additional costs, as long as they were covered then, the building was continuously built.

As the Lotus Guild had quite a bit of resources, it was possible to begin building all defense buildings at the same time just like Ian's plan, but because it wasn't to the point that they could continuously pour in resources until it was completed, Fiolan was worried.

At her words, Herz nodded his head as he replied.

"I'm also quite worried. However, after hearing what Ian said, it doesn't seem like it's completely impossible."

Fiolan rejoiced as she asked back.

"Really?"

"Yes, firstly, we have the War Trading Post. Starting around tomorrow, we'll be able to produce desert foot soldiers, and once we start producing soldiers, we will be able to supply a large amount of Specialty Points to the point it will be incomparable."

"Hmm, I feel like it will still be lacking even with that... But for now, since we've never suffered a loss following Ian's words, let's proceed with it."

As there were not many parts that made sense commonsensically amongst Ian's events, Fiolan agreed with it just like that.

And Herz, who saw her do so, smirked as he nodded his head.

“Okay, then let’s start raising the buildings immediately.”

However, Fiolan, of course, but even Herz wasn’t even able to guess the large-scale business(?) that Ian was thinking of with the northern domain as the foundation.

“But where is Ian at this important time?”

At Fiolan’s question, Herz scratched the back of his head as he shook his head.

“I, I’m not too sure. He just told me that he’s going to go make money.”

“...?”

Like that, while the two people were extending the defense buildings of the base diligently with the guild members.

Ian was diligently sitting in front of his computer and pounding his keyboard.

\*

“Loren, have you seen the community?”



Loren was the user currently ranking 1st place in the Summoner level rankings.

She wasn't affiliated with any guild, but she was affiliated with a small-scale 'team' that was made up of just Summoner users.

The name of the team was the 'Golden Summoners', which was incredibly famous in the Summoner community.

The Golden Summoners was a team made up of a total of about twenty Summoner members, and they were people that didn't proceed with PVP or quests, but mainly just PVE or even actively in capturing monsters.

Every single one of them were exceptional in their skills and their ranks were also high, so it was to the point that many Summoners wanted to get into this Golden Summoners team, but there was one person who they had as their idol.

That was an obvious, but this was Ian.

"Millian, what is it?"

At Loren's question, the lad called Millian responded quickly.

Million was also one of the top-rankers in the Summoner rankings that was close to lv 120.

“The community is in complete chaos right now. It’s to the point that the amount of people logging onto the Summoner bulletin board is so high that the server is down.”

At his words, Loren’s already two large eyes widened even more.

“What, an incident must have occurred, I assume?”

Millian nodded his head as he replied.

“An incident it is. Since Ian has uploaded an attack piece onto the Summoner bulletin board.”

“...!”

At those words, Loren stood up abruptly.

“Ian has uploaded an attack piece? Have you read the content?”

“I just read it and came here. I wasn’t able to read all of it. That is, because it was so long. I read a little, but thought that it would be better to read it after letting you know first, Loren... I glanced over it roughly, but the quality alone was the best. As expected of Ian!”

At Millian’s words, Loren smiled brightly as she responded.

“Thank you so much, Millian. I’m going to go out right now and

come back after I read the piece on the community!”

“Go ahea...”

Before Millian even finished responding, Loren seemed to have logged off as she disappeared into thin air.

While looking at her, Millian shook his head.

“As expected of the president. I’m also a fan of Ian, but I can’t keep up with Loren.”

Ian had no idea, but about a month ago, so about the time that Ian’s videos regularly began to be spread on YouCast, Ian’s fan club was created.

And the president of that fan club was none other than Loren.

Loren directly contacted Sojin, the uploader that is in full charge of Ian’s videos and uploads them, and she made the existence of Ian’s fan café known, and was directly receiving the videos as well.

For Sojin, the fact that there was a fandom being created for Ian was an incredible gain for her business-wise, so she willingly supported it, and the number of members in Ian’s fan club was increasing exponentially.

At this current moment, the number of members in the fan club

was close to 150 thousand people.

Truthfully, if the fact that even the fan club of Ilahan, the Guild Master of the DarkRuna Guild who was known as the 1st place ranker in the combined rankings, was not quite at 200 thousand members, this was an incredible number.

“I should also quickly log off and put up the address of the attack piece on the bulletin board of LoveLeeAn. Would someone have already put it up?”

LoveLeeAn was the name of Ian’s fan club.

In English it was LoveLeeAn.

It was the naming sense of Loren.

“Speaking of which, then does that mean the hunting schedule for today is automatically cancelled?”

Millian opened up the party chatroom and checked the number of people logged on.

He felt that the others had already heard the word that Ian’s attack piece had gone up on the community from somewhere and logged off.

As every member in the Golden Summoners were huge fans of

Ian, this was truthfully an obvious sequence of moves.

After uploading an announcement in the chatroom, where there was no one, Million logged off.

## Chapter 158: Base Defense War (2)

---

As expected, the ripple effect of the attack that Ian uploaded onto the community was enormous.

Before even 30 minutes had passed since it was uploaded, it moved to the Best of Best Attacks bulletin board, and even before a quarter of a day passed, it had gone in the top 10 for the most hits in the Best of Best bulletin board.

This was a result that was able to appear because at the same time that Ian uploaded the YouCast video, he tactically promoted it through his guild members, but that wasn't the only reason.

Even if they promoted it well in the beginning and it gathered strength, if the quality of the content that was inside wasn't good, it wouldn't be able to do anything but be buried away.

However, Ian's attack was one that was higher quality than any of the attack pieces related to Summoners that had come up until now.

After he had completely made an attack piece for exceptional readability, he asked Sojin, who was a design graduate, for a favour, and the meticulousness of Ian, who left the final editing up to her, had shone through.

And as for the aftereffect of Ian's attack, posts were coming up at an incredible speed to the point that whenever the Summoner bulletin board was refreshed, the page would change.

- Wow, I just read Ian's attack piece carefully, but there was a reason why that he was showing such unbelievable growth as a Summoner. Seriously, all the information that was inserted was just completely honey-like information...
- Agreed. Especially for Potential, there was a lot of word around it, but through this attack piece now, it seems that will be the end of that dispute. Ian even took screenshots of the ability growth of his own Familiar Ly and took them at different levels before making a numerical formula, so who would criticize that?
- Keu, Ian is truly the hope of Summoner users. It looks like I can now evolve my Ice Golem as well! I was having a mental breakdown because it still wasn't evolving even at lv 70, but for the solution to be Potential...
- Everybody, now is not the time to be here like this, but to hurriedly go to the Lotus Domain. Apparently, the waitlist for booking the training ground is already full. If you're late, who knows, you might actually be pushed to the thousands on the waitlist.
- Huhu, person above. It seems you are slow. The people that are hanging around here probably have already run to the Lotus Domain and left their Familiars there, or have put their name up on the booking waitlist.
- No kidding. To be planning on going to the Lotus Domain only now, my condolences. It seems like it will be your turn around next year...
- No, but is there only a training ground in the Lotus Domain right now? Why is everybody going to the Lotus Domain?
- Ah, the Lotus Domain isn't the only one with a training ground itself. From what I've found, there's one built in every region. However, the other training grounds haven't been active after they were built, so the facility level is incredibly low.

- Is the difference in effectiveness that big depending on the facility level?
- Yes, as big of a difference as the sky and the ground... When I went to the Summoner bulletin board earlier, apparently a wolf with 60 Potential hit 100 Potential within a quarter of a day and evolved. On the other hand, even if you left a Familiar all day at a normal training ground, its Potential only goes up about 5.
- Hul... How does that even make sense?
- It is also because the lower the rank of the Familiar the easier it is to raise its Potential.
- Hul.
- And large-size monsters cannot be trained in low facility level training grounds.
- Ah... So then, my Golem and Mammoth must go to the Lotus Domain no matter what.
- That's right.

To Summoners who had, with great difficulty, caught a Familiar with the 'evolution possible' option and were waiting all day and night for the day that it evolved, the training ground of the Lotus Domain that was at its max facility level was close to a blessing.

Because of that, the price of 100 thousand gold per hour, which was not a small price whatsoever, there was not one voice that complained about it.



However, complaints came from a different place.

- Wow, then doesn't this mean Summoners have to create a character in the Luspel Empire no matter what?
- That's what I'm saying. What are you saying the Kaimon Empire Summoners do then in this case?
- What are you talking about, Kaimon Empire Summoners should give their all into one training ground starting now at least and quickly raise the facility level. Since the Lotus training ground, which is already at the max facility level, won't get any better, so won't you guys catch up eventually?
- No, no, person above, you're missing something. About the time that a max facility level training ground appears in the Kaimon Empire, the Lotus Domain training ground will probably just get rebuilt to a higher-level building instead. It looks like you haven't seen the person that posted about their forge that hit the max level a while ago.
- What do you mean?
- After maxing out the facility level and continuously piling up the facility EXP, it looked like it was possible to remodel to a higher-level building instead. In the case of the forge that came up in the post last time, it was upgraded to a 'Weapon Laboratory'.
- I see!

As the Lotus Guild was a guild affiliated with Luspel, the Domain as well was obviously a domain affiliated with the Luspel Empire.

Because of that, unless the domain was taken, it was impossible for Kaimon Empire users to use the training ground of the Lotus Guild.

That's why, in the case of beginner Summoners that weren't lv 30 yet, they actually just even made new characters instead, and there were also Summoners that spent a fortune and purchased an Empire Changing Item, and changed their nationality instead.

And there was one person that was monitoring these series of situations while wearing a pleased smile.

“Huhu, as expected, the reaction is as good as I thought.”

That was, of course, Ian.

“If this is the case, even if we were to build some defense towers now, the guild's vault won't be lacking, right?”

Ian, who was continuously browsing the bulletin board and the chat windows, lifted his smartphone and called someone.

The standard ringing of the smartphone rang out, and shortly after, the deep voice of a man was heard.

It was Professor Lee Jinook.

“Professor, it seems like it's going well as planned. How is the

situation at the domain?”

- Haha, what do you mean how is it. The number of people on the waitlist right now are filled up to four digits right now.

“And there’s no problems?”

- There is one.

At the words that there was problem, Jinsung’s two eyes slightly grew.

“What kind...?”

- We’re understaffed. The guild members remaining in the northern continent are helping out, but its to the point that it’s nowhere near enough.

At Lee Jinook’s words, Jinsung scratched the back of his head.

This was a part that he hadn’t thought of in advance.

“Professor, I will appoint workers and deploy management as fast as I can. I didn’t think of that part.”

- Oh, would you do that? Then I would be grateful.

And Ian got to the point as to why he called Lee Jinook.

“Ah, Professor, there’s actually a different reason as to why I called you.”

- Sure, tell me. What is it?

“As soon as the reinforcements are there, I was hoping you would go to the Ollibus Domain, Professor.”

- Oh-ho, if it’s the Ollibus Domain, you’re talking about the seaside village, right?

“Yes, that’s right.”

Professor Lee Jinook figured out the intentions of Jinsung’s words immediately.

- Okay, understood. As soon as everything is organized here, I will immediately go to the Ollibus Domain and build a new training ground there.

The Ollibus Domain was the same village that was hidden towards the eastern seaside.

Because they had completely hidden the existence of the external Domain, it was a village that nobody even knew existed besides the

Lotus Guild members, but he wasn't planning on leaving it like that.

‘If the territory of the Ollibus Domain just expands a little more, we'll be able to secure a bigger site than the Lotus Domain, so we should build something as big as a large-scale farm there instead.’

As the demand was overflowing, there was a need to expand the supply quickly.

Ian, who organized his thoughts, slowly opened his mouth.

“Either way, thank you so much for your efforts, Professor. Thanks to you, we were able to get passed a large obstacle.”

At Ian's words, Lee Jinook laughed as he replied.

- Haha, if it's hard work like this, I welcome it anytime. I wonder if it's time for me to retire from being a Professor now.

At Lee Jinook's unexpected joke, Ian wore a flustered expression.

“Sorry?”

However, as he heard his next words, he couldn't help but nod his head right away.

- Why are you so surprised? Even I just exchanged the gold that I obtain as commission from maintaining the training ground into money, it's to the point that I could make 10 times more than my salary as a professor. I'm about 10 percent serious about resigning from my position as a professor right now.

Jinsung, who was momentarily silent, replied with a serious voice.

“Don't do that, Professor. If you're not here, then I have to take a leave of absence...”

• ...

\*

Ian, who had spread out an incredible amount of work, was welcomed warmly by his guild members as if he was practically returning home in glory as he returned to the base.

“Yo, this is really amazing. How were you able to think of such things?”

“No kidding. We seriously won't have any reason to worry about funds for a while.”

Ian, who received each and every welcome that poured out with Herz and Fiolan as the head, entered the barracks of the base and began taking care of the internal activities of the base that had

been put off.

Because Herz usually dealt with everything, the work that Ian needed to do was examine the progress situation and plan for further technical plans.

‘The only real concern now is if the front line gets pushed back again close to our base...’

The day after Ian left.

The battle between the two empires ended with an overwhelming victory for the Kaimon Empire without a doubt.

The distance that Ian worked hard to create had been restored within a day again.

But it wasn't like Ian could leave right now.

This was because, while Ian was gone, the damage received from the Desert Warriors was quite big, so if additional damage came in, it would be a situation that would be impossible to block off without Ian.

On top of that, as it was a situation where they had spent a fortune and began building all defense buildings and production buildings, the defending of the base had to be thought of as the highest priority even over other things.

‘And truthfully, because the Kaimon Empire didn’t have additional support troops either, we were able to win, if even the Desert Warriors or a couple high-ranking guilds came in as support, it would be impossible to win with my strength.’

Ian, who organized his thoughts, opened his mouth towards Herz, who followed him into the barracks.

“Yoohyun, it looks like we’ll have to play defense for a while.”

“Huh? What are you saying all of a sudden again?”

“I expect that within the next couple days from now the empire defense line will be pushed back all the way to our base.”

At Ian’s words, Fiolan, who came in late, wore a flustered expression as she asked.

“Hul, really? I did hear that we were continuously losing... But still, it looked like starting tomorrow the Splendor Guild and the Oaklan Guild would also be entering the war, so wouldn’t it be a little better if that’s the case?”

There was a point in Fiolan’s words.

In the background as to why the Luspel Empire was being pushed back one-sidedly right now was because there was the power of the



Titan Guild and the DarkRuna Guild, who had settled down into the central continent one step quicker and had begun to support the Kaimon Empire troops.

However, the problem was that compared to the Titan or the DarkRuna Guilds, the strength of the top-ranking guilds of the Luspel Empire were, to be honest, substantially lower.

Ian shook his head as he replied.

“Of course, it’s possible that we might not lose so one-sidedly like we are now, but there’s no change in the fact that it will be pushed back. Since, whether it’s Oaklan or Splendor, compared to Titan or DarkRuna, their fighting power is much lower.”

Herz nodded his head as he agreed.

“Jinsung’s right. On top of that, it’s possible for dudes that are as cunning as Samuel Jin to just withdraw instead if they think that they are starting to get pushed back.”

When talking about Samuel Jin, he meant the Guild Master of the Oaklan Guild.

Fiolan asked Ian with a worried expression.

“Then what do you think we should do, Ian?”

And Ian looked back and forth at the two people as he opened his mouth.

“From how I see it, it will take roughly about ten days for the line of defense to be pushed back to here. If they’re fast, it could be about a week, and if it takes longer, it will be two weeks.”

The gazes of all the guild members that were inside the barracks, including Herz and Fiolan as well, were focused on Ian’s mouth.

“Since we’ve expanded our resources quite sufficiently, let’s halt the hunting of all guild members for a week and gather everybody together to build a proper rampart.”

Fiolan asked back before she even realized.

“Sorry?”

“I’m saying let’s scrap up all the guild gold and expand our workforce as much as possible, and if we’re lacking, we’ll even post up a help-wanted ad in the community and build an impenetrable fortress.”

Herz, who understood Ian’s words, wore an interested expression as he opened his mouth.

“Ah, so when you said we’ll have to play defense, is this what you meant?”

Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right. Let’s play defense properly. To the point that we’ll be able to block everything off even if the line of defense is pushed completely back and just our base is isolated in the middle of the enemy camp.”

However, even at this point, Ian had no idea that these words would actually become the truth.

# Chapter 159: Base Defense War (3)

---

- The Guard Tower of the Desert (Lv 1) has been completed.
- Through the exceptional construction abilities of a skilled architect, all combat abilities have increased by 20%.
- The public order of the base has increased by 5.
- From now on, 'Elemental Magic Defense Towers' can be built.
- Do you wish to check the information of the Guard Tower of the Desert (Lv 1)?

Ian, who stood in front of the Guard Tower that was wrapped in a white light and stood tall towards one side of the rampart, read through the messages that popped up along with the completion of the construction as he nodded his head.

“I will check.”

As he did so, information related to the Guard Tower popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

Ring-

- Guard Tower of the Desert

Lv 1 (0/98,500,000)

(The requirements needed to level up have not been met.)

Offensive Power: 6500 (+1300)

Defensive Power: 4500 (+900)

Vitality: 200,000 (+40,000)

Attack Speed: 0.85/Sec (+0.05)

Field of Vision: 2652 m

Inherent Ability

\*Steel Catapult

When attacking, a steel catapult with a 15% chance of ignoring 50% of the opponent's Defensive Power is launched.

The destructive power of the steel catapult is 150% of its basic Offensive Power.

It is the most basic defense building the desert tribes can build on a base.

Although its Attack Speed is on the slower side, if hit, there will be an unavoidably large amount of damage.

“Keuh!”

After reading through the explanation, an exclamation naturally flowed out of Ian’s mouth.

This was because, although it was a normal defense tower that was exceptional in single targeting and couldn’t even have an Inherent Ability, its abilities were tremendous.

‘As expected... Even though it is a basic tower, is it like this because it’s the central continent?’

As the map where the base was built itself was a different class from the northern continent from the beginning, even the basic towers had such incredible combat abilities.

On top of that, thanks to having brought over an exceptional architect NPC who was in charge of almost all of the construction in the northern continent domain, they were even granted additional stats, so it had outrageous stats to be calling it a basic defense tower.

“They’ll be completed in order now, right?”

Ian mumbled as he surveyed the defense towers that were being built along the rampart.

And shortly after, just like he said, they began to be completed in clockwise order.

- The Guard Tower of the Desert (Lv 1) has been completed.
- The Guard Tower of the Desert (Lv 1) has been completed.

Ian wore a pleased expression.

“The money that was poured in wasn’t a waste!”

At the thought that they could now block off the attacks of Desert Warriors even with their eyes closed, laughter continuously flowed from Ian’s mouth.

Fiolan, who stood next to Ian and watched the grand sight of the defense towers being completed with him, asked him.

“Ian, then are you planning on building higher-ranking towers now? Thanks to the training ground, we do have enough funds...”

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“We should. The performance of the basic guard tower is

satisfying, but still, as it is a single target-type and on top of that, its attack speed is slow, if they come in floods, there will definitely be a limit.”

The Elemental Magic Defense Tower, which was the defense tower that was just one step above the basic tower, was a defense tower that could attack using AoE magic.

As they had arranged enough single target-type towers, it was definitely now time to build AoE attack towers.

Ian continued his words.

“And as we build elemental magic towers, let’s extend the rampart more as well. I think that we’ll need at least three layers for the defense wall to be at ease, for me that is.”

At those words, Fiolan’s two eyes slightly rounded.

“Three layers? If you plan on doing that, the resources and the labour force that is required will be tremendous.”

Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right. Since we’re going to build it twice from the outer wall, the volume will also increase more than the pre-existing rampart. However, it is necessary. I have too much of a bad feeling right now.”



“About what?”

“I’m talking about how we don’t know how far the Luspel Empire’s Line of Defense will be pushed back.”

Fiolan scratched the back of her head as she spoke.

“Pfft, still, it probably won’t be pushed back further than the line that our base is on. I think that since other guilds are also building a line of defense on the line that our base is on, if the line of defense is formed around here, we should be able to block them off, no?”

However, Ian was incredibly pessimistic.

“I’m not sure...”

Fiolan opened her mouth again.

“But even if we set aside the resources, we lack manpower. In order to extend the rampart as well, even if we employ all of the manpower we have, I think it will take a couple months.”

Truthfully, Ian was also worried about this part the most.

This was because there was even a limit to pulling over manpower from the outside using money.

However, just then, Herz, who was just silently listening to the two people's conversation, opened his mouth.

“Jinsung, I have a good idea.”

And Fiolan and Ian's gazes turned towards Herz at the same time.

“What kind of idea?”

At Ian's question, Herz grinned as he replied.

“Let's ask your fan club to help out a little.”

“Fan club? What are you talking about?”

Instead of Ian, who wore a puzzled expression as he didn't know the English words, Fiolan agreed enthusiastically as she raised her voice.

“Ah, right. There's that method. If it is them, they may be a little willing to gladly help us.”

“Huhu, as long as we prepare a small reward in return for their work, that is.”

While Herz and Fiolan excitedly mapped out their plans, Ian,

who had absolutely no idea on the existence of the fan club, couldn't do anything else but continue to be puzzled.

“Anyways, Yoohyun, so then are you saying that you can take care of the manpower problem?”

Herz nodded his head energetically.

“Yeah, definitely!”

Ian wore a slightly doubtful expression, but as Herz nodded his head with an expression full of such certainty, he decided to trust him.

“So then, the process of making a blueprint for the fort for perfect defense only remains now.”

This time Herz wore a confused expression as he asked Ian back.

“What blueprint? Do we even need a blueprint for building stacking up the outer wall? We can just stack them.”

Ian shook his head as he replied.

“No, no, I have no intentions of making such a simple rampart. We're going to make it like a fort.”

Fiolan asked Ian with an excited expression.

“Then are you planning on personally drawing the blueprint, Ian?”

Ian wagged his index finger.

“No, no, why would I draw the blueprint?”

“Then?”

“We’re going to bring an expert.”

“An expert?”

“Yes. Professor Lee Jinook has already requested him.”

Herz wore a dumbfounded expression as he asked.

“What are you saying now?”

Ian grinned as he replied.

“The architecture professor at our school is also a Kailan user. Professor Lee Jinook has gone to give him a recruiting offer.”

“ ... ”

“It is VR, but if it was a job where he needed to plan a blueprint for such a large-scale fort like this, he said that he will definitely want to do it, so not to worry.”

“I, I see.”

Herz and Fiolan could only be astonished at Ian’s detail.

\*

The middle of the desert zone towards the east of the central continent.

In the middle of where three giant guild flags were flapping, three men sat in front of the round table of the temporarily-built barracks.

They were each the Guild Masters of the 3 largest guilds in the Luspel Empire, the Splendor Guild and the Oaklan Guild, as well as the Valiant Guild.

And the expressions of the three people were incredibly serious.

“The fighting power of the Titan Guild and the DarkRuna Guild are incredibly stronger than expected. We are somehow still holding up, but the loss towards our guild is also too big. We may

even end up having to give more than 2/3 of the central continent to our opponents if this continues.”

At the words of Samuel Jin, who was the Guild Master of the Oaklan Guild, the Guild Master of the Splendor Guild, Martin, replied.

“But it’s not like we have another choice, no? We need to hold up the front line no matter what. By any chance, we may not know. That is, that we could obtain an artifact that comes close to the Mark of Magellan from the mysterious shop.”

The mysterious shop was a merchant NPC that appeared at a random coordinate once every so often in the central continent.

An item that inclines gambling could be purchased by using up Specialty Points from him, and recently, Martin had obtained a decent item from the mysterious dealer.

Samuel Jin slightly frowned as he replied.

“You were lucky, Martin. Excluding you, I’ve never heard of someone obtaining a good artifact from the mysterious shop.”

“That’s true, hm...”

The Master of the Valiant Guild, Roy Chen, who had just been listening to the two people’s conversation while remaining still, opened his mouth.

“Then how about this method?”

“What kind of method?”

“From what I’ve found out, high-ranking guilds in the top 50s occupied bases at the front lines, which had low competition in comparison, and were building a line of defense. After we intentionally retreat up to where their base is and form a front line, how about we use their defensive wall and their defense towers and proceed with the war in defense-mode?”

At the words of Roy Chen, who had a point, the two remaining people were momentarily submerged in their thoughts.

The silence continued for quite a long time, and the first person to open his mouth was Samuel Jin.

“It is a good idea, but I think even that is dangerous.”

Roy Chen asked back.

“Why’s that?”

“Even if they are guilds ranking in the top 50s, aren’t their fighting power obvious? It’s not like a penny or two goes into building defense towers and a rampart, and the chances that even they temporarily occupied a base at the thought of ditching and retreating if they slip-up are high. They probably won’t even be able to play the role of our line of defense properly either. From

what I've seen, there are guilds that are even close to the outside of top 100, not top 50."

"Hmm..."

As expected, his words did prove a point.

Samuel Jin, who momentarily organized the thoughts inside his head, opened his mouth again.

"In my opinion."

"Go ahead."

"I think that it would be better to sturdily build a line of defense with the mid-back area where the bases of the guilds that are in the top 10-20 have mainly formed and block off opponents there instead."

Martin, who sat there wordlessly, nodded his head as he agreed with Samuel Jin's words.

"My thoughts are the same as Jin's. We won't be able to block off the attack of the empire's military and the giant Kailan guilds with a line of defense that the guilds in the top 100 built."

The more rear of an area it was, where a base could be grown more safely in comparison, guilds that were higher in ranking had



preoccupied, so naturally, the bases of the giant guilds had formed in the back.

At the two people's words, Roy Chen fell into a conflict.

This was because it was an opinion that could look sensible at a glance, but it was also an incredibly selfish thought as well.

‘What to do... If we just let go now instead, most small guilds that have settled down at the front lines will all be annihilated...’

However, as expected, the most important thing was their own profit, and in the end, Roy Chen also nodded his head.

“Let's do that, then. It can't be helped, but it looks like this is the best choice.”

At Roy Chen's consent, Samuel Jin nodded his head as he grinned.

“Okay, then we will take it as everybody here has agreed and starting tomorrow, we will start pulling back guild members that are supporting the front lines.”

Martin nodded his head as he opened his mouth.

“As we may not have time to build a defense base in the back if the line of defense collapses too quickly, let's pull our troops

slowly.”

Roy Chen nodded his head with a slightly leery expression.

“... Let’s do that.”

# Chapter 160: A Dangerous Gamble (1)

---

- Loren: Will we really be able to meet Bbookbbook and Ly?
- Fiolan: Of course. And in addition, you can also meet Ian. On top of that, Ian said that he would give a talisman that he has personally produced to the people that have high contributions.
- Loren: Oh, such a...! If it's a talisman that Ian has personally produced, it's one that can't even be sold because it's not even in the auction house...!

After learning the production skill, Ian had made talismans whenever he had the chance.

And he was putting up all of the talismans with abilities that he was uncertain about using into the auction house and was selling them at a fixed price, but as their popularity was incredible, as soon as the word went out of them being up in the auction house, they sold out immediately.

However, as there were so many talismans that Ian made, the selling of the talismans was completely entrusted to Ian's retainer, Celia, and so, Fiolan contacted Celia and had secured the presents(?) that she would be giving the members of the fan club beforehand.

And this present definitely had an effect.

- Fiolan: Huhu, there are talismans that we have set aside beforehand in our guild. There

are even Bbookbbook design and Ly design talismans, which are new products, that are prepared this time.

- Loren: Re, really? They, they're new products?
- Fiolan: How about it, Loren. If it's like this, the hearts of the LoveLeeAn members will be moved quite a bit, right?
- Loren: Of course! There are probably a ton of members of the fan club that would come running just even at the chance of seeing Ian's face and Bbookbbook's bbook noise, but for a chance to even obtain a new talisman that Ian has personally produced with his own two hands...!
- Fiolan: Alright, as expected, Loren! Thank you! Then, I will just trust in you, president.
- Loren: It looks like I'll have to thank you instead, Fiolan. Once this revolution ends, I will raise your member ranking.
- Fiolan: I'm honoured, president.

There was a reason why Fiolan knew well of the situation of Ian's fan club like this.

This was because she was also a member of LoveLeeAn.

It was a fan café that she joined at first out of curiosity, but now, she was a named fan that was as passionately active as any other.

Fiolan, who achieved her goal, mumbled with a satisfied

expression.

“Huhu, good. As expected, I knew it would work.”

If the members of LoveLeeAn were to swarm over, they would have no reason to worry about the workforce.

Because the majority of the users of the fan café also included high-level users, even if there were low-level users that would have difficulty coming to the central continent, they would be able to receive their help and come over.

“Speaking of which, I need to talk Ian into doing this now...”

However, there was still one more mountain that she needed to get over.

It was the fault of Fiolan, who cast a kite out of excitement.

“Still, it was a method to obtain manpower effectively, so he will probably do it without much complaint, right?”

The problem was exactly the talismans that had Bbookbbook and Ly’s design.

This was because it was an item that didn’t exist in the first place.

‘Was it something I said too spontaneously? It’s not like it’s impossible to make a talisman with Bbookbbook’s design on it, right?’

Fiolan wore a slightly anxious expression, but soon, she shook her head and ran to the barracks that Ian was in with short and quick steps.

\*

“So... You’re saying that I have a fan club, right?”

“How many times are you asking that, Ian? That’s what I’m telling you.”

“And those fan club people are willingly helping us?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

Ian let out a deep sigh.

“It looks like I’ll just have to draw talismans all day from now on.”

While looking at Ian, who became sullen at the thought that he wouldn’t be able to participate in the guild hunting that was scheduled starting from the morning, Fiolan wore a sheepish smile.

“Ha, haha... Since you’ve hunted like crazy for the last couple days, think of it like you’re taking a break...”

Ian turned his head towards Herz, who sat to the right and was snickering as he watched the two people’s conversation.

“Yoohyun.”

“Yeah?”

“How far has the front lines been pushed back now?”

Herz, who pulled out a map from his chest and momentarily checked something, replied slowly.

“Hmm... It’s been pushed back towards the east about 1500 metres compared to when I checked the day before yesterday.”

Ian slightly frowned.

“Ha, it’s getting pushed down faster than I expected. What’s the present condition of nearby Desert Warriors or neutral NPCs? Does it look like there won’t be an attack today?”

There were a lot of neutral NPCs that didn’t have a friendly relationship with either camp across the central continent here and there.

Desert Warriors were also one of those kinds of tribes, but because of the Mark of Magellan, they had turned into a tribe that was friendly to the Kaimon Empire, but even aside from them, there were quite a bit of neutral NPCs that were known, such as the Crow Bandits or the Scorpion Witch Doctors.

They were still in the safe zone from the army of the Kaimon Empire, but as they had no idea when they would even be attacked by neutral tribes, Ian had asked.

“Yeah, there are no neutral NPCs that have been discovered nearby. We’ve already blocked them off once now. And even if an attack was to return, as we’ve built so many defense towers, we can easily block off a decent-sized attack, so don’t worry.”

Realizing Ian’s hidden intention of trying to escape from the swamps of grinding by making some sort of excuse, Fiolan quickly assisted.

“That’s right. We can block them off even without you, Ian, so don’t worry.”

“Ha...”

While looking at Ian, who sighed, Fiolan added to her words.

“Think of it like you’re raising the Proficiency of your production skill for today, and crank up the energy.”



Ian, who momentarily thought of something, opened his mouth again.

“Then, Fiolan.”

“Yes.”

“Please pull out Mishyal from today’s guild hunting.”

At Ian’s out-of-the-blue words, Fiolan asked back with a questioning voice.

“Huh? Why Mishyal? Mishyal’s fire magic is a lot of help when we’re AoE hunting...”

However, Ian absolutely needed Mishyal.

“I need Mishyal in order to make a Bbookbbook design or a Ly design.”

“...?”

“If I designed the symbol, then the Ly design will probably be completed to look like a puppy that is suffering from mange.”

“Ah... Well, if it’s for that reason.”

Fiolan, who then finally remembered that Mishyal was a design major, nodded her head, and Herz, who was next to her, smirked as he said something.

“Then, spend some quality time with Mishyal.”

Ian pulled out the talisman materials from his inventory one by one as he nodded his head weakly.

“Alright.”

\*

After that, the fortification operation of the base of the Lotus Guild proceeded with lightning speed.

The special event(?) that spread through Ian’s fan club passed through and spread quickly in the official community, and even content that Fiolan hadn’t mentioned once were falsely spread.

For example...

- Apparently, the talismans with Bbookbbook’s design is a limited edition that Ian especially created in order to just give to the users that participated in this operation!
- There’s word that users that participated in the rampart building operation will be taken in by the Lotus Guild!

... Things like these.

Either way, tons of crowds began to gather at the site where the Lotus Guild's rampart building took place, and even people that weren't part of Ian's fan club, but were just hunting in the vicinity of the central continent and out of curiosity, they had come looking for the base of the Lotus Guild.

And in the middle of the construction site, Ian was sharing a serious conversation with someone.

"Professor, so, you're saying that we just need to build this part like this method, right?"

"That's right. It's nice that a young one understands instructions well. You need to leave this place open like this so that even if opponents were to enter, you can isolate them easily."

One of the two people was Ian, and the other person was the architecture professor of Korea University who had received Professor Lee Jinook's invitation.

"An expert is truly different, Professor. As long as it just gets completed like this, it looks like we'll be able to block off even a large army of a million."

"Keu-ha-hat, I like you. Did you say you were a VR Department student?"

“That’s correct, professor.”

“What do you think about changing your major into architecture when this project ends? I want to take in a clever and capable person like you as a student, that is.”

Ian wiped his cold sweat away as he replied with a faint voice.

“That, that’s a little...”

As it was an incredibly large-scale construction site that was unparalleled, small problems even occurred here and there, and the plentiful funds of the Lotus Guild began to shrink quickly as well, but while Ian looked at the fortification, he couldn’t hide his satisfaction.

‘The construction speed is faster than I was expecting. It looks like we’ll definitely be able to complete construction before the front lines get pushed down here.’

Ian went up to a hilly section where he could see everything, and looked at the rampart that continued in a long line to the west.

And the corners of his mouth rolled upwards.

‘Huehue, now if we can just put the War Trading Post within the rampart, it will be perfect. If the second outer wall also gets built, I

feel like it will come into our range enough...’

There was a big significance if the War Trading Post came into the base’s internal area.

Firstly, it was that the Lotus Guild could monopolize the advantages of the War Trading Post, and secondly, even if the base was completely surrounded by opponents and they were isolated, the self-supplying and demanding of resources would become possible.

‘Even if we just continued to do defensive wars, our Specialty Points would pile until they overflowed, that is.’

In the central continent, as a reward in all battles, Specialty Points could be obtained.

Even if enemy NPCs or users were faced, the reward grew bigger, so it meant that an endless war would immediately end up as supplying and demanding resources.

‘Occupying a base that was close to the War Trading Post was truly a great move.’

At the time, he selected a base that was close just so it was easy to get to, but he didn’t know that it would be used like this.

While Ian was thinking of this and that as he looked around the construction site, he heard a voice calling him from behind.

“Ian!”

Ian’s gaze reflexively turned so that he was looking back, and Loren, who was on a wyvern’s back, flew quickly to Ian’s side.

“Ah, hello, Loren.”

Loren, who jumped down from the wyvern’s back, took Ian’s outstretched hand as she replied.

“Yes, that’s right! I’m Loren. How did you know about me?”

While looking at her, who was boring holes into him with her sparkling eyes, Ian wore an awkward expression.

“Ha, haha. Of course I remember you, Loren. How could I not know of the 1st place Summoner in the Summoner rankings? I’ve known since long ago, Loren.”

Ian’s words weren’t just a lip service.

He really knew Loren ever since a really long time ago.

There was even a time when he was looking for her.

‘The name of the Summoner that apparently obtained

information about the eggs of Familiars first was Loren.'

Ian's memory was to the point it was unrivaled.

Ever since a long time ago, he had remembered the name that he had heard briefly on top of the boat that crossed the Abysmal Lake.

And at his words that he knew her, Loren's large eyes became even more lively.

"I really didn't know that you knew about me, Ian! Speaking of which, what do you mean I'm the 1st place Summoner in the Summoner rankings. Everybody knows the truth that you are 1st place."

While looking at her, who was glued to his side to the point it was burdensome as she chattered, Ian wore an expression saying as if he had no idea what to do.

"Is, is that so?"

Just then, while he was sharing a momentary conversation with Loren like that and walking,

An incredibly familiar silhouette of a female from afar caught Ian's gaze.

"Park Jinsung, what are you doing here right now...?"

And he didn't know the reason why, but Ian's complexion began to turn white.



## Chapter 161: A Dangerous Gamble (2)

---

Jinsung's rented room where clouds of war hung in the air.

"That... Harin. I'm telling you, it's a misunderstanding."

"What's a misunderstanding?"

"Loren is just a person that I met today for the first time. She's a person we're grateful for as she came saying that she would help us out in our guild's fort extension operation. We were just having a 'conversation', a conversation!"

"I see, so you were having a conversation. It looked like you were having a conversation with her completely stuck to your side. Doesn't it feel good having a pretty girl stuck right by your side?"

"Ah, no, that...!"

"Sniff, sniff, I don't know who Park Jinsung's girlfriend is, but I pity her a ton... Sniff, sniff. I wonder how sad she must be..."

"Euaah."

Truthfully, Harin knew Jinsung better than anybody else.

A game quest would be 20 thousand times more important than a pretty girl to the Jinsung she knew.

Because of that, she already had figured out that there was nothing going on between Loren and Ian even if she didn't hear his excuses.

‘Still, isn't it a disgrace? I need to catch onto his weak point at times like this, so that when I say let's go out the next time, he'll follow without much remark.’

Although she was a little apologetic, she rationalized it by saying it couldn't be helped in order to advance in her relationship with Jinsung as Harin continued to act with a sullen expression.

“Sniff, sniff, I'm so sad...”

As she did so, Jinsung began to be restless.

“Why are you like that, Harin. I'm telling you, it's seriously nothing like that.”

“What do you mean it's nothing, sniff, sniff. You've never even told me once that you like me, and there was a reason for it.”

Harin sneakily induced the words that she wanted to hear.

However, Jinsung wasn't a different relationship eunuch.

‘Is Harin sulking at me because she wasn't able to raise her

cooking proficiency after coming to the central continent?’

Jinsung, who interpreted it in a creative way to the point it was surprising, carefully opened his mouth.

“Euh, I’ve been so busy lately, sorry. You’ve been really bored lately, right? I will make you a kitchen facility in the central continent base as well. Cheer up, hmm?”

Harin was so stunned that her body staggered for a moment.

“What...?”

Jinsung continued his words.

“Next time when I go hunting, I’ll gather a lot of cooking ingredients as well. There will probably be a lot of rare cooking ingredients that you haven’t used yet in the central continent as well.”

“...”

Harin barely settled her seething anger as she shut her eyes tightly.

‘Ha, how should I deal with this idiot?’

On the other hand, as Harin calmed down, Jinsung wore a satisfied expression as he thought to himself.

‘As expected, that’s why she was sad! Harin also knows that I was forever alone, so there’s no way she would have been sulky over a girl!’

Shortly after, Harin, who narrowly calmed her anger, opened her mouth again.

“You, are you sure you like me?”

It was a question that was at least ten times more profound and difficult than any decent philosophical subject.

The gaze of Jinsung, who thought that Harin’s anger had subsided, shook.

Jinsung replied with a calm voice.

“Of, of course! Do you know how much I like you?”

Harin sighed deeply as she continued her words again.

“Really?”

“I’m telling you, it’s the truth.”

“Then, prove it.”

“Uh, how?”

Harin closed her eyes as she lifted one hand and pointed to her cheek.

“Try to kiss... Here once.”

Jinsung, who was taken aback, asked back reflexively.

“What?”

“Hurry up and do it. Then I’ll let you go this time.”

Jinsung was flustered at the unexpected development of the situation, but Harin was being sincere.

Harin urged Jinsung, who hesitated.

“What are you doing, are you not going to do it? Then were the words that you liked me a lie?”

“Ah, no! I’ll do it, I’m going to do it!”

Jinsung abruptly stood up and went next to Harin before sitting down.

And he slightly closed his two eyes as he touched his face towards Harin's cheek.

Even for Jinsung, there was no way that he would dislike pressing his lips against Harin's cheek.

However, as he was not prepared, the problem was that his heart was pounding.

‘Get a hold of yourself, Jinsung!’

However, shortly after.

Peck-!

As if Jinsung was hit by lightning, he felt his whole body freeze up.

This was because his lips had met with Harin's lips, not her cheek.

“...!”

However, he didn't want to separate from those lips, and before

he even realized, Jinsung lifted his two arms and slightly wrapped them around Harin's back.

As he did so, he felt Harin's body slightly shiver.

After a while like that, as if time had stopped, the lips of the two people that met lightly, didn't know how to come apart.

\*

As the fighting power of the top 3 guilds that could be considered the representative giant guilds affiliated with the Luspel Empire was pulled from the front lines, the front line of defense that was already being pushed back as it was began to move towards the east at an even faster pace.

As the front line of defense began to be pushed down faster than expected, the Lotus Guild, who needed to buy as much time as they could until the fort was completed, also helped out the front lines with their remaining fighting power, but it was inadequate.

Ian also entered the war twice, but even if he was constantly on the move, just like the last time, they couldn't win.

'If it continues like this it will really be a close call...'

Fiolan approached next to Ian, who was perched on the castle with a troubled expression.

“What are you thinking about, Ian?”

Ian sighed shortly as he replied.

“Well, I was just thinking about what we could do to buy even a little bit of time.”

“I see...”

Ian stood up from his spot as he opened his mouth again.

“Fiolan, how did the thing you went for turn out? Have you received some cooperation?”

At Ian’s question, Fiolan shook her head weakly.

“No matter how much I persuade them, they won’t even budge.”

“What did they say?”

Fiolan scratched the back of her head as she replied.

“Hmm... They just keep playing innocent. That they are doing the best they can from their guild as well, but they needed manpower in the back, so they just pulled the guild members that were in the front lines, that is.”



Ian's brows furrowed.

“Hmm, they've really brazened themselves. Even just from looking, it's a move to ditch the front lines and fall back...”

“Exactly. That's why I also said that if they buy us a little bit more time, we would be able to block the advanced base with our base and to help us out, but there was no use.”

At Fiolan's words, Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“Probably. Since they didn't want the front base to form at the front lines from the beginning.”

Fiolan asked back with a quizzical expression.

“Why's that?”

“If the front line was formed at the front where awkward-sized guilds like ours are mainly concentrated, for them, they wouldn't be able to help but become envious. Since the more they distinguish themselves during battle, the greater the amount of rewards, including Specialty Points, could be earned.”

“No, are we the only ones fighting? Don't they just also have to station their main-force units here?”

Ian shook his head as he began to explain again.

“Of course, that’s true, but guilds who have bases at the front lines could also use their defense towers to attack the opponents.”

“I see!”

“You probably know since you’ve seen the defense towers that have been built on our base, but their power is seriously tremendous.”

“Since with even just the most basic defense tower, it has the same power as two or more decent top level-ranking users. If the fort is properly completed, and the front lines continue to form around our base, then we will probably gain an incredible advantage.”

Fiolan nodded her head as she replied.

“It would really turn out like that. On top of that, when there is no battle, it would also create a profit while the participating NPCs and users stay here.”

“That’s right. Since if the users use the shops or auction house on our base, that will return as tax shortly after.”

Fiolan looked at Ian with a gaze full of admiration as she opened her mouth.

“Wow, then, Ian, have you thought this far ever since we occupied this base that others were reluctant about?”

At that question, Ian smirked as he shook his head.

“It’s not like that. At first, I was just after a niche market.”

“Pfft, aren’t you being too humble?”

“It’s not being humble, I’m saying the truth. How could I have known beforehand that the defense towers and the soldiers that could be produced in the central continent base would be this strong? We just somehow ended up getting lucky.”

“That is true.”

Ian continued his words.

“And truthfully, if it wasn’t for the Holy Grail, we wouldn’t have even been able to proceed with such a large-scale construction right now. This much was only possible since the Holy Grail makes the development speed of the base two times faster.”

Ian turned his head and while studying the fort that didn’t have much left until completion, he was submerged in his thoughts.

‘Everything really happened perfectly. Between Holdream’s Holy

Grail and the War Trading Post, if we didn't have even one of the two, we wouldn't have been able to make such plans.'

Fiolan asked Ian, who was submerged in his thoughts, with a worried voice.

"Still, it looks like we won't be able to relax. If the Luspel Empire Army and the other smaller guilds somehow endured, then the front line could form with our base as the starting point, but if that doesn't happen, we would fail, right?"

At Fiolan's words, Ian cut her off and replied.

"The front line will continue to push towards the east."

"Sorry?"

"We will probably become isolated."

While the giant guilds conspired and pulled back their fighting power, no matter how much the smaller guilds and the normal users tried, the front lines wouldn't be able to help but be continuously pushed towards the east.

'If that's the case, our base will remain alone in the middle of the enemy camp.'

Ian also didn't believe it at first, but now, he was almost certain that it would happen.

He was even more sure after having personally participated in the battle a couple days ago.

If that was the case, the key point was how long the fort that they poured all their resources into making could last from a concentrated attack.

‘I wonder how long it will be able to last?’

He had no idea how long it would last in the middle of Kaimon Empire territory, but Ian was planning on trying as hard as he could.

‘Two months? No, even if we just last one month, we’ll be able to get our money’s worth for sure.’

Even if they blocked off the Kaimon Empire Army that surged from every direction once, they would be able to obtain an enormous reward.

It would be difficult for sure, but the more they endured, it was definite that the Lotus Guild would grow exponentially.

Fiolan opened her mouth again.

“Then, Ian, did you build a fort with the idea of lasting in the middle of the enemy camp?”

Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right, Fiolan.”

Fiolan shook her head.

“Ha, I knew that you were reckless, Ian, but this is really the greatest one of all the things you’ve ever done.”

Ian laughed as he replied.

“I also acknowledge that.”

Fiolan also laughed.

“No, aren’t you being too bright for such a serious situation?”

“Don’t worry, Fiolan. Since this is still a gamble with quite a good chance of succeeding.”

Ian, who momentarily paused to take a breath, slowly opened his mouth again.

“At the least, we’ll get our money’s worth, so just trust me.”

\*

Three days from then, in the base of operations of the Kaimon Empire.

Officers of the empire sitting on either side with knights lined up behind them were having an operation meeting with serious expressions.

However, inside this operation meeting filled with a total of about thirty people, there were just five users.

They were DarkRuna Guild's Guild Master Ilahan, and Titan Guild's Guild Master Shyakran.

And three ranking users that individually entered the Kaimon Empire knights and succeeded in getting promoted to a high-ranking knight.

Ilahan and Shyakran weren't affiliated with the empire knights, but as they were the only users with the high aristocrat title of Marquis, they were allowed to be there.

The commander, who sat at the upper seat in the middle, slowly opened his mouth.

"Owing to you gentlemen's courage, our Kaimon Empire has defeated the weak army of Luspel and consecutively won."

Taking a moment to breathe, after looking around the whole assembly, he continued his words.

“The result of that is today! We were able to put the central desert area in its entirety into our hands.”

The central continent was mostly barren land that had gone through desertification.

However, even amongst that, they meant the central desert area that was the absolute core of the continent, which was a bleak area where not even one base existed, and in this place up until now, both empires had a keen, tight match.

In other words, it meant that the Kaimon Empire army had arrived up to right around the corner of the Lotus base, which was nestled in the front lines.



## Chapter 162: A Dangerous Gamble (3)

---

The words of the commander continued.

“It’s predicted that the resistance of our opponents will most likely be more violent than ever before, carelessness is forbidden.”

Standing up from his spot, he turned his gaze toward Ilahan.

“Marquis Ilahan, come up here and give us an analysis on the opponents that our army will have to face.”

Using the Mark of Magellan, Ilahan consistently made contributions, and because he did that, he was able to obtain the trust of the commander.

Ilahan, who wore a satisfied smile as he stood up, went up to the front and while pointing to the map, he began to explain.

“This is the area that the main force of the Luspel Army is stationed. It’s exactly the geography where we can meet if we move forward just 1 kilometre.”

The gazes of the whole assembly were fixated on the map.

“However, as the geography is east high west low, if we were to fight here, we would have to fight unfairly where we would be forced to have to look up to our opponents.”

The commander nodded his head in agreement.

“It definitely would end up like that.”

Ilahan’s words continued.

“On top of that, as the entrance is not that wide, it is also not a suitable geography for a lot of troops to enter at once.”

“That is also correct.”

Ilahan, who approached the map one step closer, went back and forth putting red ink on the parts above and below the section he was pointing to with his finger.

“That’s why we must divide our military troops and enter through these three places.”

One officer, who was listening to Ilahan’s words, opened his mouth with a puzzled expression.

“Hmm... If we do that, wouldn’t we lack too much with military troops compared to the Luspel Empire military that is stationed in the middle area?”

Ilahan nodded his head.

“That would definitely be the case. That’s why, in the middle area, we’re just going to ‘act’ like we’re fighting.”

“What do you mean act like we’re fighting...?”

“In the middle area, we will attract the gaze of the main force of Luspel with the least number of troops, while sending the main force troops from the top and bottom and penetrate through the line of defense at once.”

The commander, who silently listened to his explanation, slowly opened his mouth.

“It’s a good tactic. However, in the area that you marked, bases of guilds affiliated with the Luspel Empire are blocking it off at every strategic point. The tactic that you talked about will only be possible if those bases are first occupied, so do you have a plan?”

As if he was waiting, Ilahan nodded his head as he replied.

“Of course. Our DarkRuna Guild and Marquis Shyakran’s Titan Guild will take responsibility and attack the bases.”

This was a part that he had already talked about with Shyakran beforehand.

The two giant guilds had peacefully agreed to divide the awkward

bases of the Luspel guilds, which definitely wouldn't even have proper Defensive Power.

The commander turned his gaze towards Shyakran as he asked.

“Marquis Shyakran, is it alright for me to believe in you?”

Shyakran slightly bowed his head as he showed his manners.

“That's right, Commander. We will not disappoint you.”

After the strategy meeting was done, Shyakran and Ilahan, who were in charge of attacking the guild bases of Luspel Empire, were slowly walking around the camping ground as they shared a conversation.

It was in order to organize how the two guilds will share the troops and divide everything up.

“So, the DarkRuna Guild will attack the north... Is that what you're saying?”

At Shyakran's words, Ilahan nodded his head as he replied.

“That's right. We will take care of the north area.”

“Hmm...”

With a suspicious look, Shyakran slightly stared at Ilahan.

‘Exactly what does he have up his sleeve? The access way to the north will be much harder than attacking the south...’

The Lotus Guild’s base blocked off the access way to the north.

It was a situation where the word that the Lotus Guild had invested a large sum of money and was building an impenetrable defense was already widespread, and because of that, Shyakran couldn’t help but be puzzled.

‘Of course, compared to other bases, there are a lot more buildings already built, so it would be nice to obtain the Lotus base, which has already been established, but I don’t think it’s enough to endure the risk...’

It was definite that Ilahan also collected information beforehand and had already investigated the Defensive Powers of the front-line bases of the Luspel Empire.

‘Of course, no matter how many defense towers the Lotus Domain has built, it won’t be to the point it will be impenetrable, but the damage will probably be quite big, so there’s definitely something that I don’t know...’

For now, Shyakran hid his thoughts and nodded his head.

Since, on the surface, it was more beneficial to take care of the access way to the south, which was obviously easier to attack.

The Defensive Power of the bases that blocked the south access way were so weak to the point it could be considered ownerless compared to the base of the Lotus Guild.

“Well, if the DarkRuna Guild will take care of the more difficult attack route, we would be grateful.”

Ilahan wore an indulgent smile as he opened his mouth.

“Haha, thanks to the Mark of Magellan, we gathered quite a lot of troops, and wouldn't it be the honour of the number 1 ranking guild to sacrifice once at a time like this? Huhu.”

Shyakran felt his mood turn unpleasant, but he wasn't a naïve-enough person to show that.

“Then, good luck to you, Ilahan. Penetrate the northern access way safely and let's see each other three days later.”

Ilahan nodded his head.

“Yes, I also pray for good fortune in battle for the Titan Guild.”

Shyakran smirked as he turned his footsteps.

“As the access way to the south is just going to be filled with scarecrows... Anyways, thank you.”

As Shyakrans form slowly grew more distant as he walked towards the camp of the Titan Guild, Ilahan, who momentarily watched his backside, mumbled with a low voice.

“Huhu, he’s probably wondering why I’m insistent on the access way to the north.”

Truthfully, Ilahan was also planning on a bloodless victory with the access way to the south at first.

However, through a spy that he had implanted in the Luspel Empire camp, he had heard incredible information.

‘I had no idea that a scrappy guild that’s not even in the top 100 of the guild rankings would be monopolizing the War Trading Post.’

It was the information that the War Trading Post was located in the inside of the base of the Lotus Guild.

Despite having obtained the Mark of Magellan, as the Titan Guild was practically monopolizing the Tower of War, the fact that he wasn’t able to create a huge gap between them was constantly a frustration of his.

In a situation like this, the opportunity to obtain the War

Trading Post, which was a neutral facility that came close to the Tower of War, was worth more than a thousand pieces of gold.

‘Huhu, the Lotus Guild, was it? Foolish people. No matter if they build a rampart and defense towers, a guild in the top 100 will not be able to overcome the difference in fighting power, tsk.’

Because the building of the Lotus Guild’s defensive wall had become an issue even in the community quite a number of times, Ilahan also knew of it.

However, to Ilahan, it just looked like cute tricks.

The corners of Ilahan’s mouth rolled upwards as he mumbled.

“It looks like I’ll have to properly show them the difference in our strength.”

\*

Ring-!

- All requirements needed to promote the rank of the Lotus Village to ‘Domain’ have been satisfied.
- Because the name ‘Lotus Domain’ already exists, a new name of the Domain must be set up.



- Based on the name of the place, the name 'Pyro Domain' can be assigned. Will you assign it/

Ian nodded his head.

“We'll do 'Pyro'.”

- The name of the base has been set to 'Pyro'.
- In order to promote the base rank to 'Domain', a lord with an aristocrat title is required.

Because it was a Village rank up until now, a normal user had been taking charge of the village leader position temporarily, but now, a lord that would take care of the domestic affairs of the domain continuously needed to be appointed.

Ian turned his head towards Herz and Fiolan, who stood next to him, as he asked.

“Herz, do you want to be the lord here?”

After entering the central continent, because they consistently received empire quests from the empire army, it was a state where several executive members, including Herz, have received at least Baron title.

“Or do you want to do it, Fiolan?”

As Ian looked back and forth at the two people while asking, after contemplating for a moment, Herz opened his mouth.

“Hmm... Wouldn’t it be better if Fiolan did it? It’s already a pain in the neck for me to take care of guild business.”

The fact that the number of things that the Guild Master had to do the bigger the size of the guild got couldn’t be helped.

Because of that, Herz didn’t want to be greedy for the lord position as well.

“Then Fiolan?”

At Ian’s question, Fiolan slowly nodded her head as she replied.

“Sure, I’ll do it. Since I’m definitely freer than Herz.”

As soon as he heard the reply, Ian nominated Fiolan as the lord of Pyro Domain.

Ring-!

- The base rank of Pyro Village has elevated to ‘Domain’.
- User ‘Fiolan’ has been nominated as the Lord of Pyro Domain.

- As three bases that are 'Domain' rank have been retained, the Guild Fame has increased by 50 thousand.
- One of the requirements to promote to a 'Great Domain' has been satisfied.

Fiolan read through the messages that popped up one after another as she smirked.

“Still, I feel good since I have an important title. Although I don’t know how long I’ll have it.”

She said that as it would become useless if they lost the Domain to the Kaimon Empire Army.

And Ian also knew what the meaning of her words were, so he burst out into laughter.

“Don’t be so negative about it, Fiolan. You should be thinking about protecting it until the end.”

“That’s true, but since the troops on that side are so incredible, I was just saying it.”

Along with Fiolan’s words, the three people turned towards the flag of Kaimon Empire that could be seen from far away.

Even by looking at the army of the Kaimon Empire, who were

encamped like a colony of ants, from far away, their dignity was incredible.

Herz opened his mouth.

“But, why are they just staying still all day there? If they raided us like that during the evening without rest, the battle would have begun without us even having completed constructing the fortress.”

Like Herz’s words, thanks to the Kaimon Empire Army not having moved for a day, the fortress of the Pyro Domain was able to complete construction safely.

Ian replied.

“Well, either way, it’s better for us.”

However, just then, in the eyes of Ian, who was studying the camp of the Kaimon Empire Army from far away, a large-scale movement began to be captured.

Ian abruptly stood up as he opened his mouth.

“Oh, it looks like they’re moving now?”

At the place that Ian was pointing at with his finger, sandy clouds of dust were rising up. As it was too far, he couldn’t see exactly, but

it looked like the first groups have begun to move.

Fiolan, who checked that, quickly ran to the telescope that was installed on the rampart and shoved her eye against it.

“You’re right, they began to move.”

Herz asked.

“Fiolan, by any chance, do you see their flag?”

“Hmm, one second.”

Fiolan, who moved the telescope here and there as she looked for the flag, slowly opened her mouth after fixating the telescope on one location.

“Hmm... I think that’s the DarkRuna Guild flag.”

This time, Ian opened his mouth with a quizzical expression.

“Huh? Are you sure it’s not the flag of the Kaimon Empire Army’s commander?”

Fiolan nodded her head.

“Yes, it’s definitely the flag of the DarkRuna Guild. They’re

coming towards our Domain.”

Ian wore a strange expression.

‘Why’s that? I did think that rather than attacking the geography where the Luspel Empire Army is defending, they would attack easy guild bases, but I had no idea that the guilds, not the empire army, would move first.’

However, because it would be easier to face the fighting power of a guild rather than the empire army, Ian let out a sigh of relief.

‘I can only interpret it as the DarkRuna Guild wants our Domain... Well, it doesn’t matter.’

While looking at Herz, Ian opened his mouth.

“Yoohyun, please contact everybody to get ready for battle, and call back the guild members that are logged off right now. It probably won’t take them over thirty minutes for them to reach here from there.”

“Okay, understood.”

And he turned his head towards Fiolan.

“Fiolan, please let the outside users that are still inside the Domain that a battle will begin soon.”

Because not a lot of time had passed since the construction of the fortress was finished, most of the users that had participated in the construction were still within the Domain.

In order to not bring such thankful people harm, there was a need to give them a pledge to escape the Domain beforehand.

“Got it. But, by any chance, if there are users that want to participate, what should I do?”

“Hmm...”

Ian, who hadn't thought that far, was slightly taken aback, but he opened his mouth immediately again.

“I don't know how many users there would be that would want to enter this dangerous battle, but we'll employ them as mercenaries.”

“Alright!”

Fiolan, who responded shortly, immediately turned her footsteps and disappeared, and Ian, who was left alone on top of the watchtower, closed his eyes and became submerged in his thoughts.

‘Our opponent is the number 1 guild in the Korean server

rankings... It won't be easy.'

It would be nice if there could be 'rules' like in territory wars of the northern continent where there was a limit on the number of people or could create some other variable, but there was no such thing in the central continent.

Everything was divided only on the outcome of the battle.

However, had about ten minutes had passed like that? A message popped up in front of the eyes of Ian, who was racking his brains for an effective battle.

- Hello, Ian. I am Lee Hansung, the leader of the YTBC broadcasting station's planning team. I am contacting you like this after hearing the information that there would be a siege warfare between the DarkRuna Guild and the Lotus Guild soon.

Ian, who saw the message, wore a flustered expression.

'No, why are they so fast? How did a broadcasting station find out already?'

Ian had no idea, but amongst the users that participated in the fortress extension construction, there were users affiliated with the YTBC broadcasting station.

'Well, since there's nothing bad about being broadcasted.'



Ian instantly replied.

- Yes, Team Leader Lee Hansung, continue.
- You've probably already guessed, but us YTBC broadcasting station would like to create an exclusive video on this siege warfare. From camp of the Lotus Guild, that is.
- Rather than a guild in the top 100 like us, wouldn't it be more beneficial to be filming it from the DarkRuna camp, who has a higher chance of winning? Why did you contact me?
- I'm not sure. The DarkRuna Guild is for sure superior in fighting power, but as much as it is a siege warfare, there could be many variables, and above all, we wanted to create a video on the battle where the attacks of the opponents would be blocked from the defensive fortress of the Lotus Guild, which was a big issue this time.
- Hmm... I see.

Lee Hansung immediately sent a message again.

- We will deposit the incentives that tag along with advertisement earnings and other additional earnings to the guild bank account of the Lotus Guild. You probably know, but because our YTBC channel has an overwhelming share compared to other game broadcasting channels, it will also be a big help to the Lotus Guild.

Ian nodded his head as he thought.

‘That will definitely be the case.’

Ian, who organized his thoughts, opened his mouth again.

- Well, understood. We will do that. However, there is a condition.
- A condition?
- Yes, I will allow an exclusive broadcasting, but for my personal battle video, I will manage that separately and distribute it.
- Hmm...

It seemed for a moment he was either thinking about it or he was receiving approval from the head office as a message didn't return, and Ian slowly walked down from the watchtower to prepare for battle.

And had about 5 minutes passed?

A message came again from YTBC's side.

- Sounds good, Ian. We will make a contract accordingly.

With a satisfied expression, Ian sent a message.

- Yes, then I hope that you will make a good video, Team Leader.

- Of course. For the contract, I will save the contents that I sent back and forth with you, Ian, and prepare it.

# Chapter 163: Impenetrable Fortress (1)

---

The military strength of the DarkRuna Guild was too incredible to believe that it was a military strength that was mobilized from one guild.

“Sollin, advance the soldiers that are comparatively lower in level to the front. Since the defense towers will most likely all be single-target attackers, we’ll press them with our numbers.”

“Yes, Master!”

The number of troops of the DarkRuna Guild that were advancing towards the Pyro Domain was a tremendous number close to 5 thousand.

The reason that was possible was fundamentally thanks to the Mark of Magellan.

Thanks to the advantage that they could use the troops of the Desert Warriors, which were neutral NPCs, however they wished, the DarkRuna Guild was able to put a lot more bases into their hands in comparison to other guilds, and from those bases, they continuously produced soldiers.

Amongst the total troops of 5 thousand, the number of users was a little less than 1 thousand, so the troops were mainly composed of soldiers.

‘Huhu, at this point, it must be blood curdling for them while they look at the troops that are advancing in like a black wave.’

Even if they were the lowest-ranking soldiers, because fundamentally, it was the central continent, it was at the point that the average level range was over 130.

It was a standard where they absolutely could not look down just because they were soldiers.

“We’re within the range. Be careful of the projectile that will come flying from the defense towers!”

Along with Ilahan’s shout, the commanders of each unit passed on the command.

And as if they were waiting for those words, from the top of the tall rampart, projectiles poured down like rain.

Swaaeek-!

“Avoid it!”

The cries of the horses could be heard from here and there.

However, despite having given them a warning beforehand, about 70% of the pouring projectiles perfectly hit the targets they were aiming at.

Bang-!

And in front of the eyes of each commander, system messages that the soldiers under their commandment died popped up one after another.

- The Vitality of the 'Desert Warrior' has been reduced by 67,859 after being hit by the attack of the 'Guard Tower of the Desert'.
- As all of the Vitality of the 'Desert Warrior' has been exhausted, it has died.
- As all of the Vitality of the 'Desert Warrior' has been exhausted, it has died.

From one hit, the soldiers oxidized into a grey light and disappeared.

On top of that, even a couple users who commanded the soldiers from the front got hit by the projectiles and died.

Ilahan's eyes widened.

'What, what the hell? Why are there so many defense towers? There's over a dozen of them!'

The number of 'Guard Towers of the Desert' that were built on the Pyro Domain was a total of 100.

The DarkRuna Guild, who expected a dozen or so defense towers at most, couldn't help but be taken aback.

This was because from just one attack, they had lost about seventy soldiers.

Ilahan pulled together his flustered heart and let out a command again.

“The reloading time for the guard towers is long! Get close to the rampart quickly! If you get close enough, you can avoid the attacks of the tower!”

Just like Ilahan's words, if you got close enough to the point you were right in front of the rampart instead, because the angle didn't come out, you could avoid the attack range of the guard towers.

However, the DarkRuna Guild had to come face with another unexpected variable.

Ooh-deuk- Ooh-deu-deuk-!

“What the hell? What is this noise?”  
“The ground is splitting?”

“Fall back! You can't come over to this side, ack!”

The identity of that was the trench that they had dug out right in front of the rampart.

Hundreds of soldiers had fallen into the trench that they had covered with illusion magic and plausible camouflage.

“Come out quickly! Magicians with weight-lightening magic, cast those skills!”

However, that wasn’t the end.

Keu-keu-keung-!

The stone gate that was installed in line with the outer wall of the rampart moved as the form of a round gun port appeared.

“What the hell is that now? Avoid it!”

And a total of about ten gun ports let out a fire simultaneously.

Hwa-reu-reuk-!

That was the defense tower that was one rank higher than the guard towers, the Fire-Element Magic Tower.

“Euaaak-!”



The Offensive Power alone of the elemental magic tower was weaker than the guard towers, but opponents in a wide range could be attacked at once. On top of that, there was no way that the soldiers of the DarkRuna Guild, who had fallen into the trench, could escape.

Ilahan, who watched that scene while standing a little back, was to the point he was dumbfounded.

‘What the hell is that? Was there such a tower? There wasn’t anything like that amongst the defense towers that were possible to build.’

The DarkRuna Guild had secured close to ten bases, but proper development hadn’t been established in most of them.

It was the fault that he didn’t have enough energy to pay attention to all of them.

There were one or two bases that he had even developed to a Domain-rank, but its nature was completely different from the Pyro Domain.

While the Pyro Domain had mainly developed facilities that were required for base defense, the Domains of the DarkRuna Guild, who didn’t need to worry about base defense, had mainly developed facilities that would increase their supply and demand.

‘Did I look down on them too much just because they’re a guild

only in the top 100? But then, I can't even take back the troops that I have right now...'

They had gotten too deep in to turn the heads of their horses around.

If he took back the troops he had right now and go through with retreating, their loss would be even bigger.

Ilahan shouted.

"Just get over the rampart! Do whatever it takes to enter inside and open the stone gate!"

The magicians even used mobilized their flying magic and attempted to enter through the air, but as soon as they floated in the air, they became hedgehogs and dropped to the ground.

It wasn't that they were attacked by the catapults of the guard towers, but rather, the archer soldiers that were within the fortress had shot out arrows.

However, 5 thousand was truly an enormous number of troops, and eventually, the soldiers of the DarkRuna Guild pressed them ignorantly with their numbers and one by one, they began to get over the rampart.

It could indeed be considered a truly ignorant, human-wave strategy.

While looking at that, Ilahan let out a shout of delight internally.

‘Alright. If we can just enter inside first...!’

Ilahan also moved quickly himself and ran towards the rampart.

As expected of the title ‘Magic Swordsman’, Ilahan granted all body reinforcing skills, including a weight-lightening skill, onto him, and with wind-like speed, he began to climb up the rampart.

Clang-Cla-clang-!

There were a couple soldiers that were standing guard at the top of the rampart, but there was no way that they would be a match to Ilahan, who was within the proximity of lv 150.

Claang-!

Ice-type sword energy that shot out from Ilahan’s sword hit the lower part of the rampart hard, and using that rebound, Ilahan jumped above the rampart lightly landed above it.

“Open the fortress gate! Everybody, enter inside...!”

However, Ilahan, who shouted with a resounding voice with his sword held high, couldn’t help but become speechless in the next moment.

‘What the hell is that? Why is there another rampart in the inside?’

Within the inside of the rampart that he barely made over after losing almost a thousand soldiers, another even higher and stronger-looking rampart had appeared.

Ilahan let out a swear word without even realizing.

“Wow, motherfucker, they really play dirty!”

While he had lost an incredible number of troops of over a thousand, he hadn’t even seen a glimpse of one user of the Lotus Guild yet.

Ilahan, who was infuriated to the max, gritted his teeth.

“Alright, while it’s like this anyways, let’s get to the end of this and see who wins!”

In his original plan, there was nothing about consuming up this many troops, nor was that supposed to be allowed.

However, Ilahan, who developed an unyielding spirit along with his unknown rage, gritted his teeth as he jumped down to the inner side of the rampart.

\*

- Everyone, now is not the time to be playing around in the chat room!
- Why's that? Is there something wrong?
- Yeah, no kidding. I even completely finished the quest that I was doing right now and had nothing to do, so that's why I came to the chat room to pass some time... But did something happen?
- Ha, how frustrating, these people. Go and quickly turn on YTBC right now. The DarkRuna Guild's siege warfare has begun.
- Ah, the siege warfare? Well that, it was about time for them to attack bases, since the Kaimon Empire Army had completely entered towards the east. I also heard that they were going to broadcast that, but I thought it would be no fun, so I'm not watching it. From what I've seen, the defending camp was a scrappy guild that is even after the top 100. It's obvious that they're probably suffering to the point of disappearance by the DarkRuna guys.
- Person above, let's get this straight. How is a guild in the top 100 a scrappy guild? When the top 100 means they're in the top 0.1%.
- I'm just saying. Compared to the number 1 guild, isn't it correct to be calling them scrappy?
- That's true, but...
- Ha, these people, I'm telling you, forget the small talk and just turn on the channel first. That guild in the top 100 is fighting the DarkRuna Guild in a close match. The siege

warfare is no joke right now. If you don't watch this right now, you'll regret it.

- Huh? Really? How does that make sense?
- The name of that guild in the top 100 is the Lotus Guild, and they made their base almost into some sort of fort practically. Seriously, there's no other universal defense.
- Hul, the defending guild was the Lotus Guild?
- What's wrong? Do you know of the Lotus Guild?
- It's the guild of Ian, the number 1 ranking Summoner. Ah, if I knew that was the case, I would have watched the broadcast from the beginning! I'm off to go watch it, then.
- Ooh, I should go and watch it. Would it have a similar feel to a defense game?

Of course, as word spread not only through the official community, but by several other routes as well, the ratings of the YTBC channel began to continuously go up.

Firstly, because of the title that it was the siege warfare of the number 1 guild, the DarkRuna Guild, there was a basic interest leaning towards them, and as the information that the Lotus Guild that they were facing was the guild of Ian also spread, that interest amplified even more.

It was to the point that users that wanted to watch the battles of Ian, who had recently gained a lot of popularity, even halted the quests they were doing and logged off the game in order to watch

the broadcast.

And Reporters Hines and Lucia, who could be considered the faces of the broadcasting station for the YTBC channel, were broadcasting the siege warfare.

- Hines, currently, the main force users of the Lotus Guild have yet to move from within the fortress yet, and what do you think the reason for that is?
- That I think is because the fighting power of the users of Lotus are fundamentally much lower than the users of DarkRuna. The average level of the DarkRuna Guild's attack unit is over 140, but from what I know, there aren't even five users that are over lv 140 in the Lotus Guild. On top of that, they even lack in numbers just with their absolute users. I think that they will attack after making the DarkRuna Guild climb over the defensive walls and drain their strength as much as possible.
- Ah-ha, I see.
- The DarkRuna Guild will probably be incredibly infuriated right now.
- Why's that?
- Since it will feel like they're being toyed with by a guild with a much weaker fighting power, that is. Since they have yet to even see the Lotus users, and they're constantly just fighting with the defense towers.
- That is also true. However, it seems that the DarkRuna Guild is definitely strong. Since amongst that many towers, over half have been demolished already.
- Agreed.

- The full-fledged fight hasn't even started yet, but it's already exciting.

Just like the two people's conversation, the battle began to take on an even more exciting aspect.

- It looks like the second rampart will be broken through soon now! Are the Lotus Guild users planning on giving them the second line of defense just like that as well?
- Oh, the troops of the Lotus Guild that were within the fortress have begun to move.
- I see, it looks like the full-fledged battle will begin now!
- The DarkRuna Guild did lose over half their troops, but most of them were soldiers and Desert Warriors, while most of their users are alive and well. I wonder much of a good fight the Lotus Guild will be able to put up with them as their opponents...!

In the real-time chat room of the YTBC channel, comments were popping up without rest, and arguments over the result of the siege warfare continued.

However, most were still predicting the victory of the DarkRuna Guild.

However, just then, in the sky of the Pyro Domain, the resounding roar of a Griffin rang out.

Kyaaoooh-!



And on the back of that Griffin, one man, who had an English longbow on his back and a staff in one hand while dressed in an interesting attire, looked down at the battleground.

## Chapter 164: Impenetrable Fortress (2)

---

Ian, who flew up to the sky of the battlefield and used Pin's AoE buff-slash-debuff skill, began to give out commands quickly through the guild chat.

- Ian: It's now, everybody. Once the crossing gate goes down 20 seconds from now, the troops of the DarkRuna Guild will gather in the middle. At that moment, please pour out your AoE attacks first.

Meanwhile, the Archers of the DarkRuna Guild, who had discovered Ian flying in the air, simultaneously shot arrows towards Ian.

However, as it was a situation that he had already predicted, Ian wasn't taken aback and flew up quickly.

He had shot up so that he was outside of the range of the Archers.

Ian internally counted to himself.

‘5... 4... 3...’

As Ian looked down while being so high up, he could see the location of his opponents all at once, and his eyes shone.

This was because the troops of the DarkRuna Guild were displaying movements that were over 90% accurate with his

predictions.

‘2... 1... Now!’

As soon as Ian finished counting, the crossing gates on either side of the fortress went down while letting out a heavy sound.

Thud-Thu-ud-!

On behalf of that, the fortress gate of the second defensive wall let out a boom as it began to open up.

Keu-keuk- Keu-keu-keuk-!

Someone, who had discovered that, shouted loudly.

“We’ve succeeded in opening the door! Everybody, advance forward to the inside!”

“Ahhh!”

Truthfully, the one that had shouted loudly towards the DarkRuna Guild members was none other than Herz.

The Lotus Guild had tactically opened the fortress gate to lure in their opponents, but through Herz’s shout, they would have mistakenly thought that one of the guild members of the

DarkRuna Guild had gotten over the rampart and opened the door.

The influential power of this one phrase was bigger than expected.

In a situation where thousands of people were engaged in a dogfight, not one person was able to think that Herz's words were planned to throw them into confusion, and as the fortress gate opened, the troops of the DarkRuna Guild began to run towards the fortress gate like a wave.

Ian, who was watching that scene in the air, wore a smile of satisfaction.

‘Okay, they bought it better than expected.’

Far from the ground, Ian suddenly began to chant a summon incantation from the air.

“Bbakbbak, Summon!”

As he did so, a white light violently swirled in the air as Bbakbbak, who had a giant build, was summoned.

Of course, Bbakbbak began to drop towards the ground, and he wore a flustered expression.

- Own, owner! Are you intending on killing me!

Of course, Ian had an idea.

“Don’t worry, since there’s a plan.”

However, Bbakbbak continued to wear a nervous expression.

But then again, the location where Ian dropped Bbakbbak was an incredibly high place to the point that people just looked like black dots.

On top of that, Bbakbbak was incredibly large, and he was that heavy.

Even if Bbakbbak had outrageous Defensive Power and Vitality, if he fell from this height, he wouldn’t be able to escape instantaneous death.

And Ian was counting the time that Bbakbbak took to fall.

‘A little... A little more!’

Meanwhile, the users and soldiers of DarkRuna, who were on the ground, wore appalled expressions after discovering the giant shadow that hung above them from the air.

“Euak!”

“What, what the hell is that?!”

“Avoid it!”

At that exact moment.

Ian invoked Bbakbbak’s inherent ability.

“Bbakbbak, Absolute Defense!”

This was exactly what Ian was aiming for.

If Absolute Defense was invoked, for 10 seconds, Bbakbbak wouldn’t receive any damage, and he would become immune to all status conditions.

For the duration of Absolute Defense, he couldn’t move at all, but that was no problem.

Since with the damage that Bbakbbak would deal from dropping, he would turn the whole vicinity into ashes.

Whoong-!

As Absolute Defense was invoked, Bbakbbak’s whole body was wrapped in a current of gold light while a giant shield was created,

and as soon as his inherent ability was invoked, Bbakbbak's four legs lodged into the ground.

Baang-!

Along with the rising cloud of dust coming up in all directions, a loud boom rang out.

At that moment, system messages popped up one after another in front of Ian's eyes.

- Familiar 'Bbakbbak' has dealt 759,840 damage to the 'Desert Warrior' of the DarkRuna Guild.
- The 'Desert Warrior' has been killed.
- You have obtained 879,899 EXP.
- You have obtained 1500 Fame.
- You have obtained 350 Specialty Points.
- The 'Desert Warrior' has been killed.
- The 'Desert Warrior' has been killed.
- DarkRuna Guild User 'Hanjoon' has been killed.

- DarkRuna Guild User 'Rutan' has been killed.

The spot that Bbakbbak had dropped down to was right in front of the fortress gate where the troops of the DarkRuna Guild were gathered, and thanks to that, dozens of troops turned into a grey light and it was game over for them.

As at least 500 thousand damage went through at once, there was no way an organism that could outlast that existed.

Amongst them, a considerable number of high-level DarkRuna Guild Users, who were over lv 140, were included.

On top of the pile of bodies that were a grey light, Bbakbbak stood while putting on an air of elegance much like a golden statue.

And following Bbakbbak, who dropped down before anybody realized, to a lower altitude, Ian let out a command to Pin.

“Pin, Crush!”

Kku-ruk- Kku-ru-ruk-!

The users of DarkRuna, who had been frightened to death along with Bbakbbak's appearance, weren't able to avoid Pin's AoE skill and received it as is.



On top of that, that wasn't the end.

The users of the Lotus Guild, who were hiding their bodies above the fortress of the second defensive wall, showed themselves.

They began to pour out their attack skills towards the DarkRuna users who were concentrated into an area.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

With that as the trigger, the full-fledged battle between the DarkRuna Guild and the Lotus Guild finally began.

Ian also summoned all of his Familiars, and he began to go full-out and stir around the battleground.

“Magicians, snipe the Archers mainly first! You need to deal as much damage onto them before they regain their senses!”

Following Ian's command, the Lotus Guild members moved quickly and accurately, and Fiolan, who had become the Lord of the Pyro Domain, began to direct the soldiers that had been produced on the Domain.

‘Good, for now, it looks like we could say that we almost succeeded in today's defensive battle...’

Behind the second defensive wall, the third defensive fortress,

which could be considered the last fort, held up strongly.

However, if the second defensive wall dealt this much damage, he felt as though there was no need to show the third defensive fortress to the opponents.

Clang-Cl-clang-!

The sound of metal clashing together rang out endlessly from every direction.

While looking at the soldiers of the Lotus Guild that inversely poured out from the opened fortress gate, Ilahan gritted his teeth.

‘Damn it, how exactly were they able to construct this much Defensive Power? Is this a part that is possible with the funds of a guild only in the top 100?’

Truthfully, funds weren’t the only problem.

With Ilahan’s common sense, even if they had infinite funds, based on time, it looked like it was impossible to make as many forts and defensive towers as this no matter what.

‘Did they receive funds from the Luspel Empire level? What exactly is it?’

So long as they didn’t know of the existence of the Holy Grail that

Ian had, for Ilahan, these thoughts couldn't be helped.

“Sollin, focus all firepower towards the fortress gate. There's no other method besides frontal breakthrough.”

“Yes, understood, Master.”

Ilahan added on another word towards Sollin, who unsheathed her sword and went forward.

“Sollin, the sword that I gave you last time, you still have it, right?”

Sollin, who thought about it for a moment, nodded her head.

“Yes, Master.”

“Once you reach the front of the fortress gates, use the summoning magic that's enchanted onto the sword.”

“Understood.”

Ilahan, who finished speaking, sheathed the twin swords that he had been swinging around until now onto either sides of his waist, and unsheathed the greatsword that he had on his back.

Seu-reu-reung-!

And with a loud voice, he delivered an impassioned speech.

“We’ve received a lot more damage than expected as we failed in figuring out the fighting power of the opponents, but to lose to a guild on the frontier whose name we DarkRuna has never even heard of is something that cannot happen!”

As Ilahan threw his greatsword into the air, a blue light began to shine out from the sword.

“If we just get over that fortress gate, I expect that seizing the inside will not be hard! From now on, I’m going to take the lead, so we’re going with a frontal breakthrough!”

Ilahan, who finished speaking, spread his hand out in front of him and the greatsword began to spin in circles, and it began to fly in the direction that Ilahan pointed to while ripping through the air.

Swaeek-!

And at the end there, Bbakbbak, who was shining a gold light, was situated.

“Die!”

Ilahan considered eliminating Bbakbbak, who firmly guarded the

front of the fortress gate, as the top priority, and because of that, he invoked the strongest long-distance hitting skill that he had.

For Bbakbbak, who was as slow as he was big-bodied, it was a situation where he would be directly hit by the skill without having even moved an inch.

However, just then, Ian, who flew around while riding his Griffin right above, quickly spread his hand out towards Bbakbbak.

“Bbookbbook, Curtain of Water!”

Bboo-bbook-!

He had invoked Bbookbbook’s inherent ability, Curtain of Water, that was attached to the ‘Turtle Spirit’ item.

As Ian shouted while spreading out his hand, a stream of water poured out from Bbookbbook’s mouth...

Kwaaah-!

The stream of water flew out to land right in front of Bbakbbak and it formed a giant curtain.

And the greatsword of Ilahan that flew in at the same time clashed with the front of the curtain.

Pu-ung-!

Along with a loud boom that rang through the eardrums, Ilahan's greatsword bounced off into the air, and the Curtain of Water that safely carried out its role also dropped to the ground shortly after.

Swaah-

While looking at the water that sunk and permeated into the sand on the ground, Ilahan wore a flustered expression.

‘What, what the hell?’

As it was simply something that had happened in an instant moment, it was to the point that even Ilahan, who casted the skill, didn't properly understand the situation.

It was a part where one could find out how fast Ian's reflexes were.

And the soldiers and users of the Lotus Guild, who moved into high gear, began to challenge the DarkRuna Guild.

“Aaah!”

Getting a head start in battle was important.

It could be considered the same context as the fighting spirit of the soldiers in war being important as well.

With that meaning, the spirit right now brought an effect that puffed up the fighting power the Lotus Guild by double.

“Damn it, what are we doing? I’m telling you, there are a ton of guys that aren’t even at lv 130 amongst them as well!”

Just like what that person of the DarkRuna Guild shouted, most of the members of the Lotus Guild were composed of lv 120s.

On the other hand, the DarkRuna Guild was lined up with many rankers that were around lv 140.

However, based on the spirit of battle, as they were completely intimidated, they began to helplessly collapse at the Lotus Guild’s attack.

And as the battle condition continued onto a dogfight, Ian’s battleground controlling abilities began to shine even more.

“Ly, attack the opponents that don’t have much Vitality left first and kick them out!”

- Understood, Owner!

Before they realized, the sky began to turn dusky, and as the

moon, which had gathered strength, began to hang above the battleground, Ly began to leap around like a fish that met water.

- Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to the DarkRuna Guild affiliated 'Desert Warrior'.
- The 'Desert Warrior's Vitality has decreased by 21,640.
- The 'Desert Warrior' has been killed.

And Paulean, who had perfectly adjusted to battle with Ian, also let out thunderbolts in all directions as he began to crush his opponents.

Bang-Ba-ba-bang-!

Paulean's exploding thunderbolts scorched the users of the DarkRuna Guild, who charged towards him without a clue, black.

- Retainer 'Paulean' has dealt critical damage to DarkRuna Guild Member 'Halibo'.
- 'Halibo's Vitality has been reduced by 29,980.
- 'Halibo' has been killed.

Paulean, who was almost at lv 180, and Kaizar, who was close to lv 250, had stronger fighting powers than anybody in the DarkRuna Guild.



Let alone, as it was an advantageous battle where their spirit had gone up this much, there was nothing to talk about when it came to how exceptional their active roles were.

Just then, Ian, who had discovered Ilahan, asked Kaizar for a favour.

“Retainer, you see that guy over there, right? Can’t you face that guy, please?”

As expected of the 1st place ranker in the unofficial server rankings, Ilahan slaughtered numerous soldiers of the Lotus Guild as he showed his presence.

Ian poked Kaizar’s side.

“I’m absolutely not asking you for a favour because I feel like I’m going to lose...”

Despite Ian’s pathetic request, Kaizar spun his head around before he threw his body towards a different battleground.

While looking at Kaizar, who didn’t even reply, Ian let out a deep sigh.

‘Argh, damn it, then do I need to double up on that monster-like dude with Paulean and then catch him?’

While looking at Ilahan, who spun his fearsome sword in all directions, Ian gulped audibly.

He couldn't figure out why exactly, but based on his feeling, Ilahan even looked stronger than Paulean, who was in the second half of the lv 170 range.

‘The soldiers dying off are a little bit of a waste, but there's a need to understand the dude's skill pattern.’

Ian got on Halli's back and faced easy opponents nearby while he continuously kept an eye on Ilahan's movements.

However, just then, a giant wave of energy gushed out from the front of the fortress gate.

Whoong-!

Most gazes, including Ian's, turned towards the fortress gate.

‘What the hell... Is that?’

After checking the giant shadow that hung in front there, Ian's eyes widened.

## Chapter 165: Impenetrable Fortress (3)

---

After the base of the Lotus Guild was built-up in the central continent, Harin leveled up quite a bit while following her guildmates.

Thanks to that, even Harin's level, which felt like it would forever be a two-digit figure, had increased to a three-digit figure to the point she was facing lv 110, but to participate in the defensive battle with the DarkRuna Guild was irrational.

‘Well, still, since I’ve maxed out my cooking and supplied it, I’ve also probably helped!’

Before the defensive battle began, Harin had supplied the buffed foods that she made diligently one by one.

Just like she was thinking, the buffed food was a big help to the Lotus Guild members.

Since when it came to her cooking level, it was so high to the point it was unrivaled in Kailan.

Harin, who completed all of her tasks, logged out and sat on the sofa in the room while turning on the TV instead of directly participating in the battle.

Tiiing-!

As the giant TV screen, which hung on the wall, turned on, Harin quickly switched the channels until YTBC's channel was on.

“Although I can't be with them inside, I should cheer them on.”

This was because she heard that YTBC was monopolizing the broadcast for this siege warfare of the DarkRuna Guild and the Lotus Guild.

“Where did my keyboard go again?”

The TV that was inside Harin's room was a smart TV that was connected to Harin's computer desktop.

The smart TV was an incredibly convenient product that could be used with the TV and PC linked together.

Harin, who settled into the sofa after finding her wireless mouse and keyboard, began to diligently watch the siege warfare with even the lights of her room turned off, so that it felt like she was watching a movie.

Harin ripped open the chip bag that she had saved in the corner of her room as she mumbled.

“When will our Jinsung come out? DarkRuna, they said that they were the 1st place guild, but are they sure they aren't going to get annihilated after just destroying the towers?”

Harin, who watched the siege warfare while munching on her potato chips, beamed as she watched Jinsung, who appeared coolly along with Bbakbbak, who dropped to the ground.

“When it comes to games alone, our Jinsung is amazingly good.”

As if she was fighting right behind Jinsung, Harin began to be immersed in the screen.

“Ah, shall we open up the viewer’s chat room?”

Harin typed on the keyboard and opened up the viewer’s chat room that was hidden on the right side of the screen.

And the two eyes of Harin, who saw the chat window that popped up, rounded.

“What, what the hell? Why are comments coming up this fast?”

Comments were coming up so fast to the point it was difficult to follow with her eyes.

It was even to the point that comments endlessly popped up although the channel was behind the chatting channel that was over three-digit figures.

- Wow, what is that golden turtle over there? It looks like Hyunmu[1]. Is there someone that knows? I want to go to catch that!
- No kidding, the golden turtle's swagger is explosive. Does anybody know what that is?
- Guys, it says so right there. That it's Bbakbbak...
- No, you there, Bbakbbak is the name of that Familiar that Ian gave to it. We're saying that we want to know what that monster's species is.
- I see! Sorry, I'm a game newbie, so...

Harin, who read down the chat, smirked.

“Our Bbakbbak is pretty cool and dashing.”

Harin, who was in charge of the food of all of Ian's Familiars, had become quite close with Bbakbbak as well.

There was no way there was a Familiar that hated pretty Harin, who served them delicious food three times a day.

- Wow, goddamn, you guys just saw Ian use the curtain skill just now, right? His real reflexive speed is crazy.
- Huh? Did he just invoke a curtain-type skill just now? No wonder, I was wondering why the greatsword suddenly bounced back.

- Hul, I just thought that golden turtle used a defensive skill.
- No, no, I think he just invoked the Curtain of Water skill. I've seen a fire-type curtain skill, but this is my first time seeing Curtain of Water.
- Keu, I wet my pants a little. I'm going to go change my underwear.
- Person above, you don't even have the basics down. When you're watching Ian's battle video, you should come wearing a diaper.

Fundamentally, Ian's combat method, where he hit with non-target projectiles from far away, was also flashy, but the battle content that a guild in the top 100 rankings was putting up a good fight while facing the number 1 ranking guild alone was making the users go wild.

- Are you sure that the Lotus Guild isn't actually going to win like this? If Lotus wins, this will seriously be crazy.
- Pfft, no way. They were truly amazing enough even up until now but take a look at Ilahan fighting. That person is also truly a monster. Soldiers in the lv 130 range melt down at one swing of his sword.

Harin, who was reading the chat, squinted her eyes for the first time.

“What the hell, our guild is obviously going to win, so then why are they talking like we're going to lose?”

The basis for why Harin was sure of victory was simple.

Since up until now, there was not one time that she saw a battle with Ian turn into a loss.

Harin, who mounted reasonable logic in her own way, pounded her keyboard.

- Look here, guys, how exactly are you saying that the DarkRuna Guild will win? Lotus will win this battle no matter what.
- Person above, you're saying something that's completely fabricated. Lotus has put up an incredibly good fight up until now, but close to half of DarkRuna's troops are still alive and well. It looks like they still have over 1 thousand in just soldiers, so what are you talking about?

Harin pouted her lips as she pounded her keyboard again.

- In any case, they'll win. If you watch, you'll know.
- Wow, this, just forcing zero logic. No matter how you look at it, I think DarkRuna is a little more superior so far.
- It seems that person is a member of Ian's fan club. Just leave them.

After feeling severe exhaustion from the momentary keyboard battle, Harin closed the chat window.



“Idiots.”

Harin, who had shortly judged the keyboard warriors with one word, began to focus on the screen again.

However, just then, the commentators of YTBC began to chatter with excited voices.

- What, what is that?

\*

Thu-ud-!

Along with a heavy, loud noise, dense clouds of dust blew in every direction.

Within the clouds of dust that were so thick that the vision of everybody nearby turned grey, a giant shadow hung.

The users of the Lotus Guild, including Ian, wore flustered expressions.

‘What exactly is this monster-like dude?’

A bronze giant, whose body was even bigger than Bbakbbak, had appeared in front of them.

The greatness of the giant, who grasped a blue spear that looked even taller and more aggressive than himself, overwhelmed the whole assembly.

Keu-rwah-rwah-rwah-rwah-!

With a bizarre voice, the giant let out a loud roar towards the front before swinging around the steel spear.

Baaang-!

“Damn it, avoid it!”

However, there weren't that many places that they could run away to in front of the narrow fortress gate, and about four or five users of the Lotus Guild, who were directly hit by the aggressive spear, turned into a grey light in an instant and disappeared.

After Ian checked the information that was above the giant's head, he shook his head.

‘Where exactly did he suddenly appear from? How is he lv 220?’

- Charging Leader of the Giant, God-like People Lv 220

Ian frowned.

‘Ilahan, that monster-like dude, alone is already hard enough, so how do we face that?’

Meanwhile, Ilahan’s expression also darkened.

It was because even though they had even used their trump card, the Summoning Magic Artifact, the progress of the battle didn’t look so easy.

‘I swear I think that dude has control over the whole Lotus military strength.’

Still, as expected of the head of a giant guild, Ilahan had figured out the flow of the battle instantly.

“You, your opponent is me!”

Ilahan pulled out the twin swords that were sheathed on either side of his waist and charged towards Ian, and Ian, who discovered that, quickly let out a command as he grabbed and held up the English longbow that was hanging behind him.

“Kaizar, please take care of that bronze giant over there!”

Because there was no one that could face that outrageous monster if it wasn’t Kaizar, Ian couldn’t do anything else but put his hope on him for the last time, and fortunately, Kaizar nodded

his head as he threw his body towards the giant, god-like person.

“Understood. If it is a giant, god-like person, they have the right to become my opponent.”

At his peculiar narcissism, Ian wanted to add on something else, but there was no time to do that.

It was because Ilahan was very close.

“Die!”

Ilahan’s swords, which were engulfed in a blue energy, were aimed at Ian’s heart and they seized forward, but Ian barely dodged the sword attack as he called over Halli, who was nearby.

“Halli!”

Because of the inertia from when Ilahan charged forward, he stopped a little further away, and Ian, taking that opportunity, invoked Current Proliferation and pulled his bowstring.

Piiing-!

In an instant, like flowing water, Ian’s continuous motion spread out. However, Ilahan’s combat senses were also formidable.

Ta-tat-.

Ilahan, who quickly twisted his waist as he kicked a small mound and turned his direction, swung his twin swords towards Ian again.

Whoong-!

The energy that spewed out of the twin swords flew out towards Ian in an X-form, and Ian quickly got on Halli's back as he avoided the sword energy.

And as soon as he got on Halli's back, the first thing that Ian did was invoke Halli's inherent ability.

“Halli, Guardian of the Wind!”

The Guardian of the Wind buff of Halli, who was now close to lv 140, exponentially increased his reflexes to an outrageous amount, and on top of Halli, who flew around like wind, Ian shot out arrows one after another.

Ping-Pi-ping-!

And, the users affiliated with the DarkRuna Guild, who witnessed that form from nearby, wore flustered expressions.

“What the hell, wasn't that dude a Summoner?”

“This crazy, how is a Summoner that good at fast firing?”

When Archer-class users compete on physical abilities, one of the events that they look at the most was fast firing.

The most important virtues of an Archer-class were the accuracy rate of their non-target skills and their fast firing abilities.

However, even the Archers of the DarkRuna Guild, whom were in the rankings, thought that the fast firing that Ian had command over right now was at an incredible level.

Since the moment his arrow left the bowstring, a new arrow was placed against the string before they realized.

On top of that, the time that it took to aim and launch, it went by so fast to the point that they were suspicious as to whether he even was taking aim.

At the fault that Ilahan's movements were so fast, one to two arrows missed, but considering the fact that he didn't even have the Accuracy Rate Correction of the Archer-class, his accuracy rate was also at a surprising level.

On the other hand, the physical abilities of Ilahan, who Ian was facing, was also incredible.

With Ian on the back of Halli, who was elusive, Ilahan faced him directly while dodging or cutting down over 70% of Ian's arrows

that continuously flew towards him.

The two people's battle was so showy and elaborate to the point that if they said that they got in sync beforehand and were performing acrobatic movements instead, it could be believable.

‘Damn it, Halli's Agility is probably over 10 thousand right now, so then how is he able to follow this closely?’

Ian was seriously admiring Ilahan's tremendous Agility stats.

‘As expected... Is he showing that he is the unofficial number 1 ranking user?’

On top of that, he had a battle sense that was no less even when compared to anybody that he had fought face-to-face up until now.

Ian was slowly falling behind against Ilahan, but as Ly and Pin, and even Bbakbbak, joined in, they were able to continue onto a somewhat even battle.

At this point, the one that was dumbfounded was Ilahan.

‘What exactly does this guy do?’

When he first charged towards Ian, he was planning on eliminating him in an instant and turn the tables of the war situation.

He never even thought for a moment that he would struggle this much against a user who was affiliated with a guild that he had never even heard the name of and on top of that was a 'Summoner', which was famous for being the weakest at PvP.

If in the case that Ian had put some of his personal information as public and made it possible for his ID to be seen, Ilahan would have also recognized him.

Since the Summoner named 'Ian' was so famous to the point that there wasn't a person that didn't know of him in the community.

However, Ilahan, who didn't have much interest, wasn't able to recognize Ian's face.

For about almost 10 minutes, the offensive and defensive battle continued.

Even Paulean joined in to attack Ilahan, but as time passed, Ian began to fall behind little by little.

Ian grumbled internally.

'This is seriously just a difference in stats! I definitely think I'm more superior when it comes to control.'

Just then, when Ian was putting his brain to work to figure out



how he should continue with the battle.

As a deafening roar rang out behind the two people, a loud shout was heard.

“Woow, the giant has been slain!”

It seemed he was taken aback by the noise, as for an instant, Ilahan’s movements ceased.

And it wasn’t like Ian to lose that opportunity.

“Where are you looking, you idiot!”

The Magic Spheres that Ian, who hung his bow onto his back and pulled out his staff before anybody realized, shot out lodged into Ilahan’s chest.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

[1] Hyunmu = The Black Tortoise; a mythical creature that is a hybrid of many animals, much like a Griffin. Also known as Xuanwu in Chinese and Genbu in Japanese.

# Chapter 166: Impenetrable Fortress (4)

---

- You have dealt critical damage to DarkRuna Guild Master 'Ilahan'!
- Ilahan's Vitality has been reduced by 10,349.

As his stance faltered, Ly also didn't lose that chance, and he drove through and bit down on Ilahan's shoulder joint.

- Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to DarkRuna Guild Master 'Ilahan'!
- Ilahan's Vitality has been reduced by 21,554.

In an instant, Ilahan's Vitality Bar had been reduced to below half.

Ilahan quickly stepped back as he got into a defensive stance.

He looked at Ian with a dumbfounded expression as he asked.

“Where did you exactly jump out from? To think that there was a guy that could fight this well in the Luspel Empire...”

Ian smirked as he replied.

“Who knows. More than that, I want to open up your stat

window once. I'm curious as to how high your stats are exactly, that is."

Ian, who thought that Ilahan was buying time by talking to him, moved his body without rest even while replying, and he charged towards him again.

However, there was a part that Ian hadn't thought about.

Pu-ung-!

Suddenly an armoured knight, that jumped out from behind, blocked Ian's way as they collided their body with Ian's.

Ian, who narrowly regained his balance and stepped back, checked the information of the armoured knight.

- ??? Lv 175

However, aside from their level, all of their information was set to private, so Ian wasn't able to check the identity of the armoured knight.

The one thing that he could figure out was that they were not a user.

'What the hell is this now?'

Ilahan lightly sneered at Ian, who wore a flustered expression.

“Why do you think you are the only one with a retainer?”

Ian, who immediately figured out the identity of the armoured knight as soon as he heard those words, wore an embarrassed expression as he scratched the back of his head.

The armoured knight was Ilahan’s retainer.

And the forms of about five or six NPCs that looked like they were the retainers of Ilahan appeared behind him.

The average level of the retainers was at a point it was almost equivalent to Paulean’s level.

“Ahem.”

If this was the case, it was definitely beyond Ian’s capability to face Ilahan with his strength alone, and Ian began to think of a stunt he could pull.

‘In this case, we’ll need the help of our gangster-like retainer over here as well...’

Ian slightly glanced at the place where Kaizar was.

Kaizar was jumping around on top of the bronze giant that had turned into a black boulder as he agitated the troops of the DarkRuna Guild.

‘Do I need to lure Ilahan to over there?’

However, shortly after, there was no need for Ian to contemplate it anymore.

This was because Ilahan suddenly pulled back his retainers.

His mouth slowly opened.

“I truly never imagined it to unfold like this, but it looks like today, we’ll have to leave it here.”

Ian sneered at him.

“Who said we’re just going to send you off?”

There were still over a thousand troops and high-level users of the DarkRuna Guild, who were over lv 140, remaining.

In a battle that they had won, because they looked the same as EXP and Specialty Point lumps, Ian had absolutely no intentions of just sending them off.

‘When leveling-up is just around the corner right now, that’s nonsense.’

However, Ilahan looked as relaxed as ever.

“I had no idea that I would even have to use this expensive scroll here, but we’ll see each other next time, then.”

Ilahan pulled out a scroll that was glowing purple from his chest and ripped it open as he chanted the incantation, and all of the bodies of the troops that were affiliated with the DarkRuna Guild who were on the battleground at that moment began to glow purple.

And rays of purple light surged up into the air simultaneously.

Shwoong-!

The pillars of purple light that filled the air disappeared shortly after, and along with that all of the troops of the DarkRuna Guild disappeared without a trace from the battleground.

Ian mumbled with a dispirited expression.

“Hul, to have used an AoE Return Scroll, this billionaire.”

The AoE Return Scroll was a high-priced item that was close to

1.5 million a piece.

Truthfully, in the case of the DarkRuna Guild, it was much more advantageous to use a return scroll instead of getting completely annihilated, but that was because the DarkRuna Guild was the highest-ranking guild, it wasn't from a general situation.

Even for a decently high-ranking guild, that return scroll was not an item that could be used rashly.

The reason for that was simple. Since it was to the point the scroll cost so much, it was better to just die.

The AoE Return Scroll was an item that even Ian didn't have a need to purchase it for.

“Either way... Then did we win?”

Ian turned his head as he looked around the battleground.

All of the users and soldiers that were standing with their two feet inside the fortress were affiliated with the Lotus Guild.

Ian lifted his bow straight into the air as he shouted.

“We won!”

And as if they had been waiting for it, a loud cry burst out from every direction.

The confused guild members had properly figured out the situation at Ian's shout.

“Whooo!”

“We won against the DarkRuna Guild!”

It was the fruit of grinding with blood and sweat for two weeks for the construction of the defensive fortress.

At the pride that they blocked off the attack of the number 1 ranking guild, the guild members were all deeply touched.

They had received quite a bit of damage but compared to the number of opponents they had killed, it was to the point it could be considered insignificant, and the rewards that they received through this battle was truly tremendous.

For example, the level of Ian, who was at lv 140, had increased by two.

‘My gauge was over 90% full from the beginning, but still, to have gained enough EXP for more than one level increase, that's incredible.’



However, just then, a purple energy floated above the corpses that were strewn all over the grounds.

Ian's two eyes shone.

‘By any chance, is it possible...?’

The purple energies that could only be seen with Ian's eyes were quickly sucked into his inventory.

Ian quickly opened his inventory and checked the hatching rate of the Karceus' Egg.

- Karceus' Egg – Hatching Rate: 93%

And he lightly licked his lips.

“Tsk, still, it's not hatching yet.”

However, as he saw the hatching rate, which was in its early 60s, go over 90%, his mood brightened incredibly.

‘Will it be possible for me to see a God Dragon after one or two more defensive wars now then?’

He wondered exactly what kind of loveable Familiar would be inside the Egg of the God Dragon. Ian felt his heart already pound.

\*

The official community of Kailan was in such chaos to the point that the giant server was lagging.

This was because the full version of the siege warfare video that was broadcasted by YTBC had been uploaded to the main bulletin board of the community.

The title of the bulletin post was the same as the following.

- Goliath, who was collapsed by David.

Subtitle – DarkRuna, who couldn't overcome Ian.

The title was incredibly exciting no matter who saw it.

The guild name 'Lotus' wasn't that famous, but the user name 'Ian' was famous to the point it was no less than a decent high-ranker.

Indeed, if you were a user that played Kailan, it was a title that must be clicked on.

The number of views passed by the million-mark in an instant, and the video even spread out to the Kailan communities of foreign

countries immediately.

- Wow, this is crazy! Ian basically just carried this on his own. The title is not an exaggeration, for real.
- No, by any chance, does anybody know what level Ian is at? How can a Summoner fight like that with Ilahan as their opponent?
- If you look there, he's attacking with a lv 170-range knight. It seems off to say that Ian fought him alone.
- I think that knight named Paulean is Ian's retainer...?
- Either way, as Ilahan fought without a retainer, when it comes to a battle between just the two of them, I think it will be more accurate to say that Ilahan won.
- No, why are these people fighting over something so obvious? Ilahan is probably at least 20 levels higher than Ian, so do you think he would be weaker than Ian?
- Oh? Come to think of it, that's true. No matter how high Ian's level is, he probably isn't at lv 140 yet, so how exactly did he fight that evenly with Ilahan?
- Ah, I don't know, Summoner is a cheat class! Development team, nerf Summoners!
- Aye, nerf Summoners!
- What are these idiots talking about?

- No kidding. It seems like they'll have to nerf Ian, not nerf Summoners.
- I agree with the person above. Ian's reflexive senses and his ability to adapt to circumstances are scams. As soon as I saw him kill dozens with the Bbakbbak meteor, I already wet my pants.
- Ha, but, this was shot from so far away that I can't see Ian and Ilahan's battle scene properly. Is Ian's personal battle video not going to come up? I want to see it...
- Won't Sojin edit that soon and upload it? I noticed that Sojin, Ian's video uploader, took full charge and continuously uploaded them.
- Ah, really? Good, good. I should go immediately to watch that as soon as it comes up.

Through this siege warfare, Ian had reformed into a complete celebrity now.

Up until now, if he was considered an existence that only received adoration from Summoner-class or new class users, now, the ID Ian began come out here and there even from the mouths of established users.

It was to that extent that the loss of the DarkRuna Guild had come as a shock to many people.

\*

“Ugh, this restoration process is also a task itself.”

Ian was sweating hard to restore the destroyed defensive towers along with his guildmates.

This was because, although it was much easier than when they first built it, and it was possible to re-build it quickly, the amount of labour was still incredible.

Herz, who was next to him, laughed as he spoke.

“Yo, still, isn’t this seriously a profitable business?”

“What is?”

“Even if we just change the Specialty Points that we obtained with this siege warfare to resources, it’s to the point that we’ve earned more than we lost. On top of that, amongst the defensive towers, there were even quite a bit that had filled up on EXP and had leveled up.”

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“That’s true. Since this was my plan from the beginning.”

The War Trading Post that was within the domain was indeed a goose that had laid a golden egg.

Since the more battles they went through, it would immediately

turn into resources and return to them.

Every time the Pyro Domain succeeded in defending, their defensive power will continue to become stronger.

As time passed, they would be able to create more technical defensive towers, and when they had enough resources and funds, they would even be able to raise the facility level of the Combat Unit Production Building.

As time passed, the Pyro Domain would continue to reform as a sturdier impenetrable fortress.

“Speaking of which, for us to have really won against DarkRuna, I didn’t even dream that a day like this would come.”

Ian smirked as he opened his mouth.

“It’s too early to relax yet.”

At those words, Herz grumbled.

“Who said they’re relaxing? I’m just expressing my mood since for now, we’ve won.”

Ian’s words continued.

“However, if we just block them for sure a couple more times from now, then I think we’ll actually be able to relax.”

“A couple of times?”

At Herz’s question, Ian nodded his head.

“That’s right. However, the next couple of times may be an even harder battle than this time.”

“Why? Because of the Kaimon Empire Army?”

Ian nodded his head.

“Correct. As the DarkRuna Guild has failed the siege and returned this time, it’s most likely that normal guilds won’t try and attack our fortress so rashly.”

“That is true. Since at this point in time, a guild that has a stronger fighting power than DarkRuna doesn’t exist.”

Ian’s words continued.

“It will probably continue to be quiet for a few more days, and once they’ve occupied all the other bases that are at the front lines, our domain will probably become their target again.”

Herz, who figured out what Ian's words meant, let out a deep sigh.

“Hoo, opponents will probably be pouring in from all directions then.”

For this defensive war, it was still at least a war where they just needed to face the opponents that poured in from the front.

As that was the case, the Lotus Guild also stationed all of their defensive towers at the front, and even focused their troops at the front and blocked the attack of their opponents.

However, if it was after all of the bases of the front lines were occupied, the Pyro Domain will indeed just be left alone in the middle of the enemy camp, and they will have to receive endless attacks from all directions.

Ian opened his mouth again.

“We still have time until then. We need to do everything that we can before then.”

At Ian's words, Herz nodded his head with a stern expression.

“Alright, just like you said, this is truly an opportunity that doesn't come twice.”



“That’s right. If we just guard this fortress until the end, we can also develop the guild to the point that we will be able to stand shoulder-to-shoulder with Titan or DarkRuna.”

They were not empty words.

If they continued to obtain victories while facing the Kaimon Empire Army, which boasted an outrageous level range and size, in the central continent, the Lotus Guild would be able to grow at an incredible speed.

The two people, who were finished with their conversation, moved their bodies for the defensive tower repair operation again.

By looking at the movements of their opponents, it didn’t look like there would be a situation where they would be attacked for a while, but still, they had no idea when there would be a raid, so they needed to finish building the line of defense as soon as possible.

# Chapter 167: The Summoner of the Central Continent (1)

---

“Hmm, as expected, on a hot day like this, the best thing to do is lying down underneath shade and getting a nap.”

Kaizar, who used Bbookbbook as a pillow while in a gazebo that was built on top of a hill in the corner of the Pyro Domain, was humming as he took a nap.

And next to him, Hoonie was pouting as he sat down.

“To say it’s hot on a chilly fall day. As expected, I’m saying you’re not normal.”

Kaizar, who heard Hoonie’s grumbling, clouted his head with his knuckles like a lightning bolt.

Thud-.

“Ow!”

Hoonie glared at Kaizar.

However, with both of his cheeks puffed out, Hoonie was unable to say anything before he dropped his head.

“If you have time to say such useless words, go and level up at least before you come back, kiddo. You’re so scrappy that I don’t even have the desire to face you.”

At Kaizar’s sarcastic remark, Bbookbbook, who was by his head, also agreed.

BbookBboo-bbook-.

However, despite having heard insulting(?) words, Hoonie was unable to give any reply.

And there was a reason for that.

Just 10 minutes ago, Hoonie had lost to Kaizar brutally.

What was even worse was the fact that Kaizar fought without any weapon, just with his bare hands, was a bigger shock.

On top of that, Hoonie wasn’t able to cut down even 10% of Kaizar’s Vitality.

‘Monster-like jerk, if I just put the Power of the Immortal in my hands, I will return this humiliation at all costs!’

While looking at Hoonie grinding his teeth with rage, Bbookbbook seemed to enjoy something as he laughed while going bbookbbook.

At that, Hoonie's expression twisted.

“Why are you laughing? When you're just a turtle with a big head!”

Hoonie, who flew off the handle, threatened Bbookbbook, but Bbookbbook didn't even blink.

This was because he trusted his guardian, Kaizar.

“You're being noisy, useless subordinate guy.”

Hoonie opened his mouth with a resentful expression.

“No, owner! Why are you sticking up for such a stupid turtle? What is he good for?”

However, without even giving him a glance, Kaizar replied with a lingering voice.

“Do you know how cooling it is to my head to use Bbookbbook as a pillow? On top of that, he provides cool water when I'm thirsty.”

After he was equipped with the inherent ability Curtain of Water, Bbookbbook had gained an ability to make water.

Kaizar's words continued.

“On the other hand, you kiddo, are good for absolutely nothing.”

“Ha...”

Bbookbbook, who clicked his tongue as he looked at Hoonie, stuck out his tongue as Hoonie glared at him before retreading into his shell.

At that, Hoonie's patience burst.

“Damn it... Just you wait, owner. I will get strong in an instant and return!”

With a gaze burning like a flame, Hoonie spun his body around and began to walk towards somewhere, and Kaizar threw a word at him as he did so.

“Return within a week, kiddo. The Lord guy said that the Kaimon dudes will raid us again in a week.”

Hoonie stopped in his tracks and while turning his head, he opened his mouth.

“You said I was useless! Why are you telling me to come back?”

“Still, when we’re fighting, it’s less boring when you’re next to me.”

“...”

“I think I’ve finally found a use for you kiddo.”

Hoonie, who felt his mood brighten for some odd reason at Kaizar’s words, furiously shook his head as he began to move his feet again.

‘I need to obtain the Power of the Immortal quickly even just for the fact that he plays dirty!’

While looking at Hoonie, who was getting conditioned by Kaizar little by little before he even realized, Bbookbbook wore an expression full of pity.

BbookBboo-bbook-.

And Kaizar, who turned his gaze towards Bbookbbook, suddenly opened his mouth.

“But, Bbookbbook, you, don’t you have to go to the Lord guy?”

Bbookbbook’s gaze began to slightly quiver.

Bboo-ook...?

Kaizar's words continued.

“Your friends are all carrying bricks over there right now, so is it okay for you to just be playing here like this?”

Bbookbbook, who felt attacked, glared at Kaizar.

BbookBboo-bbook-!

Kaizar, who was also guilty, pretended to be indifferent.

“Oh, me, well, my manpower is too high-class to be carrying bricks, and I usually don't listen to what the Lord guy says, so it's okay, but if you continue like this, your meatball supply may be cut off, no?”

Kaizar, who watched Bbookbbook's eyes shake, lied down splayed out.

“I'm just going to sleep a little more instead.”

\*

The temporary barracks of the rear Luspel base.

A total of about six or seven people were sitting around the round table with serious expressions.

They were none other than the Guild Masters of the giant guilds that were affiliated with the Luspel Empire.

Of course, the Masters of the 3 Guilds, Samuel Jin, Martin and Roy Chen, who had an emergency meeting the other day, were also included in there.

Roy Chen looked around at the whole assembly as he opened his mouth.

“Assuming that you all are well-aware of the current situation...”

Roy Chen’s gaze turned towards Samuel Jin.

“Samuel. What do you think about the DarkRuna Guild losing?”

At that question, Samuel Jin’s expression slightly darkened as he replied.

“What is the reason for asking me that?”

At that, Roy Chen hardened his expression as he replied.

“Are you acting like that because you don’t know? It’s because



the person that first proposed this plan is you, Samuel.”

“What kind of relation does that have to this situation...?”

While looking at Samuel Jin, who played innocent, Roy Chen opened his mouth again.

“As you probably know from watching the Lotus Guild put up a good fight, if we had actively supported them, we would have definitely been able to protect the bases of the mid-upper-ranked guilds on the front lines while blocking off the Kaimon Empire Army.”

While looking at the Lotus Guild’s recent battle, Roy Chen was regretting that he hadn’t stopped Samuel Jin and Martin a couple days ago.

‘Even if we didn’t make a strategy that was as selfish as this, there was certainly a different method to have blocked them off.’

The reason why he was regretting this was because there was definitely a feeling of apology towards the mid-upper-ranked guild that would be sacrificed at the front lines also included, but the biggest reason was loss on the empire’s part.

Right at this instant, the strategy of Samuel Jin didn’t look like there were many problems, but eventually, through their choice this time, the mid-upper-ranked guilds of the Luspel Empire have lost their foothold to grow in the central continent.

In that case, because the mid-upper-ranked guilds of the Luspel Empire wouldn't be able to help but continuously slow down compared to the mid-upper-ranked guilds of the Kaimon Empire, this would soon result into a critical weakening of the fighting power of the Luspel Empire.

As of now, as the fighting power of the users were much weaker than the empire army, it wasn't that noticeable, but as time passed, the influence of the users would grow more and more.

Roy Chen thought that there would certainly be a day that they would regret not having the fighting power of the mid-upper-ranked guilds, who were comparably weaker at the moment.

Samuel Jin, who was silent for a moment, stared at Roy Chen as he opened his mouth.

“Of course, I think that the Lotus Guild having blocked off the troops of the DarkRuna Guild is incredible. I also admit that it was a part that I hadn't predicted.”

The gazes of the whole assembly were gathered towards Samuel Jin's mouth, and his words continued again.

“However, if we exclude the domain of the Lotus Guild, there was not one army that had defensive power like theirs. No, if another guild had constructed even half of the defensive power that the Pyro Domain had, I would have thought of a different method.”

There was definitely some reason to Samuel Jin's words as well.

That could be figured out even just by looking at the war situation of the front lines right now.

Despite the bases of the other guilds having not received such a large-scale attack as the Pyro Domain, they were seized altogether without having even tried to resist.

A low sigh flowed out from Roy Chen's mouth.

'Hoo, Samuel's words aren't wrong, but we should have looked for a different method...'

The words that they should lead their troops out to the front lines and recapture the stolen bases even now were on the tip of his tongue, but Roy Chen couldn't do anything else but wear a bitter smile in the end.

'Now it is truly too late.'

Roy Chen's mouth opened.

"I think it is all of our faults from the beginning. I think we should have unified the guilds affiliated with the Luspel Empire much sooner. We should have used our strength to help with the construction of the defensive power of the guilds that had

possession over the front-line bases before we lost the central zone altogether to the Kaimon Empire Army...”

At those words, everybody nodded their head.

If they had even moved a little faster, then they wouldn't have given the central zone of the continent as a whole to them like this so easily.

Samuel Jin wore a bitter smile as he opened his mouth.

“We need to make the rear line of defense even stronger just like our original plan. If we continuously block off our opponents, I think we will get the chance to turn the tables around.”

Martin agreed with his words.

“Samuel Jin's words are right. When the chance comes, we must not lose it and just grab it.”

It was an atmosphere where it seemed like everybody was nodding their heads at the two people's words, but Roy Chen shook his head internally.

‘A gap that had begun to grow will just increase more like a snowball as more time passes, so how are they able to have such complacent thoughts...’

The guilds affiliated with the Kaimon Empire, who captured a perfect victory, will now roll up a snowball while definitely creating an even bigger gap.

Roy Chen shortly sighed as he came out of the temporary barracks.

‘But then again, since we’ve handled things so complacently up until now like this, that’s why we’ve been pushed back by the guilds affiliated with the Kaimon Empire continuously.’

The 3 guilds of the Luspel Empire always showed movements that were one step too late compared to the DarkRuna Guild and the Titan Guild, who were first and second place in the overall guild rankings.

And that gap continuously piled, and, in the end, this current situation seemed to have occurred.

Roy Chen moved his feet towards the guild base.

The only thing that he could do right now was raise his internal stability even by a little before the Kaimon Empire Army drew close.

\*

Meanwhile, as they were almost going into the finishing stage of the construction of the collapsed line of defense, Ian left the

domain alone.

It was the fault of his body itching as he had rested from battle for two days.

‘Before we’re surrounded by the Kaimon Empire Army, I should hunt as much as possible.’

As not all of the bases surrounding them were seized, if he was just careful, it was possible to go around the field while hunting.

However, once they were completely surrounded by the empire army, they wouldn’t be able to budge and just be shut into the domain.

‘Before the next defensive war occurs, if I could hatch the God Dragon, that would really hit the spot.’

Ian, who moved his feet while thinking of this and that, turned his head towards Bbookbbook, who followed right beside him, as he opened his mouth.

“Bbookbbook.”

Bbook-?

“By any chance, is there anything like an undiscovered dungeon around here?”

As Bbookbbook had shown a surprising exploration ability to the point Ian wondered if he was sometimes a hidden-piece hunter, Ian stared at him with slight anticipation.

However, Bbookbbook shook his head.

BbookBboo-bbook-.

Just then, as Ian sighed deeply with a disappointed expression.

Kaizar, who was following behind Ian with an apathetic expression, said something that was unexpected.

“Lord guy.”

“What is it, retainer?”

“I don’t know about anything like undiscovered dungeons, but I know of a place that you would be interested in.”

As they were the words of Kaizar, who whisked through the central continent battleground like it was his stage ever since a long time ago, Ian was delighted as he asked.

“Oh, retainer! Is there something you know about?”

Kaizar nodded his head as he replied.

“It was a place that I had also forgotten about, but I suddenly just remembered.”

Ian’s curiosity amplified even more.

“Where, where is it? Tell me quickly.”

As Ian continuously pressed him, Kaizar, who paused for a moment to take a breath, frowned, blasting him away.

“I won’t tell you if you keep annoying me.”

At that, as Ian, who recoiled in surprise, wore a sullen expression, Kaizar smirked as he continued his words.

“If you continue north-west from the Grave of Holdream, there is a giant rocky mountain.”

Including Ian, even Paulean and Celia, who were next to him, began to listen carefully to Kaizar’s words.

“And if you clear the giant boulder that is halfway up the rocky mountain, there is a place called the Altar of Selamus.”

“Selamus?”



Ian tilted his head at the name that he felt like he heard somewhere before, and from somewhere out of the blue, an exclamation burst out.

The owner of the voice was Bbakbbak, who had been following behind Ian quietly.

- Selamus! Oh, to have thought that I would hear the name Selamus again!

# Chapter 168: The Summoner of the Central Continent (2)

---

Ian was delighted as he asked.

“Oh, is it someone you also know, Bbakbbak?”

At Ian’s question, Bbakbbak nodded his head as he replied.

- I know them well. However, Selamus is not the name of a person.

“Then?”

Bbakbbak’s words continued.

- It is the name of one of the neutral tribes of the ancient central continent.

Ian, who thought about it for a moment, asked again.

“Are they like... The desert warriors?”

This time, Kaizar replied.

“That’s right, Lord guy. If the name of the tribe of desert warriors that are helping the Kaimon Empire right now is

‘Magellan’, then you can think of it as another desert tribe called ‘Selamus’ existed before as well.”

“...!”

Ian’s two eyes rounded.

Since if he could earn an artifact that was similar to the ‘Mark of Magellan’ from the Altar of Selamus, it would be an incredible help.

Ian opened his mouth again.

“Then, is there nothing like the Mark of Selamus or something like that?”

Kaizar, who figured out what Ian was thinking of, smirked as he replied.

“Huhu, unfortunately, there’s probably nothing like that. Since it’s known that the people of Selamus were exterminated a long time ago.”

Ian licked his lips.

“Tsk, it was good until that. But, why are you saying that it’s a place that I will be interested in?”

“Since even though there may not be an artifact that brings the strength of a neutral tribe like the Mark of Magellan, you may be able to find other artifacts with different abilities.”

At Kaizar’s words, Ian nodded his head as he thought to himself.

‘But then again, if it’s a place that I’m the first discoverer of, at least there will probably be some kind of first discoverer’s reward.’

And Bbakbbak made an additional remark.

The content of it was enough to tempt Ian.

- And amongst the powerful neutral tribes that ruled over the ancient central continent, the Selamus tribe was the only tribe that was composed of Summoners.

Ian’s head turned towards Bbakbbak.

“What, really?”

And he slightly glared at Kaizar.

“Retainer, why didn’t you tell me such important information?”

However, Kaizar just shrugged his shoulders.

\*

“Alright, from now on, you’re on your own now! People who want to remain at the front and fight head-on with the Kaimon Empire Army can go to the barracks over there and sign up to become a mercenary, and if that’s not the case, it would be best to entrust your body in a domain affiliated with the empire.”

At the words of the chief knight of the imperial family, the party that stood in a line began to disperse here and there.

They were the reinforcements of the Luspel Empire that departed from the eastern continent and arrived at the central continent.

And the users of the Luspel Empire that came over to the central continent by joining the line of reinforcements also began to move busily.

“Hoo-hoot, finally, entry into the central continent!”

Canoel[1], who left the party, wore a pleased expression as he looked around at his surroundings.

“Keu, such a romantic desert. I heard that the monsters of the central continent give that much EXP, so then does that mean I just have mass-leveling left?”

Canoel grinned as he turned his head towards the red drake that followed his side.

“Yongyong, you also like it here, right?”

The drake was Yongyong, who could be considered a duplicate of Canoel’s spirit.

Keu-reu-reu-reu-!

The drake nodded its head with a happy expression, and while petting the drake’s head, Canoel mumbled.

“Hmm, but I have no information related to the hunting grounds here... Do I have to log out and look around the community first?”

However, just then, from Canoel’s field of vision, two men walked out as they shared a conversation.

Canoel listened carefully to the two people’s conversation.

This was because he felt like he could obtain the information he needed from them.

“What are you going to do now? Are you going to sign up as a mercenary and fight on the front lines?”

“Why are you saying such stupid things? We’re losing every battle against Kaimon right now, so participating in the battle at the front lines is an act of suicide.”

“Still, I heard that the reward was really good, so it’s not bad to participate.”

“You don’t know what you’re talking about. In the beginning it may have been like that, but as we’ve been pushed back too much, apparently you don’t get a lot of rewards either.”

While listening to the two people’s conversation, CanoeI nodded his head internally.

‘Hmm... I did hear that we were losing in the war, but it looks like the situation is much more serious than expected.’

The conversation between the two men continued.

“Hmm... Really?”

“I’m telling you, that’s the case.”

“Then what are you going to do?”

“I’m thinking of going to a giant guild’s domain that’s in the back and save there before hunting nearby.”

“Oh-ho, that sounds pretty good as well. But I want to go visit the Pyro Domain once. Let’s stop there before we go.”

“Pyro Domain? Ah, you must be talking about the Lotus Guild’s domain. I also want to go there, but that might be a little dangerous.”

“Why?”

“The Kaimon Empire Army has probably seized most of the bases that are around it by now. It will be okay if we’re lucky and don’t run into the Empire Army... But if we run into them, we’ll end up instantly suffering a terrible death.”

“Hmm... Is that so?”

Canoel, who was listening to the two people’s conversation, began to move his feet.

It was because he had decided on his destination.

‘That’s right, how could I have forgotten that! I came all the way to the central continent, so I can’t just not go to meet my idol!’

The idol that Canoel was talking about was none other than Ian.

After Canoel watched a couple of Ian’s combat videos on YouCast, he had become a complete fan of Ian.

Ian’s combat abilities, where he was able to rule over the



battleground while managing his Familiars quite freely, was his idea of a perfect utopia.

‘Alright, then it looks like I just need to find out where the Pyro Domain is now!’

After discovering a Knight user that was walking towards him from the front, Canoel approached him with quick footsteps.

Different from the other users, whose appearances were clean as they just arrived at the central continent, his armour was completely covered in sand.

Even just by looking at him, he could sense that he was a user that had been in the central continent for a long time already.

“Excuse me, sorry, but could I ask you something?”

“Yes, go ahead.”

“It’s nothing much, but I was wondering if you knew which direction you had to go in order to go to the Pyro Domain by any chance.”

At Canoel’s words, the man, who had looked over his appearance, wore a puzzled expression as he asked back.

“The Pyro Domain? You’re talking about the Domain of the Lotus

Guild, right?”

“Yes. That’s right.”

“Hmm... Your level is too low...”

The man’s gaze was on Canoel’s ID and level.

- Summoner Canoel – Lv 100

As Canoel, who was taken aback, hesitated, the man’s words continued.

“Well, still, you’ve equipped yourself completely with top-class gear. As long as you’ve got some control, I think you’ll be able to manage getting there.”

To Canoel, who was the heir of SH Electronics in real life, his lv 100 top-class gear was basically the price of gum to him, and it may be obvious, but he had plastered every part on him with just the top-class items.

Canoel smiled brightly as he opened his mouth.

“Ah, what a relief. My control is actually not that bad, so, huhu.”

The man, who smirked, pointed in the direction with his finger

as he began explaining.

“Go straight out that way...”

Seu-reu-reuk-.

“What, what the-?”

Ian, who was walking, became flustered after seeing the sand underneath his feet move.

“Kaizar, are you sure we’re able to go this way?”

Kaizar nodded his head as he replied with an expression like it was no big deal.

“Yes. Why would I lie to you?”

Kaizar, who finished speaking, walked forward with big strides.

And shortly after, Ian’s two eyes couldn’t help but widen.

Swaaah-!

That was because the sand blew up into a vortex-like shape as it sucked in Kaizar.

And Kaizar vanished completely from his spot.

The expression that he sunk into the ground was a little more accurate.

“Huk!”

While Ian was taken aback, Bbakbbak, who was next to him, opened his mouth.

- Owner, I feel Kaizar’s strength from inside there. I think that’s the entrance of the altar that Kaizar was talking about.

“You, you think so?”

Because the scene where he was swallowed by the sand was quite shocking, his feet didn’t move easily, but Ian slowly began to move.

“It’s not like there’s a weird desert monster underneath and I’ll end up getting eaten or something, right?”

And before Ian could even take five steps...

“Aaack-!”

Along with a single cry, Ian's body was sucked into the desert sand.

And Paulean and Celia, who followed behind him, also moved their feet.

Seu-seu-seuk-.

Shortly after, the pile of sand that had swallowed the whole party, returned to its calm state as if nothing had happened.

- 'The Altar of Selamus', which holds the history of ancient summoning, has been discovered for the first time.
- Your Fame has increased by 10 thousand.
- All combat abilities have permanently increased by 10.
- Your Leadership and Affinity have permanently increased by 50 each.

Along with the sound of the system messages that rang out one after another, Ian fell into the dark, secret cave.

Thud-.

- Due to a fall in a defenseless state, your Vitality has been decreased by 175.

Ian, who plummeted onto the ground after being completely covered in sand, grumbled to himself.

“Ah, this, does it have to be this mentally disorganizing and inhospitable?”

However, aside from his complaining mouth, he was all smiles.

Since the reward that he received as the first discoverer was better than what he expected.

‘It’s a gift from the gods! I don’t know about anything else, but increased Leadership and Affinity alone are already like honey.’

Once the whole party gathered after a moment, Ian began to move his feet again.

“Kaizar, is this place that altar that you were talking about?”

At Ian’s question, Kaizar nodded his head without hesitation.

“That’s right. This is also a place that I found by chance while wandering the battleground back then.”

With Kaizar at the head, the party slowly began to walk towards the inside, and the dark, secret cave began to brighten little by little.

‘Hmm, it definitely does look like there will be something in there...’

However, just then, an unwelcoming system message popped up.

- This is a sealed underground area with limited oxygen.
- Your movements have been slowed by 10%, and 0.1% of your maximum Vitality will be decreased per second.
- Your Vitality has been reduced by 127.

Ian frowned.

“What the hell, you could even die through lack of oxygen?”

If 0.1% of his Vitality was reduced per second, then it meant that his Vitality would be completely depleted in about 17 minutes.

Of course, he could endure it through Vitality recovery items or skills, but because everybody’s Vitality was reduced, there was no mistake that it was an incredibly fussy circumstance.

Kaizar laughed at Ian.

“You lack training. I don’t receive any damage with just this much oxygen.”

And amongst the party members, only Kaizar was fine.

Ian shook his head.

‘As expected, a monster.’

As they slowly entered while managing their Vitalities, the secret cave widened little by little.

And shortly after, an open space appeared in front of the party’s eyes, and in the middle of it, a giant, golden bronze statue stood.

The statue looked like a monster serpent that was flying up into the air as if it was ascending, and in front of that an elder with a giant greatsword on his back.

Ian asked Kaizar with a puzzled expression.

“Retainer, do you know that elder?”  
Kaizar nodded his head.

“Of course, I know him.”

Kaizar, who paused for a moment to take a breath, grinned as he slowly opened his mouth.



“You could say he’s the only elderly still alive after facing me with a sword.”

[1] Canoel is the son of a wealthy family and heir of SH Electronics, who spends a ton of money in-game without really researching how to properly play the game.

# Chapter 169: The Summoner of the Central Continent (3)

---

At Kaizar's words, Ian looked at the elder with a renewed gaze.

‘If they had survived after fighting Kaizar, does that mean that they are at least the same level?’

Either way, it was clear that they were a fearsome person, and Ian checked the cooldown times of his skills so they could start fighting immediately.

However, different from Ian who was careful, Kaizar approached the elder with long strides and spoke to him.

“Long time, no see, old man.”

And the elder, who slightly glanced at Kaizar, frowned as he opened his mouth.

- You scoundrel, speak properly. Am I alive right now? I'm dead. I wouldn't be a ghost if I didn't die by your hands ten years ago.

While looking at him grumble, Kaizar smirked.

“Ah, is that how it works?”

While the two spoke, Ian approached the two until he was right in front of them, and the gaze of the elder turned towards Ian.

- Who is this child? Did you take in a disciple? Ah, that probably isn't it. That is, since you wouldn't have taken in a Summoner as a disciple.

Kaizar, who burst out laughing, replied shortly.

“He's the Lord guy that I serve.”

Ian protested with a quiet voice.

“Could you just call me Lord instead?”

“Don't want to. You're too weak to do that.”

“...”

Kaizar pointed to the elder as he opened his mouth again.

“Once you become as strong as that senile old man, I'll consider it.”

“Ahem...”

Ian's gaze turned towards the elder, and he met the two eyes of

the elder, who was also naturally looking at him.

Ian opened his mouth towards the elder.

“What’s your name, mister?”

- Who you calling mister? I am the Guardian of the Selamus Tribe, Eclipse. Speaking of which, for you to be the Lord with Kaizar as a retainer. To think such thing was possible. Even if I don’t know how you talked that ignorant guy into it, you’re quite skilled.

“ ... ”

Eclipse shot out words without rest like rapid-fire.

The words ‘you just need to pay tribute one Legendary-rank item’ were on the tip of his tongue, but he barely swallowed them back before opening his mouth.

“It just happened... But, then are you also a Summoner, mister?”

Eclipse suddenly burst out as he replied.

- I’m telling you, it’s not mister! Call me Eclipse! It is my honorable name.

Ian sighed as he spoke.

“Ah, understood, Eclipse. Just answer me.”

- That’s right, I’m a Summoner. However, I’m also a valiant Warrior as well.

At Eclipse’s words, Ian wore a puzzled expression.

‘What the hell? Is he saying that dual-classing is possible?’

The moment that Ian, who wore an interested expression, was about to ask something, Kaizar opened his mouth first.

“Eclipse, what do you think?”

- About what?

“I’m asking if it is our Lord guy, do you think that he has the right to face the Test of Selamus.”

It was obvious, but Ian, who didn’t understand what he was talking about, stared back and forth at the two people with a dumbfounded expression, and shortly after, Eclipse’s mouth slowly opened.

- Hmm, certainly...

The words of Eclipse, who had thoroughly looked up and down at Ian, continued.

- He'll certainly be better than an ignorant guy like you. He's not satisfying, but it's worth giving him a chance if his standards are like this.

Kaizar was grinning, and with an expression showing that he didn't know the reason, Ian asked Paulean, who stood next to him.

“Paulean, do you understand what they're talking about?”

However, there was no way that Paulean would know.

“No, I have no idea.”

However, just then, a quest notification window suddenly popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

Ring-.

- Test of the Selamus Tribe (Hidden, connected quest)

Many neutral tribes existed in the ancient central continent.

Even amongst them, the Selamus, a tribe that showed incredible power that was in the top, were exterminated after fighting against the giant, god-like people, who were infected with the Curse of the

Immortal, and just their leader remained through the underground altar.

Eclipse, the Guardian of the Selamus Tribe, has discovered the potential to regain the glory of Selamus and the glory of Summoners within you.

He is planning on testing you.

If you pass all of his tests, you can obtain the power of the Selamus Tribe, which had been buried in the sand of the central continent.

Quest Difficulty Level: SS

Quest Condition

A Summoner User that has obtained over a fixed amount of Specialty Points in the central continent.

Time Limit: None.

Reward: A Skill Book Containing the Vision of Selamus (Random)

The Spirit King's Judgment Item (Random Weapon)

Ian thoroughly read through the quest window.

However, truthfully, even just from the part on the very first line that read that it was a hidden, connected quest, Ian had already made up his mind.

‘Just from reading that, I have no idea what the reward even is, But surely it must be something incredibly good, right?’

Eclipse slowly opened his mouth towards Ian.

- Summoner from the eastern continent, will you accept the Test of Selamus?

His voice and way of speaking were heavier than any other time before, to the point it was hard to adjust to.

Ian immediately nodded his head as he replied.

“Hmm, I’ll give it a try, I guess.”

\*

“Goddammit, what exactly am I supposed to do in order to beat that monster dude?”

Hoonie, who talked big to Kaizar and stormed out of the Pyro Domain, was running through nearby dungeons as he diligently hunted.



‘However, it’s going to be difficult to go up even 1 level like this... The EXP that I got while participating in the siege warfare with Ian was truly like honey.’

Just yesterday.

Hoonie had succeeded in collecting all of dark energy that was within the crown of Holdream that Kaizar had into a wooden tag.

And in order to obtain freedom, he challenged Kaizar.

However, the result was an overwhelming loss to the point it was embarrassing to mention.

Hoonie tried to forcibly destroy the contract by using the 100 thousand Fame that he had been saving as his trump card, but there was no way that would have worked.

That was because, from the beginning, the destruction of the master and servant contract was only possible along with the 100 thousand Fame if Kaizar wanted it.

Ballam, who was next to Hoonie, spoke to him.

- The only way is to obtain the Power of the Immortal entirely, Hoonie. You cannot beat Kaizar with a normal method.

At Ballam's words, Hoonie nodded his head.

However, it wasn't like he could proceed with the Immortal quest right away anyways.

Since the three days that Kaizar gave him were too short to even start the Immortal quest.

It was because of that he resorted to randomly hunting like this.

“Once the Pyro Domain is safe, I should get Ian involved and get him to do the Immortal quest with me.”

Ballam nodded his head in agreement.

- Yeah, that's a good idea. If Lord Ian helps, it will probably become much easier to even successfully complete the quest.

“But will mean Ian actually help...”

However, just then, one boy caught the gaze of Hoonie, who was grumbling while he spoke with Ballam.

It was a Summoner and a red drake, and they were struggling with a Sand Scorpion that looked to be about lv 130.

Hoonie, who became interested, slowly approached him.

“What is he doing? Why exactly is a lv 100-ish Summoner in the middle of the central continent like that?”

Even by roughly looking from far away, he had poor control and combat abilities.

Of course, as the only Summoner he had been constantly seeing recently was Ian, Hoonie’s standards were high.

However, the fact that the Summoner in front of him was weird was also not wrong.

Ballam tilted his head.

- I’m not sure... Anyhow, that drake looks similar to the drake Lord Ian has. It’s just a little smaller, that is.

Meanwhile, the boy of question, who the two people were watching, was none other than Canoel.

“Yongyong, I think we’ll have to attack the tail first!”

Grr-!

“I’ll try and properly block the attack from the front!”

Canoel was fighting desperately against the giant scorpion with every ounce in him to the point he had no idea that Hoonie had gotten so close that he was right behind him.

However, shortly after discovering something, Hoonie's eyes rounded.

“That, that's!”

Ballam asked with a puzzled expression.

- What's wrong, Hoonie?

“Ballam, do you see that belt by any chance?”

At that, Ballam's gaze turned towards the belt that Canoel had equipped.

- ...!

“That's it, right? That's the Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness, for sure!”

The Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness was one of the necessary items required for Hoonie to proceed in the Immortal Quest.

‘I have no idea why someone like him has that equipped on when he’s not even a Black Magician, but...’

Hoonie pulled out the staff hanging on his back without hesitation as he charged towards the scorpion.

At that, Ballam, who was taken aback, asked out of surprise.

- What are you doing, Hoonie!

Hoonie cast his black magic as he shouted.

“We need to save that guy first before we can ask, no?”

\*

Whoong-

Thu-thud- Keu-keu-keung-!

Along with a low resonance and a loud fricative sound, the boulder in the back of the wide-open space moved to the side as a new space appeared.

Eclipse walked slowly as he entered the space.

- Come in here, Ian.

“Sure.”

Ian, who followed behind Eclipse without much thought, couldn't help but become flustered shortly after.

Ring-.

This was because, along with a notification sound, a truly unexpected system message had popped up.

- You have entered the first territory of the Selamus Test's Gateway.
- This is a space Familiars cannot be handled.
- All Familiars that are summoned have been withdrawn.
- The abilities of all equipment have been incapacitated.
- All possessed skills have been sealed.
- Only the equipment and skills given within the gateway of the Selamus Test's Gateway may be used.

It was truly an outrageous penalty where all of his hands and feet were tied together.

Even if the other parts were set aside, the penalty of not being able to summon his Familiars was incredibly critical to Ian.

‘No, what are they expecting a Summoner to do without their Familiars?’

Ian stared at Eclipse with a flustered expression.

“What... Is this?”

At Ian’s question, which was full of a lot of different meanings, Eclipse smirked as he replied.

- What do you mean ‘what is this’? It’s exactly as you saw just now. Our Selamus Tribe only acknowledges one as a true warrior when they know how to make their way through a difficult hurdle even without the help of any equipment or Familiars.

“What the hell...”

Ian, who opened his skill window and item window with a dumbfounded expression, couldn’t help but let out a deep sigh.

All of his skills were sealed, and all of the stats of his items were replaced with 0.

Eclipse opened his mouth.

“No, setting aside the other parts, what are you expecting a Summoner to do without a Familiar?”

Eclipse grinned as he continued his words.

- That is something that depends on your abilities. For your information, I’m also a Summoner, but I passed the whole test with all of these penalties.

Eclipse, who finished speaking, walked out through the back side of the space.

Ian barely held back the slur of swear words that were about to pop out of his mouth as he suppressed his anger.

‘No, that was only possible for you, since you’re an NPC that the developers made!’

And as soon as he left, a blue curtain that was about 20 metres in diameter formed with the place that Ian was standing as its centre.

‘Is it similar method to when we had to go through the Dimensional Magic Tower to meet Gripper?’

Ian, whose state was no different from a completely naked body, slowly relaxed and began to prepare to fight the opponents that would appear soon.



However, just then, another system message popped up.

- You may select one weapon to use for this gateway.

Amongst the messages that he had seen after entering this flustering space, it was the first positive message that had appeared.

However, in the next moment, Ian's expression, which had brightened, couldn't help but turn into a frown again.

- Different kinds of weapons are inside each box, and until you select one, you will not know the content of them.

Along with the message, five black boxes appeared in front of Ian.

‘How could there be such a cruel system like this?’

Internally, his stomach hurt, but as there was no other method. Ian slowly placed his hand on one of the boxes.

# Chapter 170: The Summoner of the Central Continent (4)

---

Ian, who had placed his hand on the third box, hesitated for a moment.

‘Sure, well, since it’s completely random anyways. Still, it would be great if something like a bow or a magic wand appeared.’

Ian, who finished his momentary contemplation, nodded his head.

“Sure, I’ll go with this.”

- Weapon selection has been completed.

Along with the message, the weapon floated in the air.

However, unfortunately, it was not one of the kinds of weapons that Ian wanted.

‘What is this? A greatsword?’

A giant, dark-coloured greatsword, which was comparable to Hellaim’s greatsword, had appeared in front of Ian’s eyes.

As Ian grasped the handle of the greatsword, a message popped

up again.

- You have selected the weapon, 'The Judgment Sword of the Spirit King'.

And along with the message, a bright white glow permeated the greatsword, which looked black in colour, as its blinding figure was revealed.

Ian took in a sharp breath of air without realizing.

“Hut!”

It was because the outer appearance of the greatsword was incredibly beautiful.

The golden pattern that was inlaid into the white blade gave off a very luxurious feeling.

Ian instinctively checked the information of the item, but he couldn't help but be disappointed.

That was because all of the options were sealed.

The only fortunate thing was that the weapon's Offensive Power still remained at least.

‘How is the Offensive Power of a greatsword 1500? This is crazy.

It must be at least a Legendary-rank item.'

And while Ian was having such thoughts, Eclipse's ghost appeared next to Ian.

- You have selected the greatsword. I don't know if you'll be able to properly use the Judgment Sword with such a weak-looking body, but good luck to you.

Ian turned his gaze towards Eclipse as he asked.

"What do I need to do now, though?"

Eclipse's words continued.

And his explanation was quite long.

- The warriors of our Selamus Tribe are divided into a total of five ranks depending on one's combat abilities. The lowest rank being a D-rank, and from there, it goes up in the order C, B, A, and S.

After pausing for a moment to breathe, his words continued.

- Starting now, an imaginary Selamus warrior with the exact same condition as you will appear. Starting with the D-rank, a warrior one rank higher will appear in order.

Ian asked.

“If it’s someone that is the exact same rank as I am, does that mean our combat abilities are the same as well?”

Eclipse nodded his head.

- A Selamus warrior that has been set to have all the same stats as you will appear.

Internally, Ian let out a sigh of relief.

‘If our stats are completely the same, whatever comes out, I’ll chew them up.’

As Ian had never thought that he fell behind anyone in VR when it came to control, it was confidence that he could have.

“I see. Please continue to explain.”

Eclipse opened his mouth again.

- I have no idea how high of a ranked warrior you will be able to win against, but the rank that you succeeded in winning against will be set as your rank, and afterwards, the gateway will match the difficulty level according to that rank.

“I see.”

Ian felt a desire to win bubble up from deep within his heart.

‘If I’m not an S-rank, who else would receive an S-rank?’

He had already forgone taking into account the penalty that he had picked a greatsword, which he had barely even used before.

He just felt interest towards the new combat condition that he had never experienced before.

‘Well, since I’ve used a greatsword in other VR games a lot before too.’

Eclipse’s words continued again.

- For now, I will continue the explanation on the next gateway after you are graded a rank.

“Understood.”

At Ian’s expression that looked like it was full of confidence, Eclipse smirked as he spoke.

- Good luck to you. I hope that Kaizar’s discernment will not disappoint me.

As Ian slightly turned his head, he could see Kaizar, who was watching him with an interested expression from outside of the

arena.

‘If I can’t even pass a low rank, Kaizar will probably ignore me even more than he already does, right?’

On the other hand, at the thought that Kaizar’s attitude might even change a little if he at least gained an S-rank, Ian fired up his will even more.

- Let’s start.

Eclipse’s ghost disappeared as a blue light slowly appeared in its place.

And soon, that light took on a form and became a burly-looking, adult male.

He was holding the same weapon as Ian.

‘I just need to beat him, right?’

The corners of Ian’s mouth slightly rolled upwards as he tightened his hold on the greatsword.

And in the next moment, he charged forward like an arrow.

‘First attack leads to unfailing victory.’

Because of the heavy weight of the greatsword, it was impossible to control it unless both hands were used.

Ian bent his body back like a bow, and he swung down the greatsword which he had pulled up from behind his right shoulder.

Cla-ang-!

Along with a weighted noise, the two greatswords clashed.

The Selamus warrior blocked Ian's sword in a relaxed manner as they attempted a counter-attack.

'I knew this would happen.'

When it came to any attacks using a greatsword, the movements couldn't help but inevitably be large.

That's why if you weren't careful with all of your attacks, it was easy to get hit by a counter, so it also happened to be a difficult weapon to handle.

The Selamus Warrior that lifted his sword and blocked Ian's attack immediately shot out forward towards Ian's chest.

Cla-cla-cla-clang-!



Ian slightly twisted the course of his sword that was swinging downwards and pushed his opponent's sword away.

“Hmph!”

In the next moment, along with a short shout of concentration, Ian jumped up into the air.

He forced the greatsword that was being pushed down into the ground, and Ian, who used that rebound to jump, dodged the sword in a relaxed manner as he moved behind the Selamus warrior.

‘Now it's my turn!’

A counter-attack to a counter-attack.

Ian, who lightly landed, diagonally swung his greatsword, which was naturally laying low to the ground, upwards.

Chwa-reu-reuk-!

He moved his body quickly, but the Selamus warrior, who got a long gash to his side, frowned as he regained his stance again.

And Ian also tightened his grip on his sword again as he began to focus on the opponent.

‘I couldn’t deal as much damage as I hoped for. It seems that since he took my stats exactly as they are, his reflexes are quite high.’

Amongst his combat abilities, Ian’s reflexes were the highest.

And fitting of that stat, his opponent’s movements were incredibly agile.

Stomp-Stomp-

Ian and the Selamus warrior moved little by little by taking small sidesteps as they watched for a weak point in their opponents.

While the Selamus warrior was expressionless, Ian’s expression was incredibly serious.

That was because it had truly been a while since he had fought one-on-one only with control like this and without any other advantage or disadvantage.

Setting aside whether he succeeded in the quest or not, Ian was truly enjoying this battle on its own.

Sweeeek-!

Piercing through the momentary silence, the Selamus warrior’s

sword attack flew through.

Both of Ian's hands, which reacted quickly, met with his opponent's attacks as they began to dance here and there.

Clang-Cla-clang-Clang-!

The offensive and defensive battle continued.

However, as the engagement grew longer little by little, Ian slowly began to find his groove.

'You're basically just going to keep jabbing and testing the waters, huh?'

While looking at his opponent, who just continuously went with qualitative motions with his greatsword, Ian slightly rolled up a corner of his mouth.

'You've made a mistake.'

Thanks to his opponent, who had a defensive combat tendency, Ian was able to find his groove much easier in comparison.

Ian wagged his finger towards his opponent.

"Are you just planning on continuously testing the waters like

that? You should try and properly attack me now.”

As his imaginary opponent definitely didn't have any emotions, he didn't think that his provoking would actually work, but it seemed it did this time, as his opponent began to charge at him.

Grabbing the handle of his greatsword with one hand, Ian hung low against the ground.

It was a situation where it seemed like he would just be directly hit if he didn't lift his sword up quickly and block the attack, but Ian was relaxed.

‘Shall I gamble a little?’

Focusing his gaze on the white sword that rushed towards his forehead, Ian instead threw his body forward.

“...!”

It seemed that the Selamus warrior was slightly surprised at the unexpected action, as his expression slightly wavered, but he swung down his sword without hesitation.

Whoong-!

However, his greatsword couldn't help but let out an empty sound as it ripped through the air.

“So long, dude!”

Ian, who avoided the sword that dropped down by a whisker, spun his greatsword with all of his fighting power.

Whoong-!

Ian wasn't even holding the greatsword with both hands.

While holding the greatsword's handle with his right hand, he had swung the sword that he had laid flat with all of his strength.

It was indeed a dangerous attack with no backing, and the moment he failed at attacking, he would end up showing all of his weak points.

However, if he succeeded in attacking, it was a different story.

Koo-deu-deuk-Bang-!

The greatsword that Ian was holding had directly hit the back of the Selamus warrior.

In a completely defenseless state, the Selamus warrior had allowed a huge attack to hit him.

“Kuh-huk!”

Even letting go of the sword that he was holding, he was thrown onto the ground and just lied there like that.

Ian grinned as he lifted his sword and aimed it at his opponent.

“You’re supposed to use the greatsword for this feeling.”

As its movements were huge, it wasn’t easy to successfully land an attack, but once a big attack lands, the weapon that could deal an enormous amount of damage was the greatsword.

If it was an attack like the one that Ian just successfully landed, he could deal over ten times the amount of damage compared to the damage he would normally deal with the same stats.

Ian stared at the opponent as he mumbled.

“Hey, you, you probably still have some Vitality left, yet you’re just going to keep lying down like that?”

As soon as Ian’s words were done, the Selamus warrior slowly stood up.

However, shortly after, he turned into a faint light and disappeared into the air, and in that spot, Eclipse’s ghost appeared again.

Clap-Clap- Clap-.

Eclipse, who appeared while clapping his hands, opened his mouth with a satisfied expression.

- How surprising. I was truly surprised because your fighting senses are greater than I expected.

At his genuine compliment, Ian replied with a pleased expression.

“Huhu, the greatsword is indeed a truly charming weapon.”

At his words, Eclipse wore a broad smile as he replied.

- Oh, son, you know something. That’s right, the greatsword is the weapon that you could call the symbol of a valiant warrior.

While looking at the greatsword hanging on Eclipse’s back, Ian laughed to himself.

‘Now that I look at it, that man’s weapon is a greatsword.’

Eclipse’s words continued.

- There is a reason why the sword is called the king of ten thousand weapons. Since the sword is the weapon that is the basis of all weapons, that is.

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“You’re right, Eclipse. I also agree.”

And shortly after, the greatsword that was in Ian’s hands disappeared into the air like a mirage.

At that, Ian wore an interested expression as he asked.

“Oh-ho, does my weapon change each time?”

Eclipse nodded his head.

- That’s right. Are you disappointed that you cannot use a greatsword?

Eclipse had thought that the weapon that Ian mainly used was the greatsword.

But then again, it was because Ian used the greatsword so proficiently.

However, Ian was not disappointed at all.



“No, rather, it’s fun.”

Eclipse, who thought that Ian’s confidence was a bluff, burst out laughing.

- Let’s see if you can continue to maintain that confidence.

Eclipse disappeared into the air while laughing loudly, and in his spot, five black boxes began to appear again.

And along with that, a system message popped up in front of Ian’s eyes.

- You have successfully suppressed the D-rank Selamus warrior.
- As you have succeeded in suppressing them overwhelmingly in a short amount of time, you have jumped straight over the C-rank.

“...?”

At the unexpected message, Ian’s two eyes slightly grew.

The messages continued.

- Please select the weapon that you will use in battle. The weapon that you used in the last battle is excluded.

Ian grumbled to himself.

‘What do you mean select. You don’t even show me what they are.’

However, Ian couldn’t help but be surprised in the next moment.

This was because the black boxes became faint and in their spots, different kinds of weapons appeared.

# Chapter 171: The Strongest Selamus Warrior (1)

---

Canoel's sparkling eyes were watching Hoonie.

'He's an incredibly powerful person. This is my first time seeing such a strong Black Magician!'

Hoonie had lost his sense of existence as he was hidden by the shadow of Ian, or more specifically, the shadow of Ian's retainer, Kaizar.

However, to be honest, Hoonie was one of the strongest Black Magicians in the Korean server.

Hoonie's level was a whopping 145.

He had the ability to eliminate a Sand Scorpion around lv 130 in an instant.

Of course, the fighting power of lv 170 Death Knight Ballam, who was next to him, also played a part.

With a curt tone, Hoonie spoke to Canoel.

"No, why did a low-level like you come to the central continent? At that level, it will probably be faster leveling up by finding a party in the northern continent and run through dungeons."

“Huh? But the EXP given here is over 10 times more than what you receive in the northern continent.”

“No, that’s only when you stay alive and hunt properly. Looking at you fight, it’s like you’re walking on thin ice. You’ll probably die every time you raise your EXP by 1%. Ah, no. Will you be able to even catch a monster?”

At Hoonie’s cold words that struck home, Canoel slightly flinched, but he regained his composure shortly after and replied.

“I’m not as strong as you, but still, I raised my EXP quite a bit while coming all the way over here.”

Hoonie stared at Canoel with a doubtful look.

‘Hmm... I don’t really believe him after seeing him struggle with a Sand Scorpion...’

However, as such things weren’t that important, Hoonie nodded through before continuing his words.

“Well, if that’s the case, that’s a relief.”

Hoonie’s gaze turned back to the Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness that Canoel had equipped on his waist.

“By the way, where did you get that belt?”

At Hoonie’s words, Canoel, who checked his belt once, shrugged his shoulders as he replied.

“Ah, this. I joined a Puppet of the Immortal dungeon attack just the day before I came here.”

Hoonie’s gaze began to slightly shake.

“And... So?”

The Puppet of the Immortal dungeon was an incredibly famous dungeon amongst the users.

It was a dungeon that users between lv 80-100 usually went to, and because the main monsters were Skeleton Soldiers, which gave a lot of EXP in comparison to their weak fighting power, it was popular.

Especially for Black Magicians, as there were a lot of related quests as well, so it happened to be a course that they absolutely needed to pass through.

And Hoonie knew that the epic monster that appeared in the last floor of the puppet dungeon dropped the belt, the ‘Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness’, which Canoel had equipped on.

‘However, the change to obtain the Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness from there is seriously the same rate as winning the lottery... Was the drop rate 0.1%?’

Hoonie had cleared the Puppet of the Immortal dungeon dozens of times. However, as he thought about how it was an item that he had never received despite his efforts, yet that dumb Summoner received it, his stomach began to hurt.

However, it was now just the beginning of Canoel rubbing it in.

“Was it the Skeleton Mage on the last floor there that I was hunting? I received it after hunting a lv 75 skeleton. This looks really cool, right?”

As Canoel boasted about the belt as he smiled brightly, Hoonie almost collapsed onto the ground as he lost strength in his legs.

“A, a skeleton just gave it to you?”

Canoel nodded his head as he replied.

“Yes. It gave it to me. I didn’t think that you could receive Legendary-rank items from normal mobs either... But anyways, I was really happy.”

Hoonie tightened his fist before he realized it.

‘This dimwit, should I kill him...?’

Coincidentally, the central continent was a PK zone, where it was possible to kill players without receiving any penalties, and Hoonie began to seriously consider it.

‘Then that belt could even drop, right?’

However, as soon as he heard Canoel’s following words, he had to modify his plans.

“At that time, a Black Magician in the party told me to sell this, but I noticed it had an account-bound option attached to it. So, I couldn’t sell it.”

“Ah, I see...”

The words that it was an account-bound item meant that it was of course impossible to trade, but it was also was an item that didn’t drop just because one died.

‘I’ve seen it come up in the auction house, so I thought it wasn’t an account-bound item... But it looks like the option is given randomly.’

Hoonie internally began to feel sorry for himself.

‘Ah, if I just have that, I can immediately start the Immortal

quest...’

Meanwhile, Canoel, who didn’t know of the fact that the words that he just said saved(?) his life, continued to blabber out of excitement.

“I realized there was a reason why the Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness was expensive. I feel like after equipping this my skill damage has definitely gotten stronger and my casting speed has gotten faster as well.”

And Hoonie’s sight thickened.

‘Hoo... That idiot, should I just kill him?’

The reason why the Pledge of the Monarch of Darkness was expensive was because it had a special option where it made the casting speed of dark magic faster by 2 times.

In other words, to Canoel, a Summoner, it meant that it was a completely useless item.

‘Is this the ‘idiots that don’t even know the game’ buff that I’ve only heard of...’

It was something that spread amongst gamers like a legend.

The superstition that the more one didn’t know how to play a



game, the better their luck with item drops, Hoonie was finally able to totally believe it.

‘As expected... It was that. I had no item luck up until now because I’m a master.’

While looking at Hoonie, who had a depressed expression, Canoel opened his mouth carefully.

“But, you, what’s your ID?”

Because Hoonie’s information was on private just like Ian, his nickname was not exposed.

Hoonie replied bluntly.

“What are you going to do by knowing my ID?”

“Still, you’re my saviour, so I wanted to know your ID at least. And this is my first time seeing such a strong Black Magician while playing this game up until now.”

As he said that, the expression of Hoonie, who became proud at the one compliment, brightened again.

“Keu-ha-hat, you have an eye for character. I am Kanjihoonie.”

It seemed that Ballam felt bashfulness for some odd reason at Hoonie's words as he slightly turned his head.

- I don't really know what the word 'Kanji[1]' means, but whenever I hear that word, I get goosebumps, Hoonie.

At Ballam's words, Hoonie shrugged his shoulders as he replied.

"It's because it's so cool, Ballam."

- Is, is that so... It must be right if that's what you say.

And in front of the two, Canoel's eyes shone.

"Ooh... As expected, your ID is cool as well."

At Canoel's genuine flattery, Hoonie let out a loud laughter.

"Keu-ha-hat, now that I look at it, you were someone that knows something."

"Huhu, thank you."

Canoel's real age was 15.

The reason why he could only be on the same page as Hoonie was

because he was at that age.

Canoel opened his mouth again.

“By the way, Hoonie, by any chance, do you need this belt?”

At Canoel’s words, Hoonie nodded his head as he let out a deep sigh.

“Yes. There’s a hidden quest that I’m in the middle of right now, but I can only proceed in it if I have that belt.”

Canoel nodded his head as he responded.

“Hmm... For such circumstances.”

Canoel, who thought about something for a moment, opened his mouth again towards Hoonie.

“Hoonie.”

“Yes, Canoel.”

“Since you have graciously saved my life in the middle of the desert like this, I shall repay you for that.”

“How...?”

Hoonie's shaking gaze turned towards Canoel, and Canoel slowly opened his mouth.

"This belt, I will buy a new one from the auction house for you."

"...!"

To Hoonie, who hunted by even saving money on potions, it was a shocking offer that he wouldn't have even been able to imagine.

Hoonie suddenly grasped Canoel's hand.

"Hyungnim[2]!"

\*

The five kinds of weapons that floated in front of Ian's eyes were twin daggers, a staff, knuckles, an English longbow, and a long spear.

Ian wore a slightly puzzled expression.

'What the hell? The most standard weapon isn't here.'

There was no sword, which he thought was a weapon that would have definitely appeared.

Ian contemplated.

‘If I pick the bow this time, I won’t be able to use this during a harder level...’

The bow was the weapon that he was most confident in, but for Ian, who was planning on passing through the highest rank, there was a need to save the bow.

Ian asked Eclipse.

“After succeeding this level, will I be picking amongst the four weapons excluding the weapon that I pick this time?”

Eclipse shook his head.

- No, it’s not like that. 5 different kinds of weapons excluding the weapon you picked will appear at random again.

Ian slightly frowned.

‘Then that means in the next selection, a bow may not appear...’

Because there were a variety of different weapons to the point that all eighteen weapons used in Chinese martial arts existed in Kailan, the chance for a bow not to appear in the next selection

wasn't low.

‘Sure, it would be best to grab it when I can actually use it.’

Ian eventually spread his hand out towards the bow.

Whoong-!

As a resonant sound rang out, the longbow was paced into Ian's hand as if it was going to get sucked into it.

- You have selected the weapon, the ‘Judgment Longbow of the Spirit King’.

Just like with the Judgment Sword, the longbow boasted a magnificent and luxurious appearance as well.

Ian licked his lips while looking at that.

‘It would be great if this one came out as my quest reward.’

As the options on the item were sealed, he couldn't check them, but he had a feeling that there were tremendous additional abilities attached for sure.

And along with that, the quiver that appeared in the air naturally secured onto Ian's back.

Eclipse lightly laughed towards Ian as he disappeared.

- Then, I pray for your success in the battle.

And at the blue human shadow that slowly formed in his spot, Ian quickly pulled out an arrow and placed it against his bowstring.

- A B-rank Selamus warrior will appear.
- The battle will begin 3 seconds from now.

“Heup.”

Ian, who took one deep breath, slowly pulled his bowstring as he aimed at the Selamus warrior.

- 3... 2... 1...

And as soon as the message stating that the battle had begun rang out, he let go of the bowstring immediately and threw his body.

Piiing-!

The arrow ripped through the air as it flew quickly.

The arrow flew directly for the head of the Selamus Warrior, but the opponent had also shot out an arrow.

Saaeek-!

The arrows crossed each other in the air by a whisker and flew through...

However, both arrows didn't hit their target and just split through the air.

And the two people, who had rolled in different directions each and avoided the arrows, took aim at each other again.

Ping-.

Piiing-!

Arrows continuously flew towards each other.

Not even one arrow touched either one of them, but the space between the two grew smaller little by little.

'He even predicts shots and avoids them quite well. The Agility of this dude's body is so high that it's hard to hit him.'



The two moved forward little by little as they continuously shot out arrows, and Ian put his brain to work.

‘Our accuracy rate and our evasion abilities are at about the same level... I think my rapid-firing abilities are a little better.’

Ian coolly analyzed his opponent.

‘If that’s the case, then I should get to the outcome with the part I’m better at.’

After organizing his thoughts, Ian immediately moved to carry them out.

Tat-!

He suddenly knelt down on the ground in one corner of the arena as he got into a proper stance.

While looking at Ian’s unexpected actions, the Selamus warrior momentarily wore a confused expression, but he went through with his attacks again shortly after.

This was because there was no easier opportunity than now to hit Ian, who had stopped in one spot and settled down there.

Piing-!

However, of course, Ian didn't act without any thought.

‘At the fastest speed that I can move...!’

Ian, who focused his mind to its extremes, shot out the arrow that was placed against his bowstring.

And the arrow that he had pulled out in no time, began to shoot out following that track.

[1] Kanji = Korean slang for ‘swagger’, ‘cool’, etc.

[2] Hyungnim = the direct translation would be ‘Big Brother’, but ‘hyungnim’ has more of a formal and respectful ring to it in my opinion X)

# Chapter 172: The Strongest Selamus Warrior (2)

---

‘There we go!’

As soon as the arrow left the bowstring, Ian felt certainty from the sense he felt at the tips of his fingers.

‘If I can’t win against this guy with speed anyways, then the right way to go is maximizing my accuracy rate and rapid-firing abilities.’

The fact that it was difficult to aim and hit a moving target was an obvious truth.

On top of that, if the target was an arrow that was flying at a tremendous speed of over 200 km/hr, there was nothing more to say.

However, Ian was thinking of hitting the arrows that flew towards him.

Bang-!

As the arrows filled with a powerful strength met in the air, those plans became a reality.

And the arrow that followed right behind that pierced through

the boom and flew through to graze the side of the Selamus warrior.

He wasn't able to deal critical damage, but because of the powerful strength that was attached to the arrow, the Selamus warrior that received a bit of damage let out a low groan from his mouth.

“Euk...”

Eclipse, who was watching that scene from the outer area of the arena, was also staring at Ian with an interested expression.

- Oh, to have thought he would use such a tactic.

It was a method that couldn't even be attempted if one didn't have enough guts and confidence.

Truthfully, aside from gravity, the arena didn't allow any other factors to affect the trajectory of the arrow, and as it was a VR game which was more generous than reality when it came to the shot judgment, it was a method that was possible, but either way, there was no change to the fact that Ian's archery skills were to the point that they were wizardry.

Ping-Pi-ping-!

With his stance locked down, Ian continuously shot out arrows.

As he didn't move his body even one step, his accuracy rate increasing by hundred-fold was a definite, but his shooting speed also increased even more.

Of course, Ian also couldn't hit all 100% of his opponent's arrows and drop them.

However, he succeeded in intercepting over half of them, and for the rest, he was avoiding them by twisting his body or avoiding them with the least amount of movement possible.

As the situation was like this, thanks to their similar abilities, the two people's match that was too close to call began to lean towards Ian's side more and more.

Kaizar, who was watching the battle silently, opened his mouth towards Eclipse.

“What do you think, Eclipse?”

At Kaizar's question, Eclipse slowly nodded his head as he replied shortly.

- It looks like I will have to acknowledge it this time.

And Eclipse's body, which was floating in the air, slowly began to fade.

- It seems my turn will come soon. I should prepare.

After staring back and forth at Eclipse and Ian, Kaizar grinned as he began to watch the battle again.

\*

“Hmm, so this is the fortress that blocked the attack of the DarkRuna Guild last time, huh?”

The defensive fortress of the Pyro Domain.

One man, who stood a little bit away from the defensive wall, slowly began to walk towards the fortress.

It seemed he had put all of his personal settings to private, as no information popped up.

On top of that, as he was wearing black shamanist clothing and even a black mask, he had completely hidden his identity, and with careful movements he melted into the crowd.

“I need to go inside and take a look at the structure...”

Anybody was allowed to enter the Pyro Domain as long as you were a user of the Luspel Empire.

However, the defensive fortress that was made up of three tall layers of defensive walls controlled entry rigorously.

It was a measure taken so that the internal structure of the fortress that was complexly built for impenetrable defense wasn't revealed to the outside.

To go inside of the fortress, you had to be a guild member of the Lotus Guild or you needed the permission of the Guild Master Herz.

However, it seemed this man was indifferent about that as he approached the rampart without hesitation.

And shortly after.

Seu-reu-reuk-.

As if the man's body melted into the darkness, he became transparent.

He had used the ability Hide, which could be considered the representative ability of the Assassin.

After having become invisible from using hide, he quickly climbed up the rampart.

‘I just need to be careful of the field of vision of the defensive towers with the Detector ability.’

Amongst the defensive towers, there were ones loaded with a detecting ability that could percept invisibility as well.

Because defensive towers were much more expensive than compared to their fighting power, normally not a lot of them are built. Still, because they were placed all over the Pyro Domain fortress, his movements were incredibly careful.

‘How exactly were they able to prepare a Defensive Power at this scale in such a short amount of time?’

With proficient movements, the man dug through each corner of the fortress as he began to capture the structure into his eyes.

His movements of hiding his body in places where the eyes of the guards couldn’t reach whenever the duration of his invisibility ended were as nimble and quiet as an alley cat.

‘Hmm... It looks like I won’t be able to go in there no matter what kind of method I use.’

After successfully investigating all of the fortress aside from a couple of places that were completely surrounded by detecting towers, he threw his body out of the fortress with quiet footsteps.

Ta-tat-!



The man threw his body down from incredibly high rampart without hesitation.

It was an incredibly high height to the point that it would have been hard to escape instantaneous death if he was to hit the floor just like that, but he had such a relaxed expression.

However, shortly after.

Seu-reu-reuk-.

A black fog burst out from the body of the falling man, and he suddenly transformed into the form of a crow.

Caw-caw-!

The crow, who had such black feathers that it looked glossy, flapped its wings towards darkness as it disappeared leisurely.

\*

As Ian was using a bow, which was the weapon he was most confident with, he easily won against the B-rank Selamus warrior.

- You have successfully suppressed the B-rank Selamus warrior.

- As you have succeeded in suppressing them overwhelmingly in a short amount of time, you have jumped straight over the A-rank.

The opponent that he faced next after even jumping over the A-rank with an overwhelming difference was none other than Eclipse.

Ian narrowed his eyes as he asked.

“Hmm... Were you the S-rank judge?”

And at that question, Eclipse nodded his head.

- That's right, Ian.

Despite the one ranking battle finishing, the ‘Judgment Longbow of the Spirit King’ was still in Ian’s hands.

And over Eclipse’s shoulder, the Judgment Sword shone a bright white light.

Ian stared back and forth at the Judgment Bow in his hands and Eclipse’s Judgment Greatsword as he opened his mouth again.

“It looks like this battle will not proceed with the same conditions as before.”

Eclipse nodded his head.

- You're sharp.

Whoong-.

While looking at him draw the greatsword hanging on his back and swing it back and forth in the air, Ian broke out into a cold sweat.

‘What the hell? How high is his Strength stat for him to be able to swing that so easily with one hand like that?’

Eclipse's words continued.

- This last battle it will be a battle that I will end up winning no matter what.

“...?”

- No matter how good your fighting sense may be, it's not enough to overcome the level difference between you and me with tricks.

At Eclipse's information that popped up above his head as soon as he was done speaking, Ian blinked his eyes, dumbfounded.

- Eclipse (Summoner) – Lv 250

It was the first lv 250 he was seeing after Kaizar.

Ian barely held back the string of swear words that almost came out.

‘No, what the hell, he should have given me a quest that I would be able to get through, how can there be such an unbalanced stage setup?’

Just like Eclipse’s words, no matter how much Ian flew and crawled, it would be impossible for him to overcome a 100-level difference.

Ian let out a deep sigh as he opened his mouth.

“It’s just as you said, mister. A fight that the result is already decided for anyways... Is there a reason to do it?”

Eclipse laughed as he replied.

- The result of the battle is decided, but there is still a reason for you to fight.

“What is it?”

- There’s no need for you to defeat me here. As long as you are just acknowledged by me, you will receive the qualification for an S-rank.

At those words, Ian's disappointed expression slightly brightened.

“Oh, if that's the case...!”

- To be more precise, I should probably say that it is not my acknowledgment, but the acknowledgment of the ancestors.

“Whatever it is, I got it. I'll just do my best for now.”

Ian spun the English Longbow that was in his hand in circles as he grinned.

And at that overflowing confidence that he was showing, Eclipse also wore a satisfied expression as he replied.

- Alright, then shall we get started?

As soon as Eclipse's words ended, a countdown that notified of the battle began to ring through the arena.

- 3... 2... 1...

Ian quickly placed an arrow against his bowstring.

Piiing-!

With Ian's arrow leaving the bowstring as the start, the two people's battle began.

- It looks like I'll be able to warm up my body for the first time in a while.

Eclipse swung the giant greatsword back and forth as he countered Ian's arrow.

Just like Eclipse forecasted, the combat stat difference between Ian and him was indeed overwhelming.

However, it wasn't like Ian was easily allowing his attacks to land on him either.

Whoong-!

This was because when it came to battles against someone powerful, Ian's stat composition, where his combat abilities were accumulated on Agility, shone.

Bang-!

As Eclipse's greatsword hit the ground of the arena, a boom rang out, and crushed rocks flew out in all directions.

Ting-Ti-ting-!

Ian evaded Eclipse, who charged at him, as he placed two arrows against the bowstring at once before shooting.

When maintaining a steady distance while battling, the tactic of placing two or more arrows against the bowstring was something even Ian didn't really use.

This was because this brought an extreme drop to one's accuracy rate.

However, when one needed to battle within a very short range like now, it was a different story.

Ian had the ability to hit a target that was 1-2 metres in front of him even if he was to place two, no, even three arrows against the bowstring.

Ta-tang-!

As Ian's arrow hit the face of Eclipse's sword, a metallic sound rang out, and he opened his mouth while slightly frowning.

- So, you use petty tricks, Ian.

Ian continuously moved his body as he shortly responded.

“It is, however, a high-class skill.”

The two people’s offensive and defensive battle proceeded fiercely for over 10 minutes.

Ian was fighting well against an opponent whom he had a 100-level difference with.

Ian’s exceptional control ability exerted the most influence as to why this was possible, but there were other reasons as well.

Firstly, because they didn’t have any other equipment equipped aside from each of their weapons, nor could they even use any skills aside from their basic attack, it was thanks to that, that his pure control ability shone even more.

However, as time passed, Ian ended up allowing Eclipse to land a proper hit.

Bang-!

“Euk-!”

From just one of Eclipse’s hits, Ian was pushed completely back before he rolled along the ground.

It wasn’t as big of a skill like the one that Ian displayed when



fighting the D-rank Selamus warrior, but because Eclipse's stats were so high, the damage of even an attack with a short track was incredible.

While looking at his Vitality gauge bar that began to blink, Ian grumbled.

“No, how are you so ignorantly strong?”

Eclipse tightened his grip on his sword as he slightly glanced at Kaizar.

- I'm probably weaker than that dude.

And Eclipse charged forward again.

While looking at his spirit, which was different from before, Ian internally let out a deep sigh.

‘As expected, he was taking it easy on me up until now.’

While Eclipse showed a little faster and stronger movements little by little, he continuously suppressed Ian.

From Ian's perspective, Eclipse could immediately finish the battle.

However, he just continued to corner Ian to his limits, and didn't go ahead with the deciding attack.

Had they fought about another ten minutes like that?

Ian somewhat felt like he was being toyed with, but still, he wasn't completely in a bad mood.

This was because he was moving his body crazily while battling one-on-one without borrowing the strength of his Familiars for the first time in a while.

It felt as if he was reawakening the senses he was losing.

However, just then, as Ian felt a foreign energy sink into his body, he widened his eyes.

‘What the hell is this now?’

Along with that, a couple system messages popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

- The Ancient Selamus Warriors have acknowledged your combat abilities.
- Your Potential that was imprisoned inside of you has been released.
- All of your combat abilities have increased by 50%.

# Chapter 173: The Strongest Selamus Warrior (3)

---

“So... You’re saying it’s not a fluke, right?”

At Samuel Jin’s question, Limlong nodded his head.

“That’s right, Jin. From all of the domain defensive fortresses that I’ve seen up until now, they have the most exceptional standard of Defensive Power.”

“Ahem...”

“It is understandable considering the fact that their Defensive Power has probably gotten stronger than before.”

At Limlong’s words, Samuel Jin frowned.

“Are you sure you’ve thoroughly looked everywhere?”

“Hmm, you could say that I’ve checked out about 70-80 percent of the place. I wasn’t able to approach a couple places where detecting towers were built close together.”

Samuel Jin closed his eyes without a word, and Limlong waited for his next words.

And shortly after, Samuel Jin's words continued again.

“Then, Limlong, how many more days from now do you predict the Pyro Domain will be able to last?”

“Hmm...”

Limlong recalled the levels of the defensive towers that were built within the fortress and the scale as he was momentarily submerged in his thoughts.

And his mouth slowly opened.

“All of the bases in that whole area will soon fall into the clutches of the Kaimon Empire Army now.”

“Right?”

“I'm guessing that day will roughly be two days from now...”

Samuel Jin nodded his head.

“As expected, your thoughts are similar to mine.”

Limlong's words continued.

“If that's the case, there will probably be a large-scale attack on

the Pyro Domain in about three days.”

Limlong grasped the map that was on top of the round table with his hands as he continued his words.

“As the physical aspect of the Pyro Domain’s eastern topography is rugged, it would be iffy to attack through there, so the attacks will most likely go in through the west, south, and north direction...”

Limlong closed his eyes for a moment and rubbed his chin.

‘The number of defensive towers is important, but I also saw quite a bit of high-rank tank defensive towers which I couldn’t find out the grade for.’

Limlong opened his eyes again, and the two people’s eyes met.

“I believe that they will be able to last about a week. It’s quite possible that they could last about two weeks at most.”

At Limlong’s words, the two pupils of Samuel Jin, who appeared indifferent, began to shine with unrest.

“No, are you saying that the Lotus Guild will have enough resources to last even a week of the Kaimon Empire Army’s total attack?”

Samuel Jin's pride was hurt.

Even his guild and the Splendor Guild, which were the guilds that occupied the highest ranks amongst the greatest guilds affiliated with the Luspel Empire, didn't even have enough confidence to last more than three days against the empire army's total attack.

Yet to say that they could last a week, or two weeks at most.

With a slightly flushed voice, Samuel Jin opened his mouth.

"It's hard to believe, but if that is the truth, this is a big problem."

This time Limlong wore a puzzled expression.

"A big... Problem? Why's that? Wouldn't it be easier for us to block them in the future if the Lotus guild lasted a long time and left even a little blow on the opponent's military power?"

At Limlong's words, Samuel Jin smirked as he shook his head.

"Limlong, you are able to see one, but not two."

"...?"

“Will you check the guild rankings of the Lotus Guild right now?”

At Samuel Jin’s words, Limlong was confused but he immediately opened the ranking list and checked the Lotus Guild’s ranking.

And he could do nothing else but doubt his own two eyes.

- Lotus Guild – Ranking: 37th

“This...?”

The Lotus Guild’s ranking, which was for sure outside of the top 100 just even before their battle with the DarkRuna Guild, had jumped to as high as within the top 40.

Not being surprised at this was impossible for Limlong.

Samuel Jin, who paused for a moment to take a breath, parted his lips again.

“The Lotus Guild has grown by more than two times through leading their fight with the DarkRuna Guild to victory. This is thanks to the EXP and Specialty Points, as well as the Fame they obtained while killing the 5 thousand troops of the DarkRuna Guild, that is.”

Limlong mumbled to himself without even realizing it.

“Im...possible.”

Samuel Jin wore a bitter smile.

“I also think like that. However, just as much as a sudden rapid growth of over twice the original doesn’t make sense, the fact that the Lotus Guild had blocked the 5 thousand troops of the DarkRuna Guild is also unrealistic.”

To be honest, the Lotus Guild hadn’t immediately grown to reach the 37th place from just the rewards they received from the DarkRuna Guild.

Of course, it was true that the victory of the defensive battle had become the biggest growth power, but in the meantime, they had even raised the rank of the Lotus Domain’s Domain Rank and made it into a Large Domain, and through the resources they obtained from the training ground, they had consistently progressed the domains they possessed.

Limlong asked Samuel Jin.

“Then, by any chance, Samuel, do you think that the Lotus Guild could grow to the point that they could become a threat to our guild?”

Samuel Jin nodded his head.



“Just from looking at their growth speed right now, wouldn’t it be weirder if you didn’t have such thoughts?”

“Hmm...”

“If in the case that the Lotus Guild lasts against Kaimon Empire’s Allied Forces for a week, no, two weeks, they will be able to obtain an even bigger reward than compared to the one they received while blocking off the DarkRuna Guild this time.”

Limlong, who had heard everything, wore a grave expression.

‘Samuel is also right. No, the Lotus Guild would definitely grow rapidly every time they succeeded in defending.’

If they were to block off the Kaimon Empire’s Allied Forces for two weeks, even if the Lotus Guild were to lose the Pyro Domain, they would have obtained enough Specialty Points and EXP, as well as Fame to the point that it wouldn’t have been a waste.

“Why do you think I purposely asked a high-class volunteer like you to scout, Limlong?”

Limlong nodded his head.

“It was definitely a scout that was worth it.”

Samuel's words continued.

“The structure of the Pyro Domain's fortress... You brought it back inside your head well, right?”

“As a matter of fact, I briefly organized it and jotted it down.”

Samuel wore a pleased expression as he stared at Limlong.

“Save all your memories as much as possible, and, no, even if you risked spying a couple more times if you need to, please make an internal fortress map.”

“...!”

The two eyes of Limlong, who figured out what Samuel Jin's intentions were, grew.

“No way...?”

Samuel nodded his head.

“I'm planning on handing it over to the Titan Guild.”

Limlong wore an expression full of uncanniness.

“Still, isn't that a little too excessive?”

However, Samuel's expression was stern.

“We need to cut them off before they grow even more.”

For a moment, confliction crossed Limlong's face, but soon, he nodded his head.

“Understood, Master.”

\*

The additional 50% of combat stats that Ian received through the release of his Potential increased his fighting power explosively.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

The fact that the explosive power that burst out from the tip of the arrow had become so strong that it was incomparable to before was a definite, but now his Agility stat at the least was higher than Eclipse's.

And at this point, Ian was able to fight Eclipse almost evenly.

- Your fighting power is surprising, Ian.

Eclipse had lost over half his Vitality, and his gauge was blinking.

He was truly admiring Ian's fighting sense.

“This buff called the Potential Release or whatever... I don't know how long it's active for, but I must finish this battle within that duration.”

At Ian's words, Eclipse burst out into laughter.

- Your desire for winning at least is truly amazing. However, you have no need to worry. Since that buff will not disappear until the battle between you and I is over, that is.

Even while the two people shared a conversation, they didn't take a break from the battle.

Eclipse charged forward threateningly while swinging his greatsword.

However, Ian increased the distance between himself and Eclipse as he constantly dealt damage.

Ting-Ting-!

While smacking down Ian's arrows that flew towards him quickly, Eclipse raised his greatsword.

- This is the last, Ian. If you can block this attack, I will acknowledge your win.

“...!”

If the current combat condition continued, it was a situation where Ian would slowly gain an advantage.

Because of that, at Eclipse's form, where he had gotten into a new stance, Ian couldn't help but become discontent.

‘Just when I found the perfect angle to win... As expected, there was no way that it would end this easily.’

He had no idea what kind of attack he was going to go through, but Ian shot out arrows without rest in order to distract Eclipse's attack.

Ping-Pi-ping-!

Eclipse, who lifted his greatsword in front of him and blocked an arrow, stood on his tiptoes at the front as he let out a shout of concentration.

- Haab!

And at that moment, Eclipse's body shook in disorder, and in that process, his form began to split up more and more.

At the unexpected situation, Ian was frightened as he moved his body.

‘What the hell, is he using a replicating skill? No, it’s somewhat different to be calling it replication... Is he using super speed movements that you see in martial arts books or movies?’

Shortly after, Eclipse’s body, which had been divided into a total of three, raised their swords at the same time and they charged towards Ian.

- Heu-aab!

Ian internally let out a string of swear words as he pulled out an arrow and lifted it up.

‘No, I thought it was impossible to use a skill! Isn’t it foul play to use a weird ability like that?’

However, as Ian knew better than anyone else that no matter how much he grumbled, nothing would change, so he busily moved his body.

‘Damn it, it’s hard enough to hit even one of him if he moves that randomly, so then what are they expecting?’

Thanks to having distancing himself as much as possible, he still

had about a 20-metre margin, but a distance like that was short enough that it could be reduced in an instant.

Ian let go of the bowstring without delay.

“Damn it, I’ll hit everything, alright!”

Ian’s rapid-firing started for the second time.

Ping-Ping- Ping-!

It would be best if he hit all three of Eclipse’s replications precisely with just three arrows, but Ian, who decided that was close to almost impossible, continued to shoot out arrows.

Ping-Ping-!

Despite it looking like he had perfectly hit the replication, Ian’s arrow passed through the shadow in vain as it flew by.

Ian was also not just standing still while he shot them out, but the movement speed of Eclipse, who used the replication skill, had become two times faster than before, and the distance between Eclipse and Ian couldn’t help but grow smaller and smaller.

It had truly become a volatile situation.

‘Argh, just get hit!’

Ian plucked the bowstring without rest, while Eclipse constantly reduced the distance between them while he skillfully squeezed by them.

However, just then, a replication that suddenly moved quickly caught Ian’s eye.

“...!”

And at that moment, he felt a chilly energy behind him.

Ian reflexively twisted his waist as he threw the arrow that he was holding behind him.

Puck-!

A blunt sound rang out, and that meant that the arrow that Ian threw struck something.

Ian quickly placed a new arrow against his bowstring and shot it out.

Bang-!

As the explosive power that was on the arrowhead burst out, a



roar rang out.

Whoong-!

Along with a loud resonating sound that shook the whole arena, the replications that lunged towards Ian turned into white smoke on the spot and disappeared.

‘Did I... Hit him?’

As there was nothing that was certain yet, Ian reflexively stepped backwards as he increased the distance between Eclipse and him.

However, in the next moment, the system messages that popped up told Ian of his victory.

Ring-.

- You have successfully suppressed the S-rank Selamus Warrior ‘Eclipse’.
- The Selamus Hall of Fame has been updated.
- The name of User ‘Ian’ has been engraved in the highest point of the Selamus Hall of Fame.
- You have obtained 15.6 million EXP.

- You have obtained 300 thousand Fame.
- You have leveled up. You have reached lv 151.

# Chapter 174: The Strongest Selamus Warrior (4)

---

Definitely for Eclipse, but even for Kaizar, who was the very person that brought Ian to the altar, a completely unexpected result occurred.

Eclipse, who was shattered, turned into a blue light and appeared in that same spot again, while Ian checked his information window while grinning.

Kaizar, who looked back and forth at the two people, slowly opened his mouth.

“How surprising, Ian. To think that it was even possible for you to have beaten that old man.”

At Ian’s combat abilities, Kaizar wore a genuinely surprised expression. Since Eclipse was one of very few strong people that Kaizar acknowledged.

And with an arrogant expression, Ian opened his mouth towards Kaizar.

“Huhu, this is how good I am. Don’t look down on me anymore now, retainer.”

“Hmm...”

Kaizar wore an expression showing that he was not pleased.

However, Ian was satisfied in his own way.

Since he had escaped from his sneers at the least.

“Psh, so picky.”

Eclipse, who completely revealed himself again, approached Ian.

- How surprising. I express my respect towards your combat abilities.

While looking at Eclipse, whose way of speaking first off had changed, Ian wore a pleased smile.

“thank you. I was lucky.”

Ian let out a humble comment that clashed with him.

‘The quest isn’t done yet. I need to raise our Affinity as much as possible.’

This was the same as the instinct of a gamer, who had become over sophisticated.

- Huhu. I had no idea that this would be the case, but either way, you have passed the first test as an S-rank. Congratulations.

As Eclipse's words ended, a system message that alerted Ian that the quest was completed popped up in front of his eyes.

Ring-.

- You have successfully carried out the 'Test of the Selamus Tribe (1)'.
- Clear Rank: SS
- You have obtained 12.25 million EXP.
- You have obtained 100 thousand Fame.
- You have obtained the 'Vision Magic Scroll' of the Selamus Tribe.
- You have obtained the 'Weapons of Judgment Box'.

Ian, who checked the message, hurriedly opened his inventory and checked his reward, and in the next moment he immediately frowned.

“No, Eclipse, this is too much, no?”

Eclipse tilted his head as he replied.

- What do you mean?

“Setting aside skills, you should at least let me pick the type of weapon!”

The magic scroll that Ian received was an item that allowed him to randomly obtain a vision skill of the Selamus Tribe, while the Weapons of Judgment Box, suggested from its name, was an item that allowed him to randomly obtain one of the ‘Judgment’ weapons.

While looking at Ian, who had a tearful face, Eclipse slowly shook his head.

- Ahem... That’s not something that I can help you with. As it is a treasure that has been passed down from the ancestors...

To be honest, Eclipse wasn’t much different.

If he wanted to blame someone, he should have blamed the development team, as there would be nothing that would change if he blamed Eclipse.

Ian let out a deep sigh as he firstly pulled out the magic scroll.

‘I wonder what kind of skill will come out.’

The corners of the mouth of Ian, who held the magic scroll in his hand, curled upwards again.

He did complain, but at least while he used a random reward item, he couldn't help but always feel his heart flutter.

“Open!”

Ian's mouth parted, and along with that, the information of the newly obtained skill popped up in front of Ian's eyes.

Ring-.

- Will of the Selamus Warrior

Classification: Active Skill

Skill Level: Lv 0

Skill Rank: Legendary

Proficiency: None

Consumption Cost: None

Cooldown Time: 30 minutes

For 20 minutes, all combat stats will increase by 40%, and one combat stat of choice may be granted the total combined stats of the caster's non-combat stats.

Also, for the duration of the 'Will of the Selamus Warrior', the Proficiency of all weapons will increase by '15 levels', and the caster may receive all of the combat compensation effect that occurs through the weapon Proficiency increase.

\*For the duration of the 'Will of the Selamus Warrior', no other skill can be used.

\*Skill acquisition condition: Only a Summoner who has been acknowledged by the Selamus Tribe may master the skill.

After thoroughly reading the skill, Ian's head became a little chaotic.

'It definitely is a good skill... But I'll need to use it really wisely.'

Firstly, the skill's rank was Legendary.

This was the first Legendary-rank skill that Ian possessed.

And fitting of the rank, it had an incredible buff effect.



‘For it to boost combat stats by 40% and even turn non-combat stats into a combat stat...’

Ian’s non-combat stats were incredibly high.

Because he had been grinding and producing talismans whenever he had time ever since he had obtained a Production Class, even if he was to deduct his class stats, such as Affinity, etc., he had obtained a ton of miscellaneous stats such as Dexterity, Luck, Endurance, etc.

Their numerical values alone weren’t high, but as there were so many different kinds, if he combined them all, the level of that ability couldn’t be disregarded.

‘Let’s see here, if I add them all...’

Ian began to diligently add his stats together one by one, and after he checked the result, he couldn’t help but be surprised.

‘If I add it all and invest it into my reflexivity, it will be close to twice my current stats.’

On top of that, as he could turn those stats over to his Offensive Power or Defensive Power when needed, the application methods were endless.

However, the additional effect that was written underneath was even more of a scam than the stat buff.

‘The Proficiency of all kinds of weapons will increase by 15 levels.’

In other words, this meant that even if he used a weapon that he was holding for the first time, he would fundamentally receive a Proficiency of Intermediate-rank Lv 5.

This was because Proficiency was divided into four stages, which were Beginner-rank, Intermediate-rank, High-rank, and finally Master, and each stage was made up of 10 levels.

‘Even with just this skill, it’s the same as having accomplished my reason for coming here.’

From Ian’s judgment, this skill was definitely a tremendous buff skill that he had yet to have even seen up until now.

‘Rather than a buff skill, should I be calling it a set-shifting skill?’

This time, Ian’s gaze turned towards the bottom of the scroll.

- For the duration of the ‘Will of the Selamus Warrior’, no other skill can be used.

Just as much as it certainly had amazing buffing abilities, the penalty was definitely just as critical.

For the 20-minutes that the Will of the Selamus Warrior state lasted, depending on the situation, the fact that he couldn't use any skill could be truly critical.

‘Before I use the Will of the Selamus Warrior skill, I'll first need to go through all my other buff skills, so I'll need to manage the skill cooldown times even better...’

If he accidentally used the Will of the Selamus Warrior skill first, he would have to go into battle without having received any other buffs for 20 minutes.

Ian diligently put his brain to work.

‘It probably means that I can't even summon or withdraw any Familiars for 20 minutes either, right?’

To be honest, this part pulled at Ian's heart the most.

Up until now, if he saw a Familiar that was in a dangerous situation during battle, he always protected his Familiars by withdrawing them.

However, if he was in a state where the Will of the Warrior was invoked, he wouldn't be able to withdraw his Familiars even if they were in a situation of death.

‘However, one thing that is for certain is that even if the penalty is considered, I won't be able to do anything else but use this skill.’

Ian figured out the exact use for this skill.

To put a Summoner in the most optimal state so that they could personally play an active role in the battle, that was the role of this skill.

Different from other classes, Summoners could use any kind of weapon freely.

The Summoner was the only class that could use any kind of weapon without a penalty, but on the other hand, it was also the only class that didn't have anything like an exclusive weapon where they could obtain any class compensation.

Of course, attack skills that were related to a weapon's characteristics didn't exist, and if that was the case, inability to use a skill was not that big of a penalty when it came to a 'Summoner's personal battle'.

Eclipse asked Ian, who was still submerged in his thoughts.

- What are you thinking about for such a long time?

Ian, who was thinking about the skill application method frantically, became surprised as he replied.

“Ah, I was thinking about how to use the new skill I obtained

during battle.”

- Hmm... I see. However, as you aren't done with the things that you have to do yet, I need you to hurry a little.

Ian, who only then remembered that this quest was a connected quest, scratched the back of his head.

“Ah, understood. One moment.”

Ian, who roughly organized his thoughts on the skill, pulled out the weapon box this time.

‘It would be best if a bow came out from here...’

Ian, who placed his hand on top of the box, recited with a low voice.

“Open.”

As he did so, the box that was packaged with a luxurious-looking pattern floated into the air, and while letting out a golden current, it opened.

Ring-.

- You have opened the ‘Weapons of Judgment Box’.

- You have obtained the 'Judgment of the Spirit King'.
- Judgment of the Spirit King

Classification: Long Spear

Rank: Legendary

Equip Limit: S-rank Selamus Warrior

Offensive Power: 1825-2005

Durability: 105/105

Option: All combat abilities +150

Leadership +200

Affinity +150

The Vitality of all Familiars summoned will increase by 15%, while their Offensive Power will increase by 35%.

\*Sensitivity

If critical damage is dealt to an opponent, one of the Inherent

Abilities of the summoned Familiars will have a 20% chance of being invoked.

(Abilities that are impossible to invoke based on bodily conditions will not be invoked.)

### \*Lightning of Judgment

An attack has a 10% chance of summoning the 'Lightning of Judgment'.

The 'Lightning of Judgment' deals a greater amount of damage the higher one's 'Spirit Magic' is, and with the point that the lightning was summoned as the standard, 50% damage will additionally be dealt to opponents within a 5m radius.

\*This is an item belonging to User 'Ian'.

This item cannot be transferred to another user or be sold, and even if the character dies, it does not drop.

This is the weapon of the Spirit King, who protected the ancient Selamus Tribe.

Amongst all of the weapons of the Spirit King, this is the strongest and most precious.

The 'Judgement of the Spirit King' shone brightly.

While holding the spear handle, Ian read the item's information, dazed.

‘This... It's to the point that I need to polish up on my spearmanship starting now.’

To be honest, the additional option that was attached was incredibly similar to the ‘Ancient Summoner's Steel Knuckle’ that Ian used a long time ago.

The part that it boosted the Vitality and Offensive Power of summoned Familiars was also similar, and you could especially consider ‘Sensitivity’, which could invoke an Inherent Ability of a Familiar, a perfect carbon-copy ability.

However, the basic Offensive Power of the weapon itself was tremendous to the point that it was incomparable to the knuckle, and as he especially wanted to invoke the Lightning of Judgment immediately, it was to the point his body itched all over.

‘Its outer appearance is totally my style, too.’

Just like the snake spear, which was a weapon with the name ‘Snake’ as the end of the blade was bent like a snake, the blade of the spear, which was bent beautifully in the shape of a lightning bolt, drew Ian's gaze perfectly.

Eclipse, who approached Ian's side, also threw in a word.



- Ian, you're incredibly lucky.

Ian, who didn't understand what he was saying, blinked both eyes as he asked back.

“Sorry? What do you mean?”

Eclipse's words continued.

- The weapon that you're holding right now, that is.

“...?”

- It is a legendary weapon that is known as the strongest weapon amongst the Judgment weapons. You can think of it as the weapon that represents the Judgment weapons.

Ian wore a renewed expression as he fidgeted with the spear.

‘Is that the reason why the name of the type of weapon is not mentioned separately like the Judgment Sword or the Judgment Longbow?’

Whoong-Hoong-!

Ian, who swung the spear here and there, nodded his head with a

satisfied expression.

“It indeed feels like I’ve obtained an amazing weapon. I will use it well.”

Eclipse grinned as he opened his mouth.

- Of course, that spear is a weapon that still has an incredible force, but if you pass through the last gateway as well, you may be granted a couple more abilities.

“...!”

Ian felt his will burn up even more.

‘If I can be granted additional abilities on top of this, I will be able to move on to the next stage.’

While looking at Ian, who overflowed with motivation, Eclipse smirked.

- Since you’ve obtained a good item now as well, it looks like I’ll have to let you know about the next gateway.

With a voice overflowing with confidence, Ian replied.

“Of course. Whatever gateway it is, I will try to pass it.”

However, in the next moment, Ian couldn't help but be greatly surprised.

- However, you won't be able to challenge it right away now.

“Huh? What does that...?”

- That's because the S-rank gateway is not here.

“...?”

A new quest notification window popped up in front of the eyes of Ian, who was wearing a puzzled expression.

Ring-.

- The Test of the Selamus Tribe (Hidden, Connected Quest)

You have received acknowledgement from Eclipse, the Guardian of the Selamus Tribe, as an S-rank Warrior, which is the best rank, and you have obtained the best-ever results.

Now you must challenge the mission that no one has ever challenged before.

If you wake up the Flying Dragon of the Altar of the Selamus Tribe, they will guide you.

Quest Difficulty Level: SSS

Quest Requirement: An S-rank Selamus Warrior acknowledged by Eclipse.

A Summoner User that is over lv 200.

Time Limit: None.

Reward: Evolution of the weapon 'Judgment of the Spirit King'.

'Spirit King Summoning' Magic Square.

# Chapter 175: Enemies on Every Side (1)

---

The Lotus Domain was considered the hottest place in the northern continent recently.

And even inside there, the biggest pivotal topic was the Lotus Training Ground.

The only training ground amongst the ones in Kailan that had maxed out their facility level, this place was the biggest source of funds for the Lotus Guild.

“Huhu, this is truly interesting information, that is.”

An old man with speckled hair petted two baby wolves back and forth in one corner of the Training Ground’s office as he wrote something into his notes.

He was none other than Professor Lee Jinook.

“To think that experimentation on the Familiar Breeding System would be this fun.”

Lee Jinook continuously resided within the Lotus Training Ground as he managed the Training Ground, and as he constantly butted heads with Familiars, he was able to obtain the ‘Familiar Breeding’ skill.

And after he obtained the breeding skill, he conducted experiments on that all day.

‘Even when Jinsung first offered, I had no idea that it would be this fun, that is.’

Meanwhile, he received the experimental notes on Familiar stats from Ian, and with that as the foundation, he was analyzing how the stats of new individuals that could be obtained through breeding formed.

“Let’s see here, the growth rate of Wolf A’s Offensive Power is about 3.25, while the growth rate of its Defensive Power is about 1.7.”

His note was completely filled with the stats and growth rates of the Familiars based on their levels.

The growth rate was the average of the increased stats whenever a Familiar leveled up.

“You take after your mom’s Offensive Power and Reflexes.”

Lee Jinook petted the baby wolf as he mumbled.

The content of his words was enough to cause someone who heard him to wear a dumbfounded expression.

“It looks like you take after your dad’s Defensive Power, and your personality and Potential are also from your dad, huh?”

Just when Lee Jinook mumbled as he continuously analyzed his notes, the door burst open as someone came in.

And in the quiet room, a pleasant, silvery voice rang out.

“No, Professor, it’s not even that their facial features look alike, but to say that they’re Defensive Powers are similar. Professor, are you taking after Jinsung as well?”

The heroine of the voice was Harin.

“Huhu, have you come, Harin?”

While looking at Lee Jinook, who even guffawed at her scolding as he didn’t tear his eyes away from the note, Harin let out a deep sigh.

“I’ve come to see you for the first time in a while, and you’ve become one step more like Jinsung. There’s no other game addict.”

At Harin’s words, Lee Jinook smirked.

“I’ve still got a long way to go until I can follow Jinsung. I’ve just started opening my eyes to the enjoyment of game experiment now, Kkul-kkul.”

Harin shook her head as she turned her gaze.

And the place that her gaze fell on was the wall where Lee Jinook had jotted down unknown codes and pasted them densely.

“Professor, what are all of these?”

At Harin’s question, Lee Jinook put down his pen as he slowly turned his head.

“Huhu, could you call it big data in order to pick the most amazing individual amongst the same type of Familiars?”

At his words, Harin wore a puzzled expression.

“Sorry? What does that mean? Can the same Familiar have different stats?”

As Harin was a Priest and Cook, she obviously couldn’t help but have no specialty knowledge on the Summoner class.

Lee Jinook’s words continued.

“Just like how each person has different abilities, the Familiars in Kailan also have different stats. The experiment that I’m doing right now, you could call it an experiment to find the most remarkable individual through breeding.”



Out of excitement, Lee Jinook began to release all the content that he had experimented on up until now.

“Oh, really?”

At first, Harin also began to listen to his explanation with interest.

However, after not even 5 minutes had passed, she shook her head as she couldn't help but stand up.

‘Ha... Professor, it looks like he's really intending on writing a paper with Familiar Breeding.’

In some aspects, Lee Jinook had a more intense tenacity than even Ian.

And his experiments were truly gathering quite a large outcome.

Lee Jinook pulled out a notebook from his drawer as he opened it up.

With flush writing and even numbering, the information in the note were listed.

1. The stats of Familiars born through breeding certainly receive influence from the stats of the individuals which would be their parents.

2. Amongst the combat abilities of Familiars born through breeding, they will receive two kinds of stats from their parents randomly, and the remaining two kinds of stats will receive influence from the breeding environment.
3. Familiars through breeding will receive their Potential from the male individual at a steady rate.

That was the notebook where the principles of breeding that Lee Jinook discovered were organized into.

However, Harin sharply spun her head away.

“Euh, Professor. It feels as if I’m looking at what’s going to be on a midterm test.”

Lee Jinook just guffawed.

“Huhu, is that so? You’re saying that the things on a midterm test for a cooking class are filled with such interesting content, huh?”

“...”

Harin, who was at a loss for words, just shook her head back and forth, and Lee Jinook mumbled on his own with an excited voice.

“Speaking of which, when is our Jinsung going to visit here? I really want to show him this notebook as soon as possible. He will definitely like it a lot, that is.”

Harin wanted to refute by saying that there was no way Jinsung would like that, but she shut her mouth tight.

‘I somehow feel like he’ll really like it, that is.’

Harin’s plan of asking Professor Lee Jinook to try and reduce Jinsung’s game playing time even by a little, failed even before she could even start it.

\*

“Haaa...”

Jinsung, who stretched as he got up from his bed, squinted his eyes after checking the time.

“Euah... Because of an unexpected quest, I used up too much time.”

He obviously was unable to even start the additional connected quest of the Test of the Selamus Tribe.

Since even if he was to deduct the other conditions, the level restriction was 200.

Based on Eclipse’s words, the difficulty level of the connected quests was decided on the obtained warrior rank, but as Ian had

received such a high rank, apparently that was why he had such a nonsensically high-level requirement.

‘It may have actually turned out for the better, since even if I could immediately proceed with the quest, I wouldn’t have had enough time.’

If the connected quest was to proceed, it would have taken at least a couple more days.

And there was no way that the Kaimon Empire’s Allied Forces would wait until Jinsung was finished with his quest.

Jinsung’s heart grew urgent.

‘It’s about time for the Allied Forces to come barging through now...’

It was definite that the Allied Forces’ full-scale attack would happen today or tomorrow, and Jinsung wanted to inspect the overall part of the domain’s line of defense with his own two eyes before then.

“Sure, well, since a person won’t die just because they skip breakfast once.”

Jinsung, who was planning on at least eating cereal for a light meal, changed his mind and entered the capsule.

As Jinsung skillfully went and lied down in the capsule, the door of the capsule softly closed.

- Welcome to the world of Kailan.
- Summoner 'Ian', please enjoy your time.

The comments subtly changed every time he logged on.

Jinsung, who suddenly felt that it was cool, smirked as he mumbled to himself.

‘Even each NPC has a different AI, so something like this is probably nothing to them.’

Ian, who logged into the game, looked around his surroundings.

The place that Ian had logged into was a campground that was temporarily made.

And a familiar voice that greeted Ian was heard.

“Are you awake now, Lord guy?”

At the familiar voice that he heard from behind him, Ian slightly frowned.

“When are you going to call me Lord, Retainer?”

“Well... Will the day that I call you that even come?”

Ian, who was about to fly off the handle at Kaizar’s sarcasm, suddenly became curious of his Loyalty.

‘Would it have gone up a little through this quest?’

Ian opened the retainer information window.

And he let out a deep sigh internally.

‘It went up, but only by an ant’s footstep.’

Kaizar’s Loyalty was 10/100.

‘Still, this is the first time that it’s reached a two-digit number, so should I be satisfied?’

The reason why it had even gotten up this much was probably because he put up a good fight against Eclipse.

“Alright, shall we return to the domain now?”

At Ian's words, Celia and Paulean responded at the same time.

“Yes, Lord!”

Ian began to move quickly while leading his retainers.

He needed to return to the domain even one minute faster and inspect the fortress.

‘I wonder what the other guild members are doing right now.’

Without a moment to rest, Ian opened the guild chat window while moving his feet.

- Ian: Everyone, there wasn't much that happened yesterday, right?
- Fiolan: Yes, well. There wasn't much. Speaking of which, Ian, were you just doing a quest all day yesterday? You didn't even attend the evening guild hunt either...
- Ian: Yes. The quest took a little longer than I expected. Speaking of which, is there movement from the Kaimon Empire Army's side yet?
- Kroban: It seems quiet so far. However, they'll attack soon now. They've seized all of the bases at the front besides our domain now.
- Ian: Ah-ha, I see. Everybody who is seeing the guild chat window right now, please tell the guild members who are not logged on to all log in. We must maintain a logged-in state as much as possible for today and tomorrow.

- Carwin: Alright, understood.
- Herz: I also just logged in. Come back to the domain quickly. There are some things that we must discuss.
- Ian: Okay.

Ian, who closed the chat window, checked the map as he headed for the domain within the shortest distance possible.

Because the campground where he logged in at and the Pyro Domain was not that far away from each other, Ian was able to arrive at the domain soon.

However, just then, a suspicious shadow caught Ian's eyes.

‘Who is that? How are they able to appear on that side? Are they a guild member?’

The black shadow appeared underneath the steeple of the fortress rampart in the corner and leisurely disappeared off to somewhere.

‘There shouldn't be a passageway that way, though...?’

Ian, who personally participated in the construction of the Pyro Domain's fortress, knew of the whole structure of the fortress.



Because that was the case, if it was a normal situation, he knew that there would never be someone that appeared near the steeple.

Ian, who sensed something suspicious, immediately summoned Halli.

“Halli, Summon!”

Grr-!

Ian, who quickly got on Halli, spoke towards Kaizar.

“Kaizar, go inside the domain with Paulean and Celia first.”

At Ian’s words, Kaizar nodded his head with an unbothered expression.

“Understood. We’ll do that.”

And before he even heard Kaizar’s response, Ian got on Halli and began to run.

“Halli, Blessing of the Wind!”

Ian, who had invoked Halli’s Inherent Ability which maximized his Agility, quickly reduced the distance between them and the

black shadow.

And the shadow that was headed towards somewhere seemed to have felt that Ian was following them, as they stood tall in that spot.

As he grew closer, the shadow of a man emerged.

‘What the hell? Are they an Assassin?’

Beginning with their black uniform and mask, the man, whose whole body was covered in a black light, stood tall while facing Ian.

Tat-.

Ian, who felt that the man had no intentions of running away, got down from Halli’s back as he glared at the man.

“You are?”

Ian pulled out the ‘Judgment of the Spirit King’, which he had obtained as a reward for battling against Eclipse.

While looking at Ian, who let out a threatening spirit that felt as if he would swing his spear around at any moment, the man burst out laughing.

“A Summoner that rides a Hallikan around... You must be that famous ‘Ian’.”

The man smirked as he spread his hand behind him and pulled out his weapons.

The things that were held in both his hands were large wind and fire wheels, which shone a white light because of the sunlight that reflected off of them.

Ian took one step forward as he opened his mouth again.

“I would like if you responded to the question first.”

However, his opponent, who wasn't the least bit intimidated even by Ian's threat, lowered his stance as he stared back at Ian's two eyes.

“Try to find it out through your abilities if you're curious.”

## Chapter 176: Enemies on Every Side (2)

---

Ian's mind raced in order to grasp any information on his opponent.

‘Firstly, just from looking at the equipment they have on, I can tell that they are for sure an Assassin...’

The Assassin stood in a relaxed state even despite having figured out Ian's identity.

From what Ian knew, there were not a lot of Assassins in Kailan whose abilities were high enough.

Truthfully, that was the reason why he sent off his retainers first.

Because he was sure that there wasn't a user amongst the Assassins, which was a new class, that could face him.

Since he was already confident that he could face them alone anyways, if his opponent was to run away because he dragged his retainers along with him, there was no way for Ian to catch an escaping Assassin.

‘Firstly, I think there's just one in the Luspel Empire... The dude that beat me in the rookie league before, was his name Limlong?’

However, as Ian thought that there was no reason for an Assassin affiliated with the Luspel Empire to spy on the defensive fortress of the Pyro Domain, he quickly set aside his thoughts on Limlong.

‘If it’s an Assassin of the Kaimon Empire, I heard that a user affiliated with the Titan Guild was famous...’

The current official first-place in the Assassin rankings was affiliated with the Titan Guild, and from what Ian knew, he was in the early lv 140s.

‘If it’s that dude, he has a right to be confident even in front of me.’

Ian was over lv 150, but it was not known externally.

And no matter how exceptional Ian’s fighting ability was, if it was an Assassin that had the upper hand in PvP, it could be obvious that they didn’t feel intimidated even if they were slightly lower in level.

Just when Ian was searching for his opponent while thinking of this and that, the Assassin swung his wind and fire wheels as he charged towards Ian.

Ta-tat-!

With light footsteps, he shrunk the distance between Ian and him in an instant.

If this happened before, Ian would have prioritized increasing the distance between them, but he had something to count on now.

“Summon!”

Ian, who firstly summoned all of his Familiars quickly and casted his buff skills, used the new skill he obtained, ‘The Will of the Selamus Warrior’, without delay.

- You have used the skill, ‘The Will of the Selamus Warrior’.
- For 20 minutes, all combat stats will increase by 40%.
- You may concentrate all your production stats onto one combat stat. Please select the stat.

Clang-!

Blocking off the attack of the Assassin, who had charged through in the meantime, stepped back as he finished setting the skill.

“I’ll invest it into Agility!”

- Your ‘Agility’ stat has increased drastically.
- Your Proficiency towards all weapons have increased by 15 levels.

- The level of 'Spearmanship', which is the Proficiency related to the weapon that is being used, has been set to Intermediate-rank level 5.

Along with the message popping up, a golden ray of light began to wrap around Ian's whole body.

While looking at Ian, who held up the spear shaft firmly, the man sneered at Ian.

"You're deciding on close combat even though you're a Summoner?"

Ian nodded his head as he grinned.

"And if that's the case?"

"You're going to regret it."

Responding shortly, he charged towards Ian again, and while swinging his spear around, Ian began to fight him face-to-face.

Clang-Cla-clang-!

As the blade of the wheels and pole of the spear clashed against each other, a metallic sound rang out.

In an instant, the two people exchanged multiple attacks and blocks.

Pung-!

As the distance increased between the two people from engaging with strong attacks and rebounding against each other, all of the Familiars beginning with Ly began to attack the man.

With a big body and slow attack speed, Bbakbbak wasn't able to deal much damage onto the Assassin, but on the other hand, the combined attack of Ly and Pin was incredibly elaborate and threatening.

Chwaaak-!

- Familiar 'Ly' has dealt critical damage to (Unknown).
- (Unknown)'s Vitality has been decreased by 13,253.
- Familiar 'Pin' has dealt damage to (Unknown).
- (Unknown)'s Vitality has been decreased by 10,233.

And the two eyes of Ian, who gave and received attacks, narrowed.



‘What the hell? He’s a Luspel Empire user.’

Through the system message that popped up, he was able to figure out the nationality of the Assassin.

If he was a user that was a citizen of the Kaimon Empire, it would have popped up as ‘A Kaimon Empire User (Unknown)’ in the system message, but the fact that there was no mentioning of that meant that it was counter evidence that he was a Luspel Empire user.

‘Since you can’t set your nationality as private, he’s definitely affiliated with the Luspel Empire, but why exactly is a Luspel Empire user attempting to spy? Are they planning on building a fortress following our domain?’

The theory that Ian thought had the highest possibility was that he was a ‘secret agent’ who received an offer from the Kaimon Empire’s side.

Since it was the truth that a user who was a citizen of the Luspel Empire, who could freely enter into the domain, would have an easier time approaching the fortress.

Meanwhile, while Ian was thinking of this and that, the battle charged towards the final stage.

The Assassin’s Vitality gauge bar had slowly started to blink.

On the other hand, the damage that Ian received was almost nonexistent.

The Assassin, who stepped back and created distance between Ian and him, spoke as if he was mumbling.

“How surprising. To think that you would be this strong. I thought that there would be a lot of parts that were exaggerated, that is.”

Ian clicked his tongue as he replied.

“Tsk, tsk, well, if you’ve figured it out, why don’t you obediently surrender now? I want to know where you’ve come from.”

Truthfully, because Ian didn’t use all of his fighting power, he was dumbfounded.

‘For a dude that looks like he wouldn’t be able to even handle Ly alone properly, he’s bluffing hard.’

His nimbleness and fighting sense seemed exceptional, but because he didn’t use any special skills or irregular attacks, he was too easy to face.

The Assassin stared at Ian as he opened his mouth again.

“Unfortunately, it looks like this will be the end for today.”

At those words, Ian grinned.

“Who said I’m just going to let you go?”

As Ian’s words finished, his Familiars surrounded him.

However, the man was still relaxed.

“It looks like you have at least a Detecting Potion.”

A Detecting Potion was an item that allowed one to see their opponent that was hiding for a fixed time after intaking it, and Ian had that.

Ian pulled out the potion from his inventory and showed it as he nodded his head.

“Of course. So, it would be best for you to voluntarily reveal your identity. By the looks of it, it looks like your equipment is good, too, so wouldn’t it be depressing if you died and dropped even one?”

However, as if he was sneering at Ian, he pulled out a magic scroll as he waved it.

“Sorry, but you won’t be able to catch me today.”

And before Ian could take action, he ripped open the scroll.

“Damn it.”

His body was wrapped in an energy of purple light as he disappeared into the air leisurely, and Ian licked his lips.

“Tsk, literally everybody and their mother have been using rare scrolls lately.”

The scroll that the man used was of the same kind as the scroll that Ilahan, the Guild Master of the DarkRuna Guild, used.

Of course, as it wasn't an AoE Return Scroll, it was much cheaper than the item that Ilahan used, but it still wasn't cheap.

“This is upsetting. By the looks of it, he's probably a secret agent, right?”

At Ian's words, which he almost mumbled, Ly, who was next to him, replied.

- I think so. Something is definitely weird, Owner.

“What is?”

- I think his combat abilities are incredibly exceptional, but he didn't use anything aside from the most basic common Assassin attacks.

At those words, Ian nodded his head.

“I felt that, too. He was probably trying to hide his identity. Since if it was a dude that had a hidden class, the moment he used his main force skills, his identity would be revealed.”

Ian, who turned his steps, hurriedly went into the domain.

‘So, there’s a power that’s trying to figure out the internal structure, huh? We need to guard more thoroughly. In that case, should we build more detecting towers?’

\*

The day that Ian hurriedly entered the domain.

The attack did not start immediately like he feared, but the Allied Forces of the Kaimon Empire slowly began to move.

Amongst the many siege warfare that were held within Kailan up until now, it was definitely the largest in size.

As Ilahan’s movements were captured, it was a situation where the official community and the broadcasting stations were already going crazy.

Especially on the main page of the official community, there were already posts on the condition of the battle or analyses of the fighting power on both sides uploaded with provocative titles.

- The last hope of the Luspel Empire! Will the Pyro Domain be able to block off Kaimon's large army of 50 thousand?
- The top 3 guilds of Luspel who powerlessly handed over the Pyro Fortress, which is the 'Ansi City' of the Luspel Empire, to Kaimon.
- The biggest siege warfare in the history of VR games! That background has been dug up in detail.

Definitely, if you were a user that played Kailan, you couldn't help but have interest in this large-scale siege warfare, and in places like the bulletin board or the chat window, arguments for and against issues related to the large-scale siege warfare that would happen soon were arising.

And the hottest amongst those issues were on the 'incompetence' of the giant guilds of the Luspel Empire.

- No, guys. I'm a Kaimon citizen, so it doesn't matter to me, but truthfully, what are Luspel's giant guilds doing? They preoccupied practically all of the content in the eastern continent, but as the central continent opened and a proper fight occurs, they're just bumming around.
- Ha, exactly. That's my point... They're good-for-nothing.

- Speaking of which, it's really weird. The Lotus Guild, whose ranking is much lower in comparison, is enduring well like that, so then why exactly did the pigs, whose scale is much bigger, fall back into the rear and are hiding? I don't understand.
- Person above, we will only find out if Lotus is enduring well after this siege warfare is over.
- No, to have even blocked off DarkRuna shows that they are enduring well enough. Even if about three or four other guilds guarded like Lotus, wouldn't we have not been pushed back this much in the central area?
- Ha, I wish they would help the Lotus Guild out even now and blocked them off somehow...
- It's too late now. The Pyro Domain will get taken anyways, and I think the pivotal point is how well they will block them off in the rear.
- I still wish that Lotus will block them off for as long as possible. Ian, fighting[1]!

Meanwhile, the guild members of the Lotus Guild within the Pyro Domain were moving incredibly busily.

This was because there was a need for them to raise their Defensive Power even a little bit more before the defensive battle began.

Herz approached and asked Carwin, who came out of the management office of the barracks.

“Yo, Carwin. The troops that are being trained in the barracks right now, do you think their training will finish within today?”

“Hmm... I think it will be tight. I feel that it will probably finish before the sun rises tomorrow.”

Herz slightly frowned.

“Hmm... that’s a little troubling.”

“Why?”

“The Kaimon Empire Army has almost finished with their formation now. If they’re fast, I feel like the siege warfare might even start tonight...”

Just when the two people were conversing, Ian, who had approached them without their knowledge, butted in.

“No, I don’t think there’s a need to be worrying about that.”

“Huh? How come?”

Ian checked the time as he continued his words.

“Based on the current situation, the fastest time that they could



attack would be 10 or 11 o'clock, but if the siege warfare was to start then, what will the office workers do tomorrow when they have to go to work? They'll need to assume that this will last at least 5 hours."

"Oh...?"

Ian's logic was quite persuasive, and while nodding his head, Carwin added on.

"It's the break for us at least, but since office workers don't have breaks..."

Of course, over half of the top rankers were white-collar workers whose job itself was gaming, but still, from looking at it generally, there was a higher ratio of people that weren't like that.

Herz opened his mouth.

"Anyways, if the battle doesn't start today like you say, then that's a relief. I really want to use the mounted troops no matter what even if we're going to lose."

The soldiers in training that Herz asked Carwin about were the soldiers that had finished up to the 3rd upgrade and could be produced from the barracks as mounted troops.

As the average level of the mounted troops were close to 170, they were strong troops that could cover for at least one decent user.

Ian asked Carwin.

“Carwin, what is the total number of troops that are being produced this time?”

“Hmm... It will probably be about five hundred.”

Ian’s gaze turned over to Herz this time.

“Then if we were to combine them with the already existing troops, do we have about three or four thousand now?”

Herz shook his head.

“No, if my calculations are right, I think there should be about seven thousand?”

“Huh? How exactly do we have that high of a number?”

At the unexpected response, Ian wore a dumbfounded expression.

And Fiolan gave a response related to that.

“We have formed quite solid auxiliary troops.”

“...?”

Including Ian, who wore a puzzled expression, all three people's gazes turned in the direction that Fiolan's voice was heard from.

And in that spot, a couple other people even aside from Fiolan stood.

Ian's gaze fixated on one man, who stood closest to them amongst the others.

‘Who is that? He seems like someone I've seen somewhere before...’

The man had a luxurious armour that shone a navy blue colour covering his whole body.

He walked forward as he held out his hand towards Ian.

“Nice to meet you, Ian.”

At the greeting of the man, who definitely looked like he was a top ranker even from a rough glance, Ian grasped his hand on an impulse as he asked him.

“Who... Are you?”

Just when he was about to open his mouth and reply, Carwin, who was in the back, opened his mouth first.

“Roy Chen? Roy Chen, it’s you, right?”

The man laughed as he slowly nodded his head.

“As I’ve received permission from Master Herz, we, the Valiant Guild, have decided to assist in this defensive battle.”

Roy Chen slightly bowed his head.

And while looking at him do so, Ian’s two eyes shone.

‘Valiant! If all goes well, this defensive battle... We might actually be able to last even until the end!’

Feeling as if he had obtained thousands of troops and horses, Ian bowed his head towards Roy Chen as well.

“Thank you very much for making such a difficult decision, Roy Chen.”

[1] Fighting = word of support or encouragement

## Chapter 177: Enemies on Every Side (3)

---

It was a situation where the giant guilds of the Luspel Empire had multiple meetings and came to the implicit conclusion to hand over the Lotus Guild's Pyro Domain to Kaimon.

However, in the end, Roy Chen couldn't agree to that decision.

'I don't know when it will be, but until at least one guild overcomes being a Great Domain and a Dukedom, and grows to the level of a Kingdom, the war composition between the two giant empires will continue.'

While the conflicting composition between the two giant empires lasted, if they were to continuously be pushed back in the fight over power, they wouldn't be able to help but continuously be at a disadvantage.

If they were to especially lose most of the central continent, which was a neutral area, it was definite that in the development aspect, the difference between the Kaimon Empire and them would continuously grow.

'If even the Lotus Guild and the Pyro Domain was to be thrown away like this, the mid-upper rank guilds of the Luspel Empire will probably lose all of their faith in the top-ranking guilds.'

That will eventually lead to a division within the empire, and if that happened, it would result in the worst situation.

‘Our guild at the least needs to step forward and help Lotus.’

Roy Chen opened up a general guild meeting, and after fully explaining the current situation, he gathered the opinions of his guild members.

This was a battle with a composition where the chance of a loss was fundamentally high, no, a loss was almost certain.

There was no way that the guild members would be happy at the idea of supporting such a battle, but eventually, Roy Chen was able to succeed in persuading all of his guild members.

Of course, he didn’t persuade them 100% fully with just the reason that it was for the greater good.

There were a couple reasons why Roy Chen was able to persuade his guild members.

The first was that the Valiant Guild was usually not on good terms with the other two guilds.

This was because most of the guild members of the Valiant Guild were made up of users whose goal was purely to enjoy the game, while the Oaklan Guild and the Splendor Guild were mainly formed of occupational gamers who calculated the gains and losses thoroughly as they played.

Of course, that wasn't a bad thing, but usually, the guild members of the Valiant Guild didn't like the sly practical life of Oaklan and Splendor.

The second was 'justification'.

If they were to support this battle, although there wouldn't be any substantial gain, the recognition of the Valiant Guild would go up even more within the Luspel Empire.

They would also be able to avoid the criticism towards giant guilds that was currently spreading with the community as the center.

Lastly, it was the 'fighting power' of the Lotus Guild, which was stronger than expected.

The level of the defensive fighting power built in the Pyro Domain that he learned about through Herz moved the hearts of the Valiant Guild's guild members.

They felt that even if they were to lose, it wouldn't be in vain.

If they could keep up a close battle for a decent amount of time, there would be a lot that they could even earn from a large-scale battle like this, and if that was the case, even if they were to receive a death penalty, the calculation that they felt they would be able to break even was possible.

Since they could just obtain the spoils of the war through fighting when it came to the items and the EXP that they would lose from dying.

‘It could become a truly entertaining battle. Either way, the decision has been made, so there’s no need to quibble over reconsiderations.’

It was also a situation where he even gave a notification to the other guilds.

Just Samuel Jin, the Guild Master of the Oaklan Guild, showed concern, but no one actively stopped the Valiant Guild.

Rather, the guilds who thought that the Valiant Guild, their rival guild, would instead receive damage by helping Lotus gave their hearty support in a welcoming atmosphere.

Like that, the elite forces of the Valiant Guild dramatically joined the Pyro Domain, and the ones that held out their hands, stating that they would help Lotus, was not just Valiant.

The users of the tons of mid-upper guilds that had lost their base in the front lines also gathered one by one at the Pyro Domain in order to help Lotus. The troops that had gathered like that was close to 10 thousand, and as the night went on, the number of people continuously increased.



Thud-Thud- Thud-.

A morning where the scorching desert sun blazed down.

A loud noise rang out across the battleground as the large-scale siege warfare that the attention of all of Kailan was on began.

Just before the battle began, the number of troops of the Allied Forces gathered on the Kaimon Empire's side was a total of 130 thousand.

The number of defending soldiers gathered at the Pyro Domain was not a small number by any means at 15 thousand, however, compared to 130 thousand soldiers, it was to the point it was truly shabby.

Stomp-Stomp-.

The image of the army of 100 thousand marching at the same pace could easily be called a grand sight, and in the desert sky, where anxiety hung, tons of filming crystals were floating in the air.

Whiiing-.

Because the nature of this battle couldn't be considered a battle between a specific guild and another, there wasn't really a limit to

filming.

Because of that, even users who wanted to personally shoot videos had sent up their filming crystals.

Filming crystals were incredibly expensive, and there was a risk of it being destroyed while overdoing it and attempting to shoot in the middle of a battle.

However, this battle was worth saving it as a video even if that was considered.

The tallest guard tower of the Pyro Domain Fortress.

Ian, who stood on top of it, looked around at the approaching Kaimon Empire Army as he swallowed audibly.

“It’s incredible indeed. For it to be a siege warfare at this kind of scale.”

Roy Chen, who stood next to Ian, smiled as he responded.

“No kidding. As expected, we made the right choice to come. For a battle like this, setting aside the outcome, it’s worth participating in.”

Glancing slightly at Roy Chen, who stroked his sword that shone a white light, Ian responded shortly.

“Why set aside the outcome?”

“...?”

Ian smiled equally.

“When we’re going to win.”

At Ian’s response that was full of spirit, Roy Chen wore a happy smile.

“Huhu, that kind of confidence is good. I will be anticipating your active participation.”

Roy Chen originally didn’t have much interest in Ian.

There was no way that he would have interest in someone who wasn’t even visible on the ranking list when he himself was within the top 10 for the overall rankings.

However, during the process of deciding to take part in this battle, he looked at a lot of Ian’s combat videos, and he realized that Ian was a much more amazing person than he expected.

‘It would be difficult to find someone with a better heading ability in a large-scale battle like this than this man right now at least.’

He didn't think that he was lacking compared to Ian when it came to one-to-one fighting power, but the leadership that he showed in the siege warfare against the DarkRuna Guild was definitely at a level that was higher than his.

Ian nodded his head as he replied.

“Thank you for giving me the full commanding authority. You will not be disappointed.”

After Ian looked at the great army of Kaimon that grew closer and closer once, he turned his head to look behind him.

And in that spot, Kaizar was there.

“Kaizar.”

“Why do you call me?”

“Just like I told you before, I would like if you took care of the armoured mounted troops.”

Kaizar obediently nodded his head.

“Leave it to me. I'll properly massacre the Kaimon guys.”

Kaizar instead grinned, even showing enthusiasm.

To be honest, there was Ian's painful expense.

‘Hoo... Exactly how much money did I have to spend in order to buy that Ferghana horse or whatever.’

In order to make Kaizar do what he wanted him to do, he bought the most expensive horse with the best stats amongst the horses that were up in the auction house and gave it as a tribute.

And the flattery of asking him to lead 500 of the most elite cavalrymen with an exceptional steed was enough to move Kaizar.

“Thanks, Kaizar. I'll put my faith in you, retainer.”

“Huhu.”

Kaizar went down the guard tower while whisking his hands.

Roy Chen, who smirked while looking at the strange master-servant relationship, opened his mouth towards Ian.

“Then I will also move to my spot.”

Ian slightly bowed his head.

“Thank you. I look forward to your kind cooperation, Roy Chen.”

“It’s a pleasure.”

Like that, Ian, who had entrusted certain roles to the leading figures that were on top of the guard tower, turned his gaze towards the front again.

‘It won’t be easy, but I need to manage each and every troop as perfectly as possible. Since this battle is one where one person has to handle ten in order for us to win.’

However, just then, an interesting scene captured Ian’s gaze.

‘What’s that?’

There were what looked to be about hundreds of shadows floating in the air behind the advancing Allied Forces of the Kaimon Empire.

Ian focused intently and looked at them more carefully.

‘What the hell, by any chance, are they Griffins?’

He saw archers that held bows riding on top of flying objects that had an outer appearance which looked similar to an eagle.

At first Ian was taken aback, as he thought that over hundreds of Griffins would appear, but as they grew closer, he was able to find out that wasn't the case.

‘Whew, I was really flustered. It would have been a serious issue if they were Griffins.’

As they were a type of troops that he was seeing for the first time, he had no information, but Ian felt even more moved by interest.

“An air battle, huh...”

Ian summoned Pin.

“Pin, Summon!”

Kku-ruk- Kku-ru-ruk-!

Pin, who was summoned, energetically cried out as he rubbed his head towards Ian, and with proficient dexterity, he got on Pin's back.

“I'm not the least bit scared of fake Griffins, etc.”

Ian petted Pin as he opened his mouth again.

“Pin.”

Kku-ru-ruk-!

“Let’s go!”

Kku-ruk- Kku-ruk-!

At Ian’s command, Pin flapped his wings with energy as he ran out of the guard tower.

And the gazes of all the people standing in the battleground were gathered onto Ian.

“Woow, it’s Ian!”

“It’s a Griffin!”

The great army of Kaimon had now reached right in front of Ian, who floated above in the fortress sky, and the rampart.

Ian pulled out a scroll from his inventory.

That was a magic scroll that allowed one to effectively deliver commands to allies for a certain time in large-scale battles.

As expected, it was an expensive item, but Ian ripped that scroll without hesitation.



- You have used the magic scroll item, the 'Dignity of the Commander'.
- For the next '02:59:59', you can send messages to all allies. (You can designate the command messenger through the on/off ability.)

“Ahem!”

Ian, who cleared his throat, invoked the dignity of the Trinity.

- Everyone, including the Lotus Guild members and to the many Luspel Empire users who have come to help our Pyro Domain.

As Ian began to open his mouth, the Pyro Domain, which was a little noisy, became so quiet it was as still as death.

As he did so, the footsteps of the Kaimon Empire Army that grew closer and closer to the domain began to be heard more loudly.

Ian's words continued.

- Before the siege warfare begins, there is something I want to say.

Du-du-du-du-.

As if they had started running now, the sound of footsteps

coming from outside the rampart became louder, and Ian opened his mouth again.

- We are not here in order to lose today.

Ian's words struck home for a lot of them.

This was because, of course for the users who came to help them, but even for the users of the Lotus Guild, there was almost no one who thought that they could win this battle.

- I have never even started a battle that I thought that I would lose, and I have never lost in a battle that I thought that I would win.

Ian's words strangely touched their hearts.

Ian raised his spear that was shining brightly from the reflection of the sun and threw in another final word.

- We will win.

A moment of silence occurred and as if it was a promise made, resonant cheers rang out through the whole fortress at the same time.

“Waaaa!”

“Ian, you’re so cool!”

“So handsome!”

Flap-Flap-!

Ian, who flew up to an even higher point, pointed his spear towards the front as he let out his first command.

- Archer unit, all members...!

Chuk-Chu-chuk-!

It was an Archer unit mostly made up of the soldiers that were trained in the Lotus Domain, but quite a lot of users were placed with them, and they also followed Ian’s command and pulled their bowstrings.

- Attack!

Shyook-Shyoo-shyoo-shyoo-shyook-.

With the start of the arrows that covered the sky of the fortress and turned it black, the most intense and gruesome battle of Kailan history began.

# Chapter 178: Enemies on Every Side (Middle)

## (1)

---

The first thing that the invader had to overcome in order to win in a siege warfare was obviously the rampart that shot up high.

Because of that, on the side of the Empire's Allied Forces, they had proper siege weapons prepared in order to attack the steadfast rampart of the Pyro Domain.

It was a completely different image from the attack of the DarkRuna Guild, who looked down on the Lotus Guild.

“Stone-throwing battalion, be on standby to attack!”

Clu-clunk- Clu-clunk-.

As the wheels made of wood let out a noisy sound, the giant catapults moved towards the front as they stood in a line.

“Load them up!”

Creak-Creaaak-!

As the sound of the wood bending backwards and the sound of the string being pulled taut rang out, large boulders were placed on top of the catapult.

“Fire!”

As the signal to fire went off, the soldiers holding swords cut the taut ropes simultaneously.

Shyook-Shyoo-shyook-!

The giant boulders cut through the air as it flew towards the fortress rampart.

Bang-Baaang-!

“Ground-type Magicians, concentrate on filling the trenches with dirt!”

Different from the attack of the DarkRuna Guild, who were engrossed in blindly climbing up the rampart, the empire army moved quickly and accurately depending on the commander’s direction.

While containing the defending army that was on top of the rampart mainly with long-ranged attacks, they were steadily proceeding with the preparational operation to climb the rampart.

The Magicians began to form a team with the soldiers as they began to carry over bags of dirt. They blocked off the long-ranged attacks with shield magic as they protected the soldiers, and the

trench in front of the Pyro fortress that was dug deeply began to fill up little by little.

Ian, who watched that form while on top of his Griffin, quickly let out a command.

- Carwin, after you count to five starting now, open the canal!
- Okay, got it!

And Ian turned back the long-ranged firepower that was pouring towards the trench back to the rear side of their opponents.

- Soon, as the floodgates open up, the trench will become flooded. Just leave the soldiers that get close. Since they need to get doused with water after as many troops go into the trench.

As it hadn't been long since the siege warfare started, it wasn't directed into a greatly urgent situation yet.

Because that was the case, Ian elaborated on his explanations with as much detail as possible as he gave out his commands.

- There is still no movement of them climbing up the rampart. Please cut down as much of the Vitality of the enemies that are approaching from the rear side as possible!

Above the rampart of the Pyro Domain, an endless arrow baptism

was being shot out.

That number was surprisingly a lot compared to the size of the defensive troops that defended the Pyro Domain, but this was also thanks to Ian's meticulous prearranged plan.

As Ian had amply prepared extra bows and arrows in the fortress beforehand, he made it so that even users, who weren't Archers, could all have bows.

Before their enemies got over the fortress gate, there was not much that troops who used close-combat weapons could do.

The loss of damage that forms through this is bigger than expected, and in order to minimize this, it was Ian's thought that they needed to use bows even if they weren't an Archer-class.

'Since they can just switch to close-combat weapons again once they start climbing over the rampart.'

However, just then, a couple arrows flew towards Ian.

Clang-Cla-clang-!

However, because the location where Ian was in-flight was a spot outside of the range of a normal Archer, the arrows had lost their strength, and Ian was able to parry them away easily.

‘I thought I was outside of their range, but they still fly all the way here, huh?’

After Ian parried a couple more arrows that flew towards him, he flew even higher up.

And shortly after, a loud voice began to ring out.

Kwaaah-!

The streams of water that poured out from within the fortress flooded towards the trench.

“Euaak, dodge it!”

“The trench is being flooded with water! Escape to the back!”

However, as their numbers didn’t consist of just one or two, there was no way that the advance and retreat of the troops would proceed that smoothly, and most of the soldiers were submerged into the water.

“Cough, Co-cough-!”

The soldiers of the Kaimon Empire, who were submerged in the water, were tormented as they flailed about.



The Magicians who were inside the Pyro Domain cast ice magic towards them.

“Glacial Spike!”

“Frozen Hell!”

The levels of the ones that had participated in the war were at a level where they were at least over 130, regardless of whether they were an NPC or a user.

Because that was the case, they couldn’t easily kill them with just dropping them in water, but if it was connected with ice magic, it became a different story.

Crack-Cra-cra-crack-!

The sound of water freezing up and the sound of ice cracking rang out from here and there.

- Rockslide attack, commence!

The attack team that was already on standby on top of the rampart rolled down large boulders over top of them.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

In an instant, the surroundings of the fortress with the trench as the pivot became a madhouse.

As the amount of water that was poured towards the trench was so large, the surface of the water began to freeze first and before most of the soldiers that were inside of the trench could escape the water, they became entrapped within the ice.

Soldiers tried to escape through the couple parts that were cracked because of the rockslide, but the boulders that continuously dropped gruesomely squashed them.

Bang-!

The world message window that popped up above the battleground was being renewed without rest.

- The Kaimon Empire Soldier has died from the rockslide.
- The Kaimon Empire Soldier has died from continuous damage occurring from lack of oxygen.
- The rampart of the Pyro Domain at the southeast point (255, 304) has received a large amount of damage.

And Ian began to pour out his AoE skill towards the isolated enemies as well.

As summoning his other Familiars, who couldn't fly yet, would be straining, Pin's Crush skill became the main point.

Kwaaah-!

Like a heavy rain, the DoT damage of the 'Crush' skill poured out.

The Vitality of the opponents that were inflicted with multiple status conditions while being submerged underwater dropped down in an instant.

- As you have killed the Kaimon Empire Soldier, you have obtained 658,909 EXP.
- As you have killed Kaimon Empire-affiliated user 'Orian', you have obtained 1,028,789 EXP.
- You have obtained 1200 Fame.

'Alright!'

Not even having the time to check the system messages that popped up, Ian quickly surged upwards towards the air again.

It was because as Ian came down close to the ground in order to use Pin's Crush skill, the bombardment of long-ranged attacks poured out towards him like rain.

Shyoo-shyoo-shyook-!

The black arrows that poured out was a definite.

Pung-Pu-pung-!

Even the elemental magic that the Magicians shot out burst out from here and there.

“Pin, that way!”

Ian, who discovered a fire sphere in front of him that was rushing towards him as if he was being sucked in, hurriedly pulled one of Pin’s shoulders.

Baaang-!

Pin quickly turned laterally in a circle, and the two, who narrowly dodged the fire magic, avoided the long-ranged attacks as if they were doing acrobatics and went to the top of the rampart again.

Plop-

Ian, who had gotten down from Pin’s back, pulled out his longbow from his inventory and hung it on his back.

Ian's eyes scanned the great army of Kaimon, who were drawing near.

‘Now they'll probably get over the trench that's frozen solid to get close and begin to climb the rampart.’

Ian hurriedly activated the Dignity of the Commander effect and opened his mouth.

- The enemies will start climbing the rampart now. Close-combat class users, please re-equip your original weapon, and Magicians, please prepare to cast your AoE magic.

Ian, who busily let out commands here and there, grabbed the longbow that hung on his back before he slowly pulled his bowstring.

‘Shall I demonstrate my sniping abilities for the first time in a while?’

With a careful expression, Ian took aim towards the enemy camp.

If he still possessed the skills of his past Archer class, he would have been able to hit the enemies from an even further distance than now, but right now, he needed to shoot with his bow using just his basic stats.

Ian waited for the opponents that he had targeted to come within his range before carefully letting go of his bowstring.

Piiing-!

The arrow that left Ian's bowstring cut through the air as it quickly shot towards the enemy camp.

\*

There were two fortress gates in the Pyro Domain.

One was the southeast fortress gate where Ian and most of the troops were engaging in a defensive war, and the other was the small northwest back gate, which the entryway for was narrow as it was surrounded by rugged mountainous areas.

And within this back gate, a group of troops were lined up evenly.

"Kaizar, are you ready?"

At Herz's question, Kaizar slowly nodded his head.

"I'm done preparing. Open the fortress gate now."

Kaizar was Ian's retainer, but nobody treated him with contempt.

Although, to be honest, it would be more accurate to say that it wasn't that they 'didn't' but that they 'couldn't'.

Herz lifted his head towards the air as he opened his mouth.

“Roy Chen, would it be alright now?”

At Herz's question, Roy Chen, who was in the middle of diligently commanding the defensive troops on top of the rampart, raised one hand instead of giving a response.

“All Magicians, fire your AoE magic!”

Bang-Ba-ba-bang-!

It was a command to force the Kaimon Empire Army, who were approaching the fortress gate, to back off and secure the space.

Herz, who recognized Roy Chen's intentions, spread his hand out towards the fortress gate.

“Fortress gate, open!”

“Yes, master!”

Creaaak-!

Along with Herz's command, the fortress gate that was firmly shut began to slowly open, and Kaizar pulled out the greatsword that was hanging on his back.

Seu-reu-reung-!

Kaizar had on shining equipment, including his Ferghana horse, which was purchased with all of Ian's fortunes.

As about half the fortress gate opened, Kaizar let out a command with a resonant voice.

“Everybody, advance!”

Thud-Thud- Thud-!

Along with the sound of the war drum ringing out, the cavalrymen, who held their reigns taut, began to run out simultaneously.

Du-du-du-du-.

There wasn't anything like a loud cry, but 5 hundred cavalrymen ran out of the fortress gate along with the clean sound of hoofbeats.

Roy Chen, who checked that image from on top of the rampart, asked Herz.



“Herz, isn’t this a bit irrational?”

At Roy Chen’s question, Herz asked back with a puzzled expression.

“Sorry?”

“No, I just think in a battle like this where we’re inferior in numbers, this situation of opening up the fortress gate and sending out troops seems a little ironic in itself, that is. Of course, this side isn’t an open space like the southeast side, but...”

As Roy Chen spoke with a worried expression while slightly glancing at the cavalrymen, who went out with a fierce spirit, Herz smirked.

“There’s nothing to worry about, Roy Chen. They’re going to return after digging them up enough.”

“Even if they’re the highest-ranking cavalrymen over lv 170, numerically, there’s almost ten times the difference...”

Herz, who had climbed up to the top of the rampart, pointed to the head of the mounted troops as he opened his mouth.

“We just need to believe in Kaizar.”

“What...? I did hear that Kaizar’s level was high, but even considering that, isn’t he just an NPC?”

Roy Chen knew that Kaizar was an NPC whose level was a little higher, but he didn’t know about the specific details.

As that was the case, he didn’t understand Herz’s words.

This was because even if the level of an NPC was high, there were a lot of cases where they were weaker than users that were 10-20 levels lower than them.

‘No matter how high the level of an NPC that is a retainer has, would their level be over 200? Assuming it is as high at about 190, he won’t be able to have a huge influence on the general trend.’

However, shortly after, Roy Chen had to modify his overall decision.

“Keuhaaa!”

Kaizar, who had let out a cry, had begun to stir up the battleground.

Bang-Ba-bang-!

While swinging the Greatsword of the Dark Fenrir, which was the first item he had stolen from Ian, here and there, Kaizar burst

out black energy.

Roy Chen's two eyes rounded.

“Tha, that...?”

This was because whenever Kaizar's sword was swung, five to six empire soldiers turned into black ash before they crumbled down.

While looking at Roy Chen, who was surprised, Herz burst out laughing.

“Didn't I say that there was no need to worry? Don't worry about there, we just need to defend the rampart diligently.”

Herz moved again and began to swing his sword towards the opponents that climbed the rampart and were getting over it.

However, for a while, Roy Chen's gaze was fixated on Kaizar's backside.

‘It's not just his Offensive Power that's exceptional, but his Unit Leadership is incredible as well. Where exactly did Ian obtain an NPC like that?’

Kaizar's mounted troops whisked around the camp of the Kaimon Empire's Allied Forces, which was crowded with a ton of troops to the point it was black, like it was left for taking.

No matter how many enemies surrounded them, with Kaizar at the head, the speed of the mounted troops, who created a triangle-formation as they violently rushed forward, did not slow down.

This was because Kaizar, who was the vertex of the triangle-formation, just shred through the defensive line instead.

On top of that, as it was a situation where they had charged into the middle of the enemy camp with a small-scale of troops, the Magicians couldn't even use their AoE magic hastily.

If they used it incorrectly even with the slightest slip, the Kaimon troops would receive more damage instead.

“You pest-like Kaimon dudes, I will turn you all into dust!”

As his rage towards the Kaimon Empire, who locked him up for ten years, was added onto his divine, monster-like abilities, Kaizar stirred up the battleground as if he had been possessed by a War God.

He was uprooting the base of the column of Ian's game life, but Kaizar definitely earned his keep.